





A  
PARAPHRASE  
ON THE  
ACTS OF THE HOLY APOSTLES,  
AND UPON ALL THE  
EPISTLES OF THE NEW TESTAMENT.

BEING A COMPLETE  
*SUPPLEMENT to DR. CLARKE'S PARAPHRASE on the  
FOUR GOSPELS.*

WITH A SHORT PREFACE TO EACH EPISTLE ;

SHEWING  
The Occasion and Design of it ; with the several ARGUMENTS set at  
the Head of each Chapter.

AND  
A GENERAL INDEX to all the Principal MATTERS, WORDS, and PHRASES of  
the NEW TESTAMENT, excepting the REVELATIONS.

---

FOR THE USE OF FAMILIES.

---

IN TWO VOLUMES.

---

*BY THOMAS PYLE, M. A.*  
MINISTER OF LYN-REGIS IN N. FOLK, AND PREBENDARY OF THE  
CATHEDRAL CHURCH OF SARUM

---

*A NEW EDITION.*

---

VOL II.

---

L O N D O N :

PRINTED FOR THE BOOKSELLERS OF OXFORD, CAMBRIDGE, AND  
LONDON.

---





---

A

P A R A P H R A S E

ON

THE EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL

TO THE

G A L A T I A N S.

---

THE PREFACE.

**F**OR the chief observations that are to let the reader into the *main* argument of this epistle, I refer him to the preface of the epistle to the *Romans*. Of those questions which he there finds to be the subject of them both, this one is more particularly handled in *This letter* against the *Jewish* Christians, viz. *Whether circumcision and the full observation of the ceremonial law of Moses were necessary to the salvation of a Christian convert?* All I now further observe is, the same factious and calumniating spirit of these *Jewish* zealots of Galatia, with those of Rome and Corinth, the better to insinuate themselves with some people, they suggested St. Paul to be, at the bottom, a favourer of

Vol. II. B the

the *Jewish* law; but to others that knew him better, they represented the apostle as one not immediately commissioned by Christ, as Peter, James, and John, &c. were; but to be an apostle at *second-hand*: thus derogating from the authority of his *commission*, and the certainty of his *doctrine*. This will give the reader the true spirit of the several expressions which tend to vindicate both his *apostleship*, and the sincerity and consistency of St. Paul's behaviour in the controversy handled in this epistle; as of Chap. i. 1, 8, 9, 10, &c. to the end; the whole *second*, and the twelve first verses of the *fifth* chapters, with the 13th and 17th ver. of the *sixth* chapter: in the two latter of which chapters are some *practical* exhortations, designed chiefly against the animosities and great partialities that this dispute had bred and ripened among them.

## CHAP. I.

\* This E. *The Title\* the Apostle gives himself, levelled against the suggestions of their False Teachers of the Judaizing Faction. He wondereth at their Relapse from the true Christian Doctrine of Men's being justified and saved by the Christian Religion alone, into the Jewish Principle of the Necessity of the Ceremonial Law: To cure them of which Prejudice is the main Purpose of this Epistle. His Answer to the Insinuations against the Authority of his Commission †, and the Sincerity of his Preaching.*

† See the Preface.

A. D. 58. *PAUL* an apostle, not of men, neither by man, but by \* Jesus Christ, and God the † Father, who raised him from the dead,

1. *I* Paul who am a Christian apostle, nor by any favour or authority of *men*, nor receiving my commission by the choice of the other *apostles*, as Matthias did; but having it from the extraor-

traordinary \* and exprefs revelation of Jesus Chrift A. D. 58  
himself, and God the † *Father* who raised him from  
the dead ;

\* Acts ix.  
xxii. &  
xxvi. chap.  
† Acts xxii.  
14, 15.

2 And all the brethren which are with me, unto the churches of Galatia :

3 Grace *be* to you and peace, from God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Chrift.

2, 3. Send this epistle to the churches of Galatia, wishing you all favours and blessings from God the Father, and our Lord Jesus Chrift ; as do also the Christian brethren that are with me here at Rome.

4 Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father :

4. Wishing you, I say, the blessings of Jesus Chrift, who, according to the merciful and gracious purpose of God, and the predictions of his *prophets*, gave himself a sacrifice for our sins, to redeem us from the punishment and condemnation that is justly to fall upon the vicious and obstinate unbelievers || of the present age.

5 To whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

5. For which mercy be he praised and glorified for ever and ever ! Amen.

6 I marvel, that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Chrift, unto another gospel.

6 He therefore being the only Saviour by whom we obtain pardon and redemption, I am amazed to hear you should, so soon after your conversion, be thus changed in your belief of this grand *article*, and be brought to embrace the necessity of observing the *Jewish ceremonies*, as a *Christian* doctrine ; whereas there is no such matter. The *Christian* religion is the only sufficient foundation of your justification and happiness.

B 2

7. There

---

|| Ver. 4. From this present evil *world*, or rather *αἰώνος*, the present *age*. The sense being the same with that of Acts ii. 47. *this untoward generation*.

A. D. 5<sup>o</sup>. 7 Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you. and would pervert the gospel of Christ.

nefs is to pervert the *gospel* doctrine, and model your principles to their own private interests and ambitious purposes.

8 But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach *any other gospel* unto you, than that which we have preached unto you, let him be \* accursed.

*Christian faith.* So far from it, that I now solemnly pronounce, were any one *apostle*, nay, or (were it possible) should an *angel* from heaven be supposed to preach a thing so contradictory to the doctrine I at first delivered to you, he ought to be rejected and called \* *accursed*.

\* Ver. 8,9  
Rom. ix.3.  
1 Cor. xvi.  
22.

9 As we said before, so say I now again. If any *man* preach any other gospel unto you, † than that ye have received, let him be \* accursed.

10 For do I now persuade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.

*God*, as his faithful *apostle*; which I could never do by that method; and were *that* my principle, I need never

7. There can be no other: nor could you have been persuaded there was, unless by the fly insinuations and false suggestions of designing men; whose art and business is to pervert the *gospel* doctrine, and model your

8. The better to gain their ends upon you, those *Judaizing* teachers would have you believe, that not only Peter and the other *apostles*, but I myself also do sometimes preach up the *Jewish law*, as absolutely necessary along with the

*Christian faith.* So far from it, that I now solemnly pronounce, were any one *apostle*, nay, or (were it possible) should an *angel* from heaven be supposed to preach a thing so contradictory to the doctrine I at first delivered to you, he ought to be rejected and called \* *accursed*.

9. And, to show you I speak it not hastily, but with all deliberation and sincerity, I repeat it again, *should an apostle, or even an angel, preach any thing so derogatory to, and wide of, the true gospel doctrine, let him be \* accursed.*

10. As to my *self*, should I do it, I know it would gain me the favour of a set of *men*, the *Jewish* zealots; but I hope you have no reason to think the design of my ministry is to curry favour with *men*, but to discharge my duty to *God*, as his faithful *apostle*; which I could never do by that method; and were *that* my principle, I need never

---

† Ver. 9. *Any other gospel than that ye have received.* πᾶς ὃ παρελάβετε. *any thing beside or more than ye have received from the apostles: viz. any thing as necessary to salvation.*

to have turned *Christian*\*, and suffered so much as I have done for the sake of that profession.

A. D. 58.

\* Chap. v.

12. & vi.

12.

11 But I certify you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me, is not after man.

12 For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ.

11, 12. And as to their disparagement of my apostolical *commission*, or my *doctrine*, because it may not suit with their prejudices or designs; be you fully assured, I received my commission from no *man*, from no other *apostles*, but had both *that* and the doctrine I preached to you, from the immediate revelation of Jesus Christ himself.

13 For ye have heard of my conversation in time past, in the Jews religion, how that beyond measure I persecuted the church of God, and wasted it.

*Christian* faith with uncommon fury and cruelty.

13. Nor indeed can you well think such a bigot as I should be converted at all, much less turn an *apostle of his* religion, by any but *extraordinary* means. For you must have heard what a raging *zealot* for the *Jewish* religion I formerly was; and how I persecuted the

14 And profited in the Jews religion, above many my equals in mine own nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers.

15 But when it pleased God, who separated || me from my mother's womb, and called me by his grace.

16 To reveal his Son in me, that I might preach him among

14. I was, you know, noted above any men of my age and standing, for learning in, and zeal for, the *Jewish* traditions and doctrines.

15, 16. *My* conversion therefore is wholly attributed to a divine and extraordinary favour originally intended to me by God. And, accordingly, when it pleased God thus miraculously to convert and commission me to be a preacher of his gospel to the *Gentile* world, I made

B 3

---

|| Ver. 15. *Who separated me from my mother's womb.* See Jerem. i. 5.



A. D. 58. mong the heathen,  
immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood:

17 Neither went I up to Jerusalem, to them which *were* apostles before me, but I went into Arabia and returned again unto Damascus.

18 Then after three years I went up to Jerusalem, to see Peter, and abode with him fifteen days.

the account I gave him of the manner and circumstances of my call to that office; and with him I stayed, not to receive any authority from him, but only to converse with him, for about fifteen days.

19 But other of the apostles saw I none, save James the Lord's brother.

could not be supposed to derive my commission from the *apostolical college*.

20 Now the things which I write unto you, behold, before God, I lie not.

21 Afterwards I came into the regions of Syria and Cilicia. I preached at Cesarea (Acts xxii. 17, 18.) and at Troas in Cilicia (Acts ix. 30. xxii. 3.)

22 And was unknown by face unto the churches of Judea, which were in Christ.

23 But

made my application to no *man*, to none of the *apostles* for *their* warrant or instructions how to perform my office.

17. I addressed myself to none of the apostles at Jerusalem, who were ordained to that office before me; but from Damascus, the place of my conversion, I retired into Arabia, and returned thither again, and preached the gospel, without any order or authority from any of their *college*.

18. Indeed about three years after my conversion, I went to Jerusalem, where Barnabas brought me to Peter, who readily owned me for his fellow *apostle*, upon

19. The only person of note I saw, besides Peter, was James *the Just*, our Lord's kinsman, and bishop of Jerusalem. So that I

20. (And for the truth of these facts I appeal to God, the Author of truth itself.)

21. After this short stay at Jerusalem, I went upon the exercise of my office into Syria, and preached of my office into Syria, and preached at Cesarea (Acts xxii. 17, 18.) and at Troas in Cilicia (Acts ix. 30. xxii. 3.)

22. All which time neither the churches of Jerusalem, or of the rest of Judea, they nor their apostolical *ministers*, had ever seen, or had any personal knowledge of me.

23. All

23 But they had heard only, That he which persecuted us in times past, now preacheth the faith which once he destroyed.

24 And they glorified God in me.

23 All they knew of me was <sup>A. D. 58.</sup> by accounts they had from abroad, that the great persecutor Paul was turned a preacher of the very gospel he had so persecuted.

24. For which marvellous conversion in me they rejoiced, and blessed God.

## CHAP. II.

*He proceeds further to clear himself of the Imputation of ever having preached up the Necessity of Circumcision and the Ceremonial Law. And to vindicate his Apostolical Commission. Proving both those Points \* from his next Journey \* See the to Jerusalem, his Management of Titus, his Reception from Preface. the Apostles, his Behaviour there, and at Antioch, with Peter, and from the Inconsistency of supposing He should preach such a Doctrine*

**T**HEN fourteen years after I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas, † and took Titus with me also.

which is fourteen years after my first conversion, I went thither † again, and took Barnabas and Titus along with me.

2 And I went up by revelation, and communicated unto them that gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but privately to them which were

**T**O show you still further the falsity of their † suggestions, † Chap. i. and the immediate authority of <sup>Acts xv.</sup> my apostleship, let me remember you, that eleven years after my former journey to Jerusalem,

2. I then went by the special appointment of God, and gave the *apostles* that were there a full account of the doctrines † I had been † Acts xv. preaching to the *idolatrous* as well <sup>4. 12.</sup> as *profelyte Gentiles*, as I received

B 4

them

A. D. 58. were of reputation, them from Jesus Christ, and of the  
 left by any means I success of my ministry among them.  
 I should run, or had run I gave this account only to some  
 in vain. of the chief *apostles* and governors  
 of that church, and to them too in private, not out of  
 distrust of my doctrine and behaviour, or want of their  
 information; but only to prevent the scandalous re-  
 ports the *Judaizing* faction might raise upon me, to the  
 disparagement and hindrance of the further success of  
 my ministry: For these *zealots*, even of the *converted*  
*Jews*, were not as yet in any temper to hear of *Christi-*  
*anity* being preached to the *idolatrous Gentiles*.

3 But neither Titus, 3. And in this whole affair I  
 who was with me, be- was so consistent with myself, and  
 ing a Greek, was just to my own principle, that  
 compelled to be cir- though Titus that went with me  
 cumcised: was a *Gentile* born; yet at his con-  
 version to *Christianity*, and his ordination to the *ministry*,  
 I never insisted on his being *circumcised*; nor did the  
*apostles*, to whom I carried him, require any such thing;  
 which, it is plain, both *they* and I should have done, had  
 we thought the observation of the ceremonial *law* neces-  
 sary to the justification of a converted idolatrous *Gentile*.

4. And that because 4. I kept *Titus uncircumcised*,  
 of false brethren una- and carried him so to the *apostles*,  
 wares brought in, who on purpose to show my sentiments  
 came in privily to spy were quite opposite to those false  
 out our liberty, which *Jewish* zealots that came to *Anti-*  
 \* Acts xv. we have in Christ Je- och\*, and insinuated themselves in-  
 sus, that they might to our assemblies there; with a  
 bring us into bondage. design to catch at, and oppose the  
 doctrine I preached, and to bring all you *Gentile* Christians  
 to embrace the unnecessary slavery of the *Jewish* ceremonies.

5 To whom we 5. For though I am willing to  
 gave place by subjec- yield to any indifferent thing for  
 tion, no not for an the present, in compliance with the  
 hour, that the truth weakness and prejudices of men;  
 of the gospel might in hopes the sooner to draw them  
 continue with you. off from them\*; yet, to *these* false  
 zealots, that so furiously insisted upon the absolute ne-  
 cessity of the *Jewish* law, I never yielded an inch,  
 but

but maintained *the Christian religion to be the sufficient* A. D. 58.  
*and only condition of a Christian's justification and happi-*  
*ness.*

6. But of these, who seemed to be somewhat, (whatsoever they were maketh no matter to me, God accepteth no man's person), for they who seemed to be *somewhat*, in conference added nothing to me.

upon present and external reputation in the church. In the meantime, when I gave those eminent men the account of my doctrine, and proceedings in my ministry with the Gentile Christians; they could find no fault, pretended to correct nothing, nor to instruct me in any point that I did not know as well as themselves.

7 But contrariwise, when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as the gospel of the circumcision was unto Peter:

8. (For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the apostleship of the circumcision, the same was mighty in me towards the Gentiles).

9. And when James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given unto me,

6. Thus I behaved myself to those zealots. And as to the disparagement your false teachers are pleased to cast upon *me*, and their setting up Peter\*, James, or John, as apostles far greater than *I*; be they as great as they will, their eminency makes *me* neither greater nor less. God, who made us *all* equally his apostles, looks not

7. But, on the contrary, upon the testimonies I gave them of as sufficient a call to preach the gospel to the Gentile world, as Peter in particular, or any of them had to preach it to the Jewish nation, they highly approved of what I had done.

8. (And indeed well they might; for God had endowed *me* with as miraculous powers and evidences for the *one*, as he had *them* for the *other*).

9. Accordingly those three leading apostles, being fully satisfied both of my *office*, and the method and success of my preaching, did, with great respect, own *me* and my

---

\* See Ver. 9. and see the Paraphrase on 1 Cor. ix. 20.

**A. D. 58.** me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship, that we *should go* unto the heathen, and they unto the circumcision.

10 Only they *would* that we should remember the \* poor, the same which I also was forward to do.

\* See Acts *Christians of Judea* \*  
xix. 21.  
xxi. 4. 10,  
11, 12. &c.  
1 Cor. xvi.  
2 Cor. viii.  
& ix.

11 But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed.

12. For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles; but when they were come, he withdrew, and separated himself, fearing them *which were* of the circumcision.

though not *circumcised*) as I myself was. But when they had spread their notions, and possessed the minds of some people, *he* grew shy, and avoided the conversation of the *uncircumcised Christians*, for fear of disgusting the *Jews*, and these zealots of the *Jewish* converts.

13 And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him, inso-much that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation.

14 But

my fellow traveller Barnabas for *apostles* as fully commissioned to convert the *Gentiles*, as they were to convert the *Jews*; and concluded, we ought to go on in that ministry, in the same manner as we had begun.

10. They prescribed no rules to me, at parting; they only requested of me to collect some charities among the converts I made, for the relief of the poor; a thing I was very ready to do.

11. Thus far Peter and I entirely agreed: And so constant and steady was I to this doctrine of the *necessity of the ceremonial law*, to the *Christian converts*, that when *he* would once have dissembled, and flinched from it at *Antioch*, I stood my ground, and freely and boldly upbraided him with his insincerity.

12. For before those *Jewish zealots* came to *Antioch* † with a pretended authority from *James* and the apostles at *Jerusalem*, and cried up the necessity of the *Jewish law*; *Peter* was as free and familiar with the *Gentile Christians* (who were *proselytes* to the *Jewish* worship of the *true God*,

though not *circumcised*) as I myself was. But when they had spread their notions, and possessed the minds of some people, *he* grew shy, and avoided the conversation of the *uncircumcised Christians*, for fear of disgusting the *Jews*, and these zealots of the *Jewish* converts.

13. And by his example, several other of those converts did the same; and even Barnabas himself began to give in to that way of dissimulation, to the great discouragement of the *Gentile Christians*.

14. Such



14 But when I saw that they walked not uprightly, according to the truth of the gospel, I said unto Peter, before them all, If thou being a Jew, livest after the manner of Gentiles, and not as do the Jews, why compellest thou the Gentiles to live as do the Jews?

15 We *who are* Jews by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles,

16 Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

17 But if while we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid\*.

14. Such a prevarication with A. D. 58.  
the main design of the *gospel* religion I could not bear; but demanded of Peter in plain terms, before all the *Judaizers*, how he, that was originally a Jew, but now turned *Christian*, and had forsaken the ceremonial *law* himself, could ever answer it, to encourage the *Gentile* Christians to believe it was obligatory upon *them*, that were never *Jews* at all; directly contrary to his own principle and practice?

15. & 16. For surely, said I, if we that were born and brought up in the *Jewish* religion, being now convinced of its insufficiency to justify us, have left it, and embraced the *Christian* religion, as the only sufficient means of pardon and salvation; it must be most absurd for us to imagine that the *Gentiles*, that were never brought up in it all, should be *now* obliged to it, after their conversion to *Christianity*. It is plain, you countenance this for no real *advantage* to them; for *you* and *we* all own, the *law* can justify no man, now after the revelation of the *gospel*; but the *gospel* alone can fully do it.

17. On the other side, do but consider the consequence of this principle: A *Christian* that relies still upon the *Jewish* law for his justification, must allow himself to be still in a state of *guilt* and *sin* (for the *law* leaves us all so). Which is as much as to say,

A. D. 58. *say, that Christ, our Redeemer, has given us a dispensation that leaves us but where we were, viz. in an unpardoned and unjustified condition: which God forbid any Christian should hold \* !*

18 For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor†.

18. For it is evident beyond exception, if after having taken upon me the *Christian* profession, as the means of this justification, I run back again for it to the *Jewish* law, I am but where I was, an *unjustified sinner*; and act just like a foolish man that pulls down his house to make it better, and then builds it up again with the very same materials, just as it was, upon its old foundation †.

19 For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God.

19. Let others think and act as they will. I know that by the very tenour and design of the *Jewish* law itself, a *Christian* is now as perfectly free from its obligation, as a woman is from her marriage contract at her husband's death ‡; so that even a *Jewish* Christian, much more a *Gentile* one, is bound to nothing but the observance of the *Christian* religion, as the true service of God.

‡ See Rom. vii. to ver. 7. iii. 21. —vi. 3, 4.

20 I am crucified with Christ. Nevertheless I live, yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.

20. By this new dispensation of Christ, I am dead to the *ceremonial* law, and the law to me. The life I now live is no longer the life of a *Jew*, but the obedience of a *Christian*, to that Saviour and Redeemer, who so loved me as to give himself for a full satisfaction for all my sins.

21 I do

21. For

---

\* *Is Christ the minister of sin?* Or else thus with Oecumenius, *If the law be obligatory still, then we Christians are transgressors, in not adhering to it; and do we think that Christ would enjoin us to sin against a divine law? God forbid!* But I choose the paraphrase as the most natural sense. Or lastly, It may be read without an interrogation, thus, *If we be sinners in seeking to be justified by Christ, then Christ is the minister of sin.*

† I make myself a transgressor, *i. e.* says Chrysostom, by setting up that law which I allow God has abolished.

21 I do not frustrate the grace of God : for if righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.

us, there had been no need of Christ's death ; nay, and if *that* law has any part in our justification, then *his* death was insufficient of itself for it.

21. For my part I shall never countenance a doctrine that frustrates the main and merciful design of the Christian covenant. For it is clear, could the Jewish law have justified and saved

A. D. 58.

### CHAP. III.

*The Apostle having absolutely cleared himself of having ever preached up the Necessity of the Ceremonial Law to Christian Believers ; comes now to argue directly against that Principle of the Jewish Zealots. His first argument taken from the miraculous Gifts of the Holy Spirit conferred upon Christians. His next, from the Case of Abraham's Justification ; proving all true Christians, whether circumcised or not, are accepted and pardoned upon the same Faith and from the same Promise that justified that eminent Patriarch ; and not at all from the Observance of the Jewish Law. The Jewish Zealots object, To what purpose then was the Law given ? He answers it : Shows the Law to have been only preparatory to the Gospel, and that all Believers, Gentile and Jewish, are to be saved by the Christian Religion alone.*

1 O Foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that you should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ

1. O Foolish Galatians, who is it, or by what magical arts have they deluded you from this fundamental article of the Christian faith, viz. *That the gospel religion is sufficient for salvation*

A. D. 58. Christ \* hath been evidently set forth, crucified among you? *vation without the Mosaical law?* You that have had the crucified Jesus represented \* to you as the *only Redeemer* of mankind, with as much earnestness and clearness as if you had seen him hanging on the cross before your eyes?

2 This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

2. Nor have you only *heard* his true doctrine, but had it confirmed to you by such powers and gifts of the Holy Spirit conferred on you, as were never before seen in the church of God. Now let me argue with your Jewish zealots, from these very *endowments*, in the *first* place. Were *they* conferred on you upon any consideration of your observance of the Mosaical law, or as you were Jews? Was it not absolutely on account of your becoming Christian disciples.?

3 Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the ~~flesh~~?

3. How weak and foolish a proceeding is this, for men to lay the foundation of their pardon and happiness in the Christian religion, as demonstrated by such evidences of the Holy Spirit, and then run back and build upon the ceremonial law, which they before allowed to be so external and carnal a dispensation, as to be insufficient for it.

4. Have ye suffered so many things in vain; if it be yet in vain.

4. And then, to what purpose have you endured so many persecutions for the sake of your *gospel* profession, if you now lose all its happy privileges, by relinquishing the main articles of it? But I hope you will prevent that by considering better.

5. I say

---

\* Ver. 1. *Hath been evidently set forth.* *προεγεγράφη* was before described and represented to you: *Viz.* Before ever these Jewish notions, of the necessity of their *law*, were heard of amongst them.

5 He therefore that ministrereth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doth he it by the works of the law, or by the \* hearing of faith?

and as *you* were Christian professors. Wherefore, as this *earnest* and *pledge* of your justification was not in the least owing to that *law*, neither can the thing it *self* be.

6 Even as Abraham † believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness;

7 Know ye therefore, that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.

obtained him his justification; and whoever he be, whether Jew or Gentile, that so believes in God through Christ the Messiah, is the spiritual son of Abraham, and has a right to the promise made to that great patriarch.

8. And the scripture foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel

5. I say then, when I wrought <sup>A. D. 58.</sup> such *miracles* for your conversion, and conferred the power of working them upon several members of your church; did I do it as a Jewish teacher, or had the least regard to the *ceremonial* law? No, it was purely as a *gospel* minister,

6. & 7. In the next place, Can any of those who are so zealous for the Jewish rites, desire to be justified and accepted of God, upon a better foot than Abraham the very father † of the Jewish nation was? Now, it is certain the *Christian faith* is that very principle of *believing God's revelation and obeying his will*, that

8. For it being the original and gracious design of God to save the Gentiles, as well as the Jews, by bringing them all, one day, under the *Christian* covenant; you are

---

\* Ver. 5. *The bearing of faith.* The word *bearing* signifies either the *doctrine* of *faith*, i. e. of the *gospel*, or else *obedience* to the *faith*. In this *former* sense, it is the same as in *Isa. liii. 1. Lord who hath believed our report*, (Heb. *our bearing*, i. e. the *doctrine heard*.) From whence St. Paul probably took it.

† See the same argument in Rom. iv.



A. D. 58. gospel unto Abraham, *saying*, In thee shall all nations be blessed. *are to understand that special blessing promised to Abraham (Gen. xii. 3.) to be meant of Christ, who was to be born of his family, and become the Saviour of all nations that would embrace his religion.*

9 So then they which be of faith, are blessed with faithful Abraham. *9. As therefore it was faith in God that justified Abraham, so is it faith in Christ, and obedience to his religion, that saves all Christians, and the ceremonial law has no hand at all in it.*

10 For as many as are of the works of the law, are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them. *10. For indeed, that law is of quite a different nature from one that is to justify and save mankind: It is a most severe dispensation, abounding in duties and injunctions, and laying all under guilt that breaks || any one of them; but provides no sufficient atonement to clear their consciences of that guilt.*

|| See Deut. xxvii. 26.  
Rom. iii.  
20 vii. 3.  
Heb. 10.

11 But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, The just shall live by faith.

12 And the law is not of faith: but, the man that doth them shall live in them.

land of Canaan for its reward; but *sin* and *guilt* was the effect of the transgression of any one of them.

13 Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed

11. & 12. And accordingly, the prophet Habakkuk ascribes the justification of all good men to *religious faith* in God. Whereas the *ceremonial law* puts it not upon *that principle*, but insists on an exact and rigid observance of all its numerous *rites and precepts*; proposing the promised

13. Now from this severe dispensation, and from the guilt of our numberless violations of its injunctions, has Christ our Messiah redeemed † us by his death; whereby

---

† Redeemed us ἐξαγοράσεν; Has brought us out—as from a slavery. Or has delivered us from it as effectually, as if he had paid down a price for us. Compare 2 Tim. ii. 26. 1 Pet. i. 18, 19. with Deut. vii. 8. Exod. vi. 6. Deut. xxxii. 6. 2 Sam. vii. 23.

Curfed is every one that hangeth on a tree \* : whereby he fuffered the curfe, in A. D. 58. our ftead, agreeably to the words of the *law* (Deut. xxii. 23.) which call *hanging on a tree* an \* *accursed death*.

14 That the bleffing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jeſus Chriſt, that we might receive || the promiſe of the ſpirit through faith.

that procures all Chriſtians theſe gifts and graces promiſed to the church of the Meſſiah : and the *ceremonial law* contributes nothing towards it.

15 Brethren, I ſpeak after the manner of men : though it be but a man's covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man diſannulleth or addeth thereto.

ratified. How much leſs ſhould any perſon dare to break or change the ſolemn covenant of God !

16 Now to Abraham and his ſeed were the promiſes made. He ſaith not, and to  
Vol. II. ſeeds,

14. And thus the grand promiſe made to Abraham, of *his ſeed being a bleſſing to all nations*, is fulfilled in Chriſt ; and makes it plain, that as his death was the ſole and ſufficient expiation for the ſins of both Gentiles and Jews ; ſo it is the embracing of *his religion* alone

15. Thus the *Chriſtian* covenant is grounded on Abraham's promiſe. Now common equity, even in human *affairs*, makes it utterly unlawful to any man to cancel or alter a *covenant, will, or contract*, that is once regularly made, and duly

16. But now your *Jewiſh* zealots, by preaching up the abſolute neceſſity of the *ceremonial law* to *Chriſtian* people, are evidently guilty of  
C this

---

\* *Made a curſe—Curſed.* Chriſt was not *accursed of God*, in the proper ſenſe of that phraſe ; but by being crucified, was in the eſteem of the Jews, the ſame *polluted and abominable thing* that, by their law, all perſons were that were hanged as *malefactors*. As Le Clerc well obſerves.

|| Τὴν ἐπαγγελίαν τοῦ πνεύματος. *The promiſe of the Spirit, i. e.* Either the ſpiritual bleſſings promiſed to Abraham in general, or elſe the *particular* gifts and endowments of the Holy Spirit on the apoſtles and the primitive church, called emphatically, *the promiſe*, Acts ii. 32. and xiii. 32. and the *promiſe* of the Father, Acts ii. 33. i. 4.

A. D. 58. seeds, as of many;  
 { but as of one, and to  
 thy seed, which is  
 Christ.

\* See the  
 same argu-  
 ment, Rom.  
 ix.

this crime. For it is clear, the promise made to Abraham was meant of one particular *person*, that was to be born of a *particular branch* of his family. Christ was the Saviour promised, of Isaac's line; and it was not every one that should be merely \* born of Abraham, but only such as should be members of the church of this Messiah, that were entitled to his blessings; and *all* that were his members, be they Gentiles or Jews, were certainly to enjoy them.

17 And this I say, That the covenant that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect.

part of mankind) four hundred and thirty years before.

18 For if the inheritance be of the law, it is no more of promise: but God gave it to Abraham by promise.

*religion* alone that is the condition of a *Christian's* justification; and for you to join the *ceremonial* law to it, is to alter the promise and solemn covenant of God.

19 Wherefore then *serveth* the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come, to whom the promise was made, and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator. and good purposes, *viz.* To preserve and fence *them*, who were the church of God, and of whose nation Christ was to be born, from the idolatrous rites and practices of

17. Whereas your *zealots* say, No; the blessing must be by the observation of the *law*. As if a *law* of God could ever be supposed to come, and disannul, and set aside a most solemn and *absolute promise*; a promise of infinite importance made to the pious ancestors of the *very* people to whom that *law* is given (and in him to all the obedient

18. Either therefore this great blessing of mens pardon and salvation is wholly founded in the promise to Abraham, or not; if it be (it is most evident from scripture it was) then it is *faith in Christ's*

19. To this argument I know the *Jewish* zealots will make this objection, *viz.* *If pardon and salvation were not to be had by virtue of the Mosaical law, why then was that law given, and what was it good for?* I answer, It was given to the *Jewish* people for very wise and good purposes, *viz.* To preserve and fence *them*, who were the church of God, and of whose nation Christ was to be born, from the idolatrous rites and practices of the

the *beaten* world, into which they were so apt to fall : A. D. 58. }  
to show them the guilt of their own sins \*, and the punishment due to them ; and by the figurative nature of its ordinances, to train up that people to the hope and expectation of Christ the Messiah, the great *Sacrifice* and Saviour of mankind. And you must observe, this *law* was not, like the promise to Abraham, given *absolutely* and *immediately* from God to all *mankind* ; but conveyed, by the ministry of *angels*, to Moses, the mediator between God and that *single* people.

20 Now a mediator is not a mediator of two parties concerned in any affair. (For a mediator supposes two parties concerned in any affair.) It is false, therefore, that justification cannot be had but by the observance of that *law*, whereof Moses was the *mediator* ; when it is plain, God was the only *single* † party that gave the great promise *absolutely* and *immediately* to Abraham ; and he was justified without any *mediator* at all.

21 Is the law then against the promises of God ? God forbid ! for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law.

21 So that the doctrine of these *zealots* sets the *Mosaic law* quite contrary to, and makes it disannul the promise to Abraham, and the *Christian* religion. For, if the observance of the *ceremonial law* could have put men into a state of pardon and redemption, the promise to Abraham was needless, and the *Christian religion* signifies nothing \*. Which \* See v. 18. God forbid any man should imagine !

C 2

22. But,

---

\* Τῶν παραβάσεων χάριν. *Because of the transgression.* I have given the *two* most natural senses of the expression ; which is not exactly agreed upon by learned interpreters. I will only remark, that if it be observed that, after the giving of the law of the *ten commandments*, Deut. v. 22. it was said, *And he added no more* ; i. e. gave them no other statutes at that *time* : and that after their proneness to idolatry, shown in the instance of the *golden calf*, the whole *ceremonial law* was imposed upon the Jews ; it will render it very probable, That the words *because of transgressions*, mean, principally to keep them from *idolatrous transgressions*.

† ὁ ὁ Θεός.

A. D. 58.

22 But the scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ, might be given to them that believe.

Saviour, by whose religion their pardon and salvation is to be obtained.

23 But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith, which should afterwards be revealed.

discipline and ceremonies of a *law* that pointed and represented to us what he was to do and suffer for us, in order to a more perfect and complete dispensation.

24 Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster, *to bring us* unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith.

25 But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster.

constraint is over, and we can have no further occasion for those mean and lower degrees of instruction.

26 For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus.

27 For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ, have put on Christ.

Every one that is baptized into Christ's profession is *perfectly his*, and has a claim to all the privileges of his church, upon his due obedience to his religion.

22. But, directly contrary to *their* notion, the scriptures of the Old Testament represent all mankind, Jews and Gentiles, to be in a state of sin and guilt; and set forth Christ the Messiah promised to Abraham, as the only sufficient

religion their pardon and salvation

23. Now we of the *Jewish* nation had the promise of this Messiah to be born of *our* family; and were accordingly trained up to the view and expectation of him, by being kept strictly under the disci-

pline and ceremonies of a *law* that pointed and represented to us what he was to do and suffer for us, in order to a more perfect and complete dispensation.

24. & 25. Wherefore the *Mosaic* law was intended no further than a schoolmaster is to children, to confine them to certain bounds, to instruct and prepare our nation for the higher and more holy institution of Jesus Christ; and now that we are actually under that institution of Christ, our confine-

26. & 27. The promise to Abraham then, or the *Christian* religion, being the only thing that justifies and saves you, you must remember this blessing extends to men of *all* nations indifferently. The Jews and Gentiles are no longer kept separate from each other.

Every one that is baptized into Christ's profession is *perfectly his*, and has a claim to all the privileges of his church, upon his due obedience to his religion.

28. This



28 There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female; for ye are all one in Christ Jesus.

28. This perfect dispensation A. D. 58. of his makes no distinction between Jew or Gentile, *circumcised* or *uncircumcised*, *master* or *slave*, *man* ‡ or *woman*; but they have all equal privileges upon the same conditions.

29 And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.

29 And if you Gentile, as well as the *Jewish* converts, be accepted into the *Christian* covenant, you must be acknowledged the true spiritual seed of Abraham as well as *they*; and according to the very tenor and design of the great promise made to that holy patriarch and his posterity, shall inherit the blessing of pardon and salvation.

#### CHAP. IV.

*The same Argument continued; by showing the Imperfection of the Jewish and the Perfection of the Christian Religion; from a Comparison taken from an Heir to an estate. The Apostle then turns off to Expostulating with them about the Folly of adhering to the Jewish Law; reflects on their false Teachers; and intreats them to continue the same Esteem they formerly had of him as their true Apostle; expressing his tender Regard to their Church. Then he resumes the Argument, illustrating the Difference between the two Dispensations of the Law and Gospel, as figuratively represented by the two Branches of Abraham's Posterity, viz. Of Isaac from Sarah, and of Ismael from Hagar.*

C 3

1 & 2. To

‡ Ver. 28. *Male nor female.* Note, The apostle alludes to the *Jewish* custom in *inheritances* of estates, which descended always by right in the *father*, and never by the *mother's* side. As Selden de Succession: and other learned writers observe out of Maimonides and the *Talmudists*.

A. D. 58. 1. **N**OW I say, that  
 the heir as long  
 as he is a child, dif-  
 fereth nothing from a  
 servant, though he be  
 lord of all.

† Cap. iii.  
 23, 25.

2 But is under tu-  
 tors and governors,  
 until the time ap-  
 pointed of the father.

legal right to inheritance, yet while he is a minor, he is no more capable of entering upon, and managing the estate, than a *servant* of the family can do; but is kept under the discipline and allowance of guardians and trustees, till he is of age of inheritance, according to the tenor of his father's last will and testament.

3 Even so we, when  
 we were children,  
 were in bondage un-  
 der the elements of  
 the world:

made; but, like *minors*, were first to be kept and educated under the discipline of the figurative and introductory dispensation of the *Mosaical* law, the better to prepare them to receive it.

4 But when the  
 fullness of the time  
 was come, God sent  
 forth his Son, made of  
 a woman, made under  
 the law,

5 To redeem them  
 that were under the  
 law, that we might  
 receive the adoption  
 of sons.

who himself lived in  
 delivered that nation, for ever after, from the burden of its rites and ceremonies; bringing *them* and *all* mankind, to the full age and capacity of inheriting the promise of pardon and salvation.

1. & 2. **T**O illustrate to you the  
 imperfect nature of the  
*Mosaical* dispensation, I compared  
 it to a *school*, † wherein children  
 are trained up for higher learning.  
 Let me now further show it you by  
 a comparison taken from a son and  
*heir* to a man's *estate*. Though  
 you know, an eldest son has, at  
 his father's death, an *immediate*

3. This is the case of the *Jew-*  
*ish* church and people; they were  
 indeed to inherit the great promise  
 of the Messiah, made to Abraham:  
 but not *immediately* after it was

4. & 5. The time that *they* and  
 the *rest* of the world were to come  
 to the full enjoyment of this pro-  
 mise, was, at the appearance of  
 this Christ; whom, at the season  
 foretold by the *prophets*, and when  
 the Divine Wisdom saw mankind  
 most fitted to receive him, God the  
 Father sent into the world, born  
 of a virgin of a *Jewish* family;  
 subjection to the *Jewish* law, and  
 delivered that nation, for ever after, from the burden of its rites and ceremonies; bringing *them* and *all* man-  
 kind, to the full age and capacity of inheriting the pro-  
 mise of pardon and salvation.

6. And

6 And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.

perfect inheritors of this promised blessing, by the gifts || and graces of his *holy Spirit* conferred on you ; so that you may assuredly address and approach him, as to a merciful and gracious Father.

7 Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son ; and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ.

the dignity and full privilege you are arrived at by the *Christian* covenant. You are now entered, as *sons* at full age, on the inheritance of the promises made to Abraham and your forefathers.

8 Howbeit, then, when ye knew not God, † ye did service unto them which by nature are no gods.

9 But now after that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, how turn ye again to the weak and beggarly elements, whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage ?

6. And accordingly, as *Christi-* A. D. 58.  
*an* believers, God has given you *Gentile* converts as well as *Jew-*  
*ish* ones, the complete assurance and pledge || of your being now || *Rom. viii.*  
accepted for his true children, and *15, 16.*

7. As to you of the *Jewish* part, your term of *minority* is now out. Wherefore instead of adhering any longer to the childish and imperfect services of the *law*, consider

8. & 9. Thus it is with the *Jewish* converts. But it is yet more foolish and unaccountable, that you *Gentile* Christians, who, from a perfectly false and idolatrous † religion, are now converted to the knowledge, worship and favour of the *true God*, should ever be persuaded to embrace a burdensome dispensation, that you were never at all obliged to ; and which, in comparison of that you are now baptized into, is a mean, low, and imperfect

C 4

† Ver. 8. *Ye did service to them which by nature are no gods*, i. e. which in *reality* [φύσει] were not god's ; were gods in *no sense whatever*. Or else by pointing and reading it thus, Ἐδουλευσάτε τοῖς φύσει μὴ ἔσι, θεοῖς, *ye were in bondage to gods that in nature had no being, or were not, had no divinity in them* : According to St. Paul's language in another place, 1 Cor. viii. 4. *An idol is nothing*. Images and demons there might be, but *gods* or *lords* they were not, having neither *supreme* nor *subordinate* power or qualities ; mere *fictions*, *vanities* and *nullities*.

A. D. 58. perfect way of religion; and would reduce you again \* to a *bondage*, though not so ill a one as your *heathen* state was.

10 Ye observe days, and months, and times, and years.

11 I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain.

12 Brethren, I beseech you, be as I am: for I am as ye are, ye have not injured me at all.

otherwise, yet am willing to condescend and conform to your notions, as far as ever my *Christian* office and profession will permit me. Let no suspicions or resentments between us abate your love toward me: for my part, I have none against you.

13 Ye know how through infirmity of the flesh, I preached the gospel unto you at the first.

14 And my temptation which was in my flesh ye despised not, nor rejected, but received me as an angel of God, even as Christ Jesus.

15 Where

10. & 11. I perceive you are grown zealous observers of the *Jewish Sabbaths, new-moons and festivals*. If this temper continues on you, I fear my labours of converting you to the *Christian* religion are all lost.

12. Let me intreat you, dear brethren, to be of my sentiment. I was once as zealous a patriot for the *Mosaical* law as any of you can be. And though I am now

13. & 14. Do not forget what respect you once paid both to my person and *doctrine*, when I first preached to you and made you *Christians*. None of the sufferings and infirmities I laboured under, nor the meanness of my personal appearance, made you then slight me in the least; but ye received me with such respect as if I had been Christ himself, the true Messiah, the great *Angel* of the covenant†.

15. You

---

\* Turn again, and desire again: i. e. not that the *Galatians* were ever *Jewish* proselytes at all; but that as their former *heathen* religion was *beggarly*, weak and slavish, so by desiring to be *circumcised* they would again be reduced to a bondage, though not the same they were under before.

† An angel of God. ἀγγελον θεου. The Messenger of God—Emphatically, the *Angel* of the covenant.

15 Where is then the blessedness you spake of? for I bear you record, that if it had been possible, ye would have plucked out your own eyes, and have given them to me.

16 Am I therefore become your enemy, because I tell you the truth?

17 They zealously affect you, but not well: yea, they would exclude you. \* that you might affect them.

18 But it is good † to be zealously affected always in a good thing, and not only when I am present with you.

19 My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you,

20 I desire to be present with you now, and to change my voice,

15. You then expressed such <sup>A. D. 58.</sup> satisfaction and happiness in me, that I can testify you would have done or suffered almost any thing for my sake. But what blessing was I or my *ministry* to you, if you now leave me, and run to the *Jewish* teachers?

16. Or what is that has changed your sentiments of me? Is it that I tell you plainly, the *Mosaic law has no hand in your justification and happiness*? If that be it, it is the very *gospel* truth, and I must stand to it.

17. Your false *teachers* indeed pretend an extraordinary love and respect for you; they maliciously endeavour to draw you entirely from *me*\*, and engross all your affections to themselves.

18. But pray remember, if ever you had any just reason to esteem me † as a good and true *apostle*, you ought to do so *still* in my absence, as well as when I was preaching among you in person.

19. My dear Christian children! I am in the very pains of a mother in travail, till I have renewed and brought you forth again into better and sounder principles of Christianity.

20. I could wish myself with you; and that I had reason to change these complaints into commendations.

\* Ver. 7. *Exclude you*, i. e. from the *Christian* covenant, unless you be *circumcised*; and thereby make you fond of their principles. Or else, ἡμᾶς, *exclude me*, as some copies read it, and as in the paraphrase.

† To be zealously affected *in a good thing*; or, ἐν καλῷ, toward a good *person*.

A. D. 18. voice, for I stand in  
 ~~~~~ doubt of you.

21. Tell me, ye  
 that desire to be un-  
 der the law, do ye not  
 hear the law?

be represented. And I hope, you that are so fond of  
 Moses's law, will not refuse to believe his writings.

22 For it is writ-  
 ten, that Abraham  
 had two sons, the one  
 by a bond-maid, the  
 other by a free-woman.

23. But he who  
 was of the bond-woman,  
 was born after  
 the flesh: but he of  
 the free-woman was  
 by promise.

incapable of procreation. His birth was extraordinary,  
 and the pure effect of a divine *promise* appropriated to  
 him and his posterity.

24. Which things  
 are an "allegory; for  
 these and the two co-  
 venants, the one from  
 the mount Sinai which  
 gendreth to bondage,  
 which is Agar.

it in the way of *figure* or *allegory*. [Ver. 27.]

25 For this † Agar is  
 mount Sinai in Arabia,  
 and

mendations. But indeed at the  
 present, I know not what to think  
 of you.

21. But let me argue the main  
*point* with you again, from the  
 very words of the *Old Testament*,  
 wherein both *law* and *gospel* may

22. You read there, that Abra-  
 ham had two sons, from whom  
 the two different branches of his  
 posterity sprung, the one by his  
 bond-maid Hagar, and the other  
 by his proper wife Sarah.

23. Ismael that was born of  
 Hagar (while Abraham was young  
 enough to have children), was by  
 the common course of nature; but  
 Isaac was begotten of Sarah, at an  
 age when they were naturally in-

23. You must know then, that  
 this is not only a literal *history*,  
 but may be taken as a figurative  
 representation of the two covenants  
 and religious *dispensations*, viz.  
 The *law* and the *gospel*: And ac-  
 cordingly the prophet Isaiah uses

25 † For Hagar (the mother of  
 the *Ismaelites*) represents the slavish  
 and

\* Ἀλληγορεῖ μένα, are *allegorized*, viz. by Isaiah in Ver. 27.

† Τὸ γὰρ Ἀγὰρ Σινᾶ ὄρεος, &c. This Hagar is *Mount Sinai*.  
 For the construction of this verse, let the critical reader see  
 Dr. Bentley's *Epist. to Joan. Mal. Chron.* and the note of  
 Dr. Mills on this place. And for a larger and most excel-  
 lent explanation of this whole allegory, I refer him to Dr.  
 Jackson, Tom. III. Book XII. Cap. 10.

and answereth to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage with her children.

26 But Jerusalem which is above, is free, which is the mother of us all †.

which is truly *spiritual* and *free* of all obligation to those troublesome *ceremonies*; and is not, like the *Jewish* religion, confined to one *nation*, but, as an universal † mother, receives all, both *Jewish* and *Gentile* believers, into her blessings and privileges. And you cannot deny the justness of this representation: For how can you allow that it was of God's mere pleasure and will, that Sarah, and not Hagar, Isaac, and not Ismael, were chosen to be the parents of the *covenanted people*, and of the *promised seed*; and yet deny, that by the same will and pleasure God cannot and will not choose the *Gentile* world to be his *church* in Christ?

27 For it is written, Rejoice thou barren that bearest not; break forth and cry, thou that travailest not; for the desolate hath many more children than she which hath an husband.

28 Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are the children of promise.

blest covenant intended in the promise to Abraham; and are the *spiritual* offspring of Isaac.

and temporary *dispensation* of the *Jewish law*, that was given at Mount Sinai in the desert of *Arabia*; and that people of the *Jews*, that were to be kept under the severe discipline of it.

26. But Sarah (the mother of Isaac) denotes the *promised seed* of Abraham, the *spiritual Jerusalem*, i. e. the *Christian church*;

27. Of this church it is you are to understand those triumphant words of Isaiah (Isai. liv. 1.), wherein he calls upon her (particularly the *Gentile* part of her) *to rejoice in the vast number of her members, that should exceed those of the Jewish people, who had been all along the only church and people of God.*

28. The application then of this allegory is plain, *Christians*, whether *Gentile* or *Jewish*, *circumcised* or not, are the members of this

29. But

---

† The mother of us all. Μήτηρ, the metropolis, says Mr. Dodwel, *Dissert. Cyp.* 5.

A. D. 58.

29. But as then he that was born after the flesh, persecuted him that was *born* after the Spirit, even so it is now.

30. Nevertheless, what saith the scripture? Cast out the bond-woman and her son: for the son of the bond-woman shall not be heir with the son of the free-woman.

31. So then, brethren, we are not children of the bond-woman, but of the free.

29. And indeed the *Jews*, by their obstinate behaviour, have carried the resemblance still further. For, as Ismael, who was a mere \* *natural son*, did then mock and insult Isaac, that was to be the *inheritor of Abraham's promise*; so now the worst and most bitter persecutors of the *Christian church* are the infidel part of the *Jewish nation*, and the zealous adherents to their *ceremonial law*.

30. And God will *complete* the parallel in a just recompence upon them: For *as Ismael and his mother were turned out of Abraham's family*, so shall these obstinate patriots of the *Jewish law*, who depend upon it for their *justification*, have no share in the blessings of the *Christian covenant*.

31. The sum of the argument is this then, that every Christian is a member of the *free, gracious, and spiritual religion of the gospel*, as Isaac was the promised seed of Abraham; and consequently, cannot be obliged to the heavy bondage of the *ceremonial law of Moses*.

---

\* Ver. 29. *After the flesh a natural son*, i. e. a son by a *secondary wife or concubine*, and begotten without any special and extraordinary concurrence of *Divine Power*, or *promise*; in contradistinction to the case of Isaac.



## C H A P. V.

*The first Verse is an Exhortation from the Discourses of the two foregoing Chapters. Then the Apostle, in more express Terms, declares, He never preached up the Necessity of the Jewish Law to Christians; as their false Teachers insinuated he had done. Clears himself of that Imputation several Ways Pronounceth all Christians free from the Jewish Ceremonies; but exhorts them to avoid all violent Disputes, and uncharitable Censures upon each other, in their Arguments for, and Defence of, that Freedom. Warns them against the several Vices of the Flesh, and presses them to the Practice of the Spiritual Graces and Virtues of the Gospel Religion.*

**STAND** fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not † entangled again with the yoke of bondage.

2 Behold, I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing. *Christian* converts: Take notice, I now myself expressly again tell you, That whatever Christian depends upon *circumcision*, and the observance of the *Jewish ceremonies*, for his justification, loses all the benefits of his *Christian* profession.

1. **I**F then the *Christian* religion A. D. 53. has thus freed you from all obligation to the burdensome ceremonies of the *Mosaical* law, maintain that freedom, and never † submit yourselves to that slavish dispensation.

2. And, for an absolute confutation of that false suggestion of some of your new *teachers* ||, that I have given any countenance to the necessity of that *law* upon

3. For

† Entangled again. See chap. iv. 9. the note there.

|| Ὅτι οὐκ εἶναι ἄλλαχρὶ περιτομὴν κηρύττων ἄλλαχρὶ ὁ εἰς. Theodoret in Loc.

A. D. 58. 3 For I testify again \* to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law.

4 Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace.

5 For we through the Spirit † wait for the hope of righteousness by faith.

to him by the extraordinary gifts and graces of the Holy Spirit ‡ bestowed upon the *Christian* church.

6 For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but faith which worketh by love.

7 Ye did run well, who did hinder you ||, that you should not obey the truth? and drew you off from the true *Christian* doctrine?

8 This persuasion cometh not of him that calleth you, the Author of your religion, nor from *me* that first preached it to you.

3. & 4. Nay to show you how much in earnest I am, I repeat it again \*; Whatever *Christian* is circumcised becomes a perfect Jew, and must keep the whole ceremonial law: and whoever does that as a necessary means of his pardon and salvation, renounces the salvation of the *gospel*, and forfeits all claim to it.

5. For a *Christian's* hope of salvation is founded wholly in his embracing the *Christian* religion; which hope he has fully confirmed

6. And in this *gospel dispensation*, *circumcision* or *uncircumcision* signify nothing: The only thing that saves either Jew or Gentile now, is such a faith in Christ's religion as produces the true love of God and our neighbour.

7. When you Galatians were first converted by me, you were in a good way, and went on well; what people are they that stopt ||

8. Be assured, this notion of the necessity of the *Jewish* law to *Christians* comes not from God,

9. Have

---

\* *Again.* See chap. i. 8, 9, 10.

† *We—through the Spirit—* See chap. iii. 2, 5. iv. 6.

|| *Who did hinder you?* ἀνέχεσθαι, *justled you out of the way.* It refers to ἐγχεῖρες, and seems to me to be a term proper to the games wherein the racers endeavoured to *justle* and *retard* one another.

9 A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump.

principles; and a few such

9. Have a care of it then. This <sup>A. D. 8.</sup> *one* doctrine, like leaven, will

four and spoil all your *Christian*

† *teachers* may soon corrupt

10 I have confidence in you through the Lord, that you will be none other-wise minded; but he that troubleth you, shall bear *his* judgment,

10. But, I hope in Christ, what I have said to you will bring you off from it; and that the preachers † of it shall be censured and condemned as they deserve.

whosoever he be.

11 And I, brethern, if I yet preach circumcision, why do I yet suffer persecution? then is the offence of the cross ceased.

11. How irrational is it for them to suggest that *I* should favour their notions? Were *I* a favourer of that doctrine, how came the Jews to persecute me as they still do. It is plain, would I but give up this *one*

principle, *of mens being saved only by the death of a crucified Jesus* (the very principle that gives them so much distaste), they would soon be freinds with me.

12 I would they were even † cut off which trouble you.

12. Verily, I have such an aversion to the *teachers* that spread this doctrine, that I would even wish they were expelled † the Christian church, for troubling and perverting you with it.

13. For

---

† 9, 10. *A little leaven*—and *he that troubleth you*.  
*Note*, Some learned men would conjecture, from the two expressions; that it was *one* single teacher, or *false apostle*, that gave St. Paul this trouble and opposition. It might be so; yet I think, the *twelfth verse* renders it very uncertain—There it is, *They which trouble you*.

‡ *Cut off*. The apostle's meaning in this phrase may, perhaps, run higher than bare *excommunication*, according to the conjecture of the judicious Dr. Jackson. Tom. III. p. 182. who supposes him here to wish the same sentence upon those that unreasonably *pressed* circumcision, which was denounced upon such as *omitted* it. Now that was Gen. xvii. 14. *To be cut off or destroyed from among the people*. Which the Jewish doctors, and many of our best divines understand of immediate *death*, or at least *shortening of life*, by the *Divine Hand*. See Exod. iv. 24.

A. D. 58.

13. For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; only *use* not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another.

animosities, or reviling behaviour against such as differ from you; for these are the effects of a carnal and sinful principle. But, on the contrary, be ready to serve them in any kind of good offices.

14 For all the law is fulfilled in one word, *even* in this; Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.

15. But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another.

discredit and bane of

16 *This* I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh.

extraordinary gifts of the Holy Spirit conferred on your church.

17. For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other; so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.

18. But if ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not under the law.

the Holy Ghost; which both enables and obliges them to a higher

13. For it is evident beyond contradiction, the *Christian* religion has freed all its members from the burden of the *Jewish* law. Only let me advise you that maintain this freedom, not to abuse it into a liberty of uncharitable censures,

14. Remembering that a just and kind treatment of all mankind is the sum and substance of all the moral laws of the second table.

15. Whereas if your differences and disputes fly out into an outrageous and abusive carriage to each other, it may hazard to end in the ruin of you all, and the

16. To prevent which direful effects, live and converse agreeably to the pure and *spiritual* religion of the *gospel*, and worthy of those of the Holy Spirit conferred on

17. For the corrupt inclinations, of which such vices are the genuine effects, are directly opposite to the temper and *spirit of Christianity*; they are perfectly destructive of each other, and it is impossible you can indulge them both.

18. The religion of Christ is truly *spiritual*; and all its members are under the conduct and influence of

a higher degree of purity and holiness than could be expected from a Jew under the *Mosaical* law ; and at the same time shows them to be in no need of that *law*. A. D. 58.

19 Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are *these*, adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness.

20 Idolatry, † witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulation, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies.

21. Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like : of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things, shall not inherit the kingdom of God.

22 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith,

23. Meekness, temperance : against such there is no law.

ness and beneficence, fidelity to our words, and promises, meekness and temperance in the use of worldly pleasures. These are agreeable to the Divine Will, and will screen us from all guilt and punishment.

24 And they that are Christ's, have crucified the flesh, with the affections and lusts,

19, 20, & 21. And the better to preserve you from the vices that spring from these indulged corruptions of human nature, let me point out to you some of the chief of them, as adultery, fornication, impurity in *thoughts* or *actions*, idolatrous worship, with all the unclean practices attending it, † witchcrafts, enmities, quarrels, animosities, furious anger, sedition against the lawful government, divisions and separations in the *church* on needless occasions, envyings, murders, drunkenness, and night revellings, &c. Which I always told you, and now again particularly warn you, are such enormities, that no practiser of them can ever be a true *Christian*, or enjoy the happiness of heaven.

22. & 23. On the contrary, the graces and virtues required of us by the *spiritual* religion of the *gospel*, are such as these, *viz.* Love to all mankind, a cheerful and contented mind, peaceableness of behaviour, patience under injuries, sweetness of disposition, gentle-

24. And every true *Christian* engages by his profession to get such a mastery over his corrupt and fleshly inclinations, as to arrive at the habitual practice of all these virtues.

VOL. II.

D

25. Where-

† *Witchcrafts.* Φαρμακία, i. e. *The art of poisoning.*

A. D. 58.

25 If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit.

that is attended with such assistances of the Holy Ghost; it infinitely concerns us to live suitably to its holy dictates and precepts.

26 Let us not be desirous of vain-glory, provoking one another, envying one another.

and vain-glory, that is so apt to make them envy, condemn, and exasperate one another.

25. Wherefore, if we pretend ourselves members of this pure and spiritual religion of the *gospel*,

and spiritual religion of the *gospel*, that is attended with such assistances of the Holy Ghost;

it infinitely concerns us to live suitably to its holy dictates and precepts.

26. And let me persuade all your contending parties to begin to give an instance of this *Christian* temper, by particularly suppressing that spirit of ambition

and vain-glory, that is so apt to make them envy, condemn, and exasperate one another.

## CHAP. VI.

*He continues his Exhortation to a tender and peaceable Temper. Admonisheth the Spiritual Governors of the Church to endeavour the recovery of such as fall into Errors and Irregularities, by kind and gentle Treatment. Reflects upon the Pride of their false Teachers. Encourages the Galatians to a liberal and impartial Contribution for the Maintainance of their Ministers: And to Charity towards all Mankind, especially their Fellow Christians. Then sums up the Argument of his whole Epistle, and concludes with his Blessing.*

\* See the Preface.

† Chap. 5. 1  
22, 23. **B** Rethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness, considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted.

1. **B**Y the rule of *Christian* charity then, † it is the indispensable duty of your spiritual and inspired *ministers*, to endeavour, by all gentle and kind methods, to reduce such members as are misled into bad principles or practices, to a just sense of their duty: Remembering that they themselves are not *absolutely* exempted from falling into the like miscarriages.

2. In-

2 Bear ye one ano- 2. Instead therefore of imposing A. D. 58.  
thers burdens, and so the drudgery of the *Jewish* law  
fulfil the law of Christ. upon one another; make it your  
business fully to obey this noble *Christian* law, by bear-  
ing with, and relieving the infirmities of each other.

3 For if a man 3. For whatever *teacher* exalts  
think himself to be and values himself, so as to be above  
something, when he is a tender concern for the good and  
nothing, he deceiveth safety of others, or imperiously to  
himself. impose his own notions upon them,  
makes himself a very little and foolish person.

4 But let every man 4. Let none insult the weak-  
prove his own work, ness of his inferiors, but let every  
and then he || shall one look into and weigh his *own*  
have rejoicing in him- actions. In them alone a man can  
self alone, and not in truly || boast, and not in a mere  
another. comparison of himself with other  
people, or in making them *his* profelytes.

5 For every man 5. For it is our *own* behaviour  
shall bear his own we shall all be accountable for;  
burthen. let others be of what opinion or  
what party they will.

6 Let him that is 6. And, whereas I find several  
taught in the word, of you very partial in contribut-  
communicate unto ing to the maintainance of your  
him that teacheth, in *ministers*, by the difference and  
all good things. disputes that prevail amongst you;  
I now exhort you to be just and liberal in your collec-  
tion for them *all*.

7 Be not deceived, 7. Let *none* of them lead you  
God is not mocked: into wrong prejudices against the  
for whatsoever a man *rest*. They may deceive *you*, but  
soweth, that shall he God they cannot; who will be  
also reap. sure to reward you in proportion  
to the prudence and liberality of your distributions.

D 2

8. He

---

|| Ver. 4. Shall have rejoicing. *Καυχῆμα*, Glorifying or  
boasting.

**A D. 58.** 8 For he that soweth to his flesh, shall of the flesh reap corruption: but he that soweth to the spirit, shall of the spirit reap life everlasting.

9 And let us not be weary in well-doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.

\* Luke xiv. 14.

10 As we have therefore opportunity, let us do good unto all men, especially unto them who are of the household of faith.

(See v. 12.) and persecution, without partiality and unreasonable distinctions.

11 Ye see how large a letter I have written you † with mine own hand.

12 A<sup>s</sup>

8. He that lays out his worldly substance to selfish and private purposes only, shall reap the fruits of so worldly and corrupt a principle. But he that spends it agreeably to the charitable spirit of the *gospel*, shall find a full harvest of eternal life and happiness.

9. Let this encourage us all to be constant and cheerful in acts of bounty and beneficence, which will not fail, in God's due \* time, of producing us a plentiful recompence.

10. As Providence, then, gives us opportunities and abilities, let us extend our charity to all mankind, but especially to our fellow *Christians*, especially to those of them that are under affliction

11. I have written this letter to you, on this important occasion, with my own † hand. Consider ‡ the contents of it; the sum and substance thereof is this, *viz.*

12. Those

† [With mine own hand.] His other epistles being mostly written by an *amanuensis*. See Rom. xvi. 26. 1 Cor. xvi. 21. 2 Thes. iii. 17.

‡ Ἰδετε πηλίκαις γράμμασιν. [Ye see how large a letter:] Or rather, [in what words.]

By observing the *five* following verses to be a perfect *recapitulation* of the argument of this whole epistle, I cannot think *πηλίκαις* denotes either the *largeness* of it, or the bad *hand* in which it was written, (as Theophylact says, but without any proof) but the *matter* and *substance* of it. And that *ιδετε* ought to be rendered *imperatively*, the sense being this, *viz.* [Consider what I have written, the sum whereof is this—] as in the following verses.



12 As many as desire to make a fair show in the flesh, they constrain you to be circumcised: only lest they should suffer persecution for the cross of Christ.

on them for their *Christian* faith, by incensing the *Roman* power against them.

13 For neither they themselves who are circumcised keep the law, but desire to have you circumcised, that they may glory in your flesh.

14 But God forbid that I should glory save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world. *a crucified Saviour*; by whose religion alone justification and happiness is to be attained. In conformity to whose death all worldly and selfish designs are dead to me, and I to them.

15 For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature.

16 And as many as walk according to this

12. Those zealots that stand up A. D. 58.  
thus for the mere *external* and *car-*  
*nal* ordinances of the *Jewish* law,  
would persuade you *Gentile* con-  
verts into the necessity of observ-  
ing them, purely for fear of the  
*Jews*, and to avoid the persecu-  
tions they would otherwise bring

13. It is not out of any real and religious zeal for the *law* (for they regard *that* as little as other people), but from an itch of vain-glory, to make you *their* proselytes, and save themselves harmless.

14. I on the contrary (notwithstanding their false suggestions) make a perfect conscience of aiming at any credit or favour with any sort of people, but what comes from the sincere discharge of my office, in preaching Jesus Christ as

15. For, as I have abundantly proved to you, it is of no consequence under the *gospel* covenant, whether a man be *circumcised* or not. All that *Christianity* requires is, the reformation of his principles and practices.

16. And therefore all Christians, *Gentile* or *Jewish*, that stick to *this* principle,

A. D. 58. this rule, \* peace be on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God.

principle, may be fully assured of their pardon and salvation at God's hand, as his true *church* \* and people.

17 From henceforth let no man trouble me, for I bear in my body the marks of the Lord Jesus †.

17. Wherefore, for the future, let no more calumnies be raised on me upon this point, nor let me have any further disturbance about it. *Circumcision* is the badge of a *Jew*. But though I be circumcised, I do not look on that as my *Christian* badge. No, my *marks* are the *stripes* and *chains* I have borne for Christ and his religion; the prints whereof remain still upon my body, and are sufficient tokens to whom I belong.

18 Brethren, the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

18. Brethren, the love and favour of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you, and direct your minds, *Amen*.

¶ Unto the Galatians, written from Rome.

\* *And upon the Israel of God.* Καὶ ἐπὶ τὸν Ἰσραὴλ τοῦ Θεοῦ. Peace and mercy be unto them *as the Israel of God*.

† Ver. 17. *The marks of the Lord Jesus.* Note, The general sense of this phrase is very clear: And, I think, the five foregoing verses plainly show the *Jewish circumcision* to be the thing here alluded to. They that would see another conjecture, may consult the author of *The Sac. Classics defended*, Vol. II. pag. 67, 68. Edit. Octav.

---

---

A

P A R A P H R A S E

ON

THE EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL

TO THE

E P H E S I A N S.

---

---

THE PREFACE.

§ 1. THIS and the two following epistles to the Philippians and Colossians, were written from the same *place*, in the same *year*, during St. Paul's imprisonment at Rome, and upon the same *occasion*. From whence the reader sees how the strain of their expressions come to be so much alike, and in a great measure the same. A. D. 62.

§ 2. One cannot attend to the main drift of these three writings, without observing what it was that lay nearest the apostle's heart while he indited them; viz. The confirmation of these *Christians* against that doctrine of the absolute necessity of the *ceremonial* law in order to the salvation of a *Christian* convert; the effect of that proud conceit the *Jewish* zealots had

A. D 62 of themselves, as the ancient people of God, in derogation to all the rest of mankind, whom they would hardly at all grant to have been designed any share in the blessings of Christ the Messiah; but especially not without their first embracing the *Jewish* religion. A principle that, more or less, runs through, and is attacked in all the apostolical *epistles*.

§ 3. But there is this difference between the manner of St. Paul's management of this point in *these*, and that in his *foregoing* epistles to the Romans, Corinthians, and Galatians. In those letters (especially the two *latter*) he had to do with a people *actually* perverted by those *Jewish* principles; and by the cunning and bigotry of their leaders, wrought up into a contempt of his *person*, and apostolical *authority*. Whereas, in *these* he had nothing to do but to back and encourage a steady and orthodox set of Christians to final constancy and perseverance, against those prejudiced teachers who had spread themselves into almost every church. In the *one*, therefore, his method is all *reasoning* and *argumentative*, while in the *other* he runs in cheerful *encouragements* and loving *congratulations*; and as you see *those* to be full of *expostulations* and *complaint*, so *these* abound and even overflow in expressions of endearment and love. of which expressions, though some may, to a modern reader, seem to be but tautology, they are indeed the effect of an inspired mind, transported with joy, striving to vent its unutterable satisfaction at the happy fruits of its endeavours for the good of mankind and the glory of God.

§ 4. The *Jewish* zealots had so contemptuous a notion of an *uncircumcised* person, especially one not at all *profelyted* to their *Jewish* religion, that they thought the duties flowing from the nearest even of civil and natural relations, too much to be observed toward them. This I take to be the proper key to those lessons of St. Paul concerning the *relative* duties in *these* and his other epistles. By comparing them with 1 Cor. vii. or with his exhortations to *love*, *unity*, &c. which have a plain relation to the furious disputes between the *Jewish* and *Gentile* converts; these very admonitions to husbands, masters, wives, &c. appear to me to have

have been perfectly *occasional*, and levelled at the fore-<sup>A. D. 62.</sup>going principle. Thus the admonitions to *husbands* and *wives*, Ephes. v. and Col. iii. may, by several passages of 1 Cor. vii. be understood with reference to such *pairs*, whereof one was a *Heathen*, the other a *Christian*; or perhaps the one a *Gentile* and *uncircumcised* convert, the other a *Jewish* convert; the latter of which, by a *Jewish* prejudice, might think themselves excusable from any further obedience or duty to the former. In like manner, the earnest caution to *children* and *parents* to observe a duty in itself so natural, and which indeed wanted no *gospel revelation* to show it to be a moral duty of the first rank, seems clearly to be understood of *such cases* where one of the *parents* might be of the *former*, and the other of the *latter* of those denominations: and that children should pay an equal reverence to *both*, was the scope of the apostle's exhortation. Then as to *masters* and *servants*, St. Paul is so perfect an interpreter of himself in other places, particularly in 1 Cor. vii. 20. 21. 22. that one cannot but conclude, his eye here to have been upon *Christian* masters to *Heathen* slaves, and *Christian* slaves under *Heathen* masters. And thus the obligation to these *relative* duties, so incumbent on a *Christian* toward even *infidel* relations, shows itself much stronger and more engaging upon *Christians* toward one another, by the plain *consequence*, though not the *express design* of the apostle's admonitions. And this observation, which I have not found duly cultivated by any interpreters, I leave to the judicious and careful reader of these epistolary writings.

§ 5. The rest of these epistles is spent in exhortations to such *Christian* virtues as are the reverse of those unclean and vicious practices, these *Gentile Christians* had been formerly most subject to, in their idolatrous and Heathenish condition; as also to prudence, constancy and patience under the dangers and oppositions they meet with from either *Jewish* or *Gentile* infidels: all which shall be methodically noted in the contents of each chapter. Concerning this particular *epistle*, see the learned Dr. Mell in his *Prolegom.* § 72, 73, 74, &c.

## C H A P. I.

*Written A. D. 62.* He salutes the Ephesians with the Title of Faithful Christians, for their steady adherence to the Christian Faith without any regard to the necessity of the Ceremonial law. Blesseth God for calling the Gentile World into the Christian Covenant, and bringing them and the Jews together into one Church under Christ the Messiah. Declares this to have been the original and gracious Design of God in the Gospel Dispensation: and the Gifts and Endowments of the Holy Spirit conferred on the Ephesian Church, are to them a Pledge and Confirmation of this Truth. His Satisfaction in their adherence to it, and his Prayers for their Constancy and Improvement in the Knowledge of this most wise and comprehensive Religion of the Gospel.

*\* Acts ix. Gal. i. 1.* 1. PAUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Jesus: upon the *Christian* religion for salvation, without the observation of the *Mosaical ceremonies*.

2 Grace be to you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ:

4. Accord-

1. PAUL, called to be a Christian apostle, by the express will and revelation of God, sendeth this epistle to the Church of Ephesus, and to all the *Christians* of the Lesser Asia, those *faithful* Christians that firmly rely upon the *Christian* religion for salvation, without the observation of the *Mosaical ceremonies*.

2. Wishing you all divine favours and blessings from God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ.

3. Expressing my hearty praises to God the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, for bestowing \* on you Gentiles as well as the Jews, all the privileges of the spiritual religion of the *gospel*, a religion so full of eternal and heavenly blessings.

4. A Mercy

4 According as he hath chosen us \* in him, before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy, and without blame before him in love :

5 Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children, by Jesus Christ, to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will :

to this gracious privilege under Christ Jesus, without any farther obligation to the *Jewish* law.

6. To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved.

7 In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins; according to the riches of his grace,

8. Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wisdom † and prudence :

9 Having made known unto us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure, which he hath purposed in himself.

4. A mercy designed of God toward the *Gentile* world \*, even before the world was created, to make *them* also his true church and people, by giving them the means of a pure, peaceable, and holy life, by Jesus Christ the Messiah. A. D. 62.

5. For as it was by the free bounty and favour of God that the *Jewish* nation should be, for a long time, his peculiar church and people, so is it the same Divine will now to bring all the *Gentile* world along with them in-

6. Which merciful acceptance of us *all*, through his beloved Son, is that which magnifies and exalts the goodness and bounty of this *gospel* covenant.

7. By the exceeding great blessing of whose death and sufferings for us, both *Gentile* and *Jewish* believers are put into a state of pardon, and capacity of eternal happiness.

8. & 9. A dispensation full of Divine wisdom, and that lets us all † into the discovery of the great and wise purpose of God toward mankind ;

---

\* Ver. 3. & 4. *ἡμᾶς*, Blessed *us*, chosen *us*. He in his usual way makes *himself* as one of the *Gentile* converts, the more to confirm and encourage them to rely upon the *gospel* without the *ceremonial* law.

† *In all Wisdom and Prudence* : These words may either be referred to *God* or to *Christians* as endowed with them under the *gospel*. I have expressed both senses.

A. D. 62. 10 That in the dispensation of the fullness of times, he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which \* are in heaven, and which are on earth, even in him :

11 In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him, who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will :

12 That we should be to the praise of his glory who first trusted in Christ.

13 In whom ye also *trusted* after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation : In whom also, after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise.

gifts and graces of the *Holy Spirit*, that were promised to the church of the Messiah.

10. Viz. This special and particular purpose of his gathering people out of all nations, without distinction, into one church under Christ, in this last and great dispensation of the *gospel*, and so committing the whole church of heaven \* and earth to his conduct and government.

11. & 12. To whose religion it was indeed the privilege granted to us of the *Jewish* nation, to have the first call : that as we had been his *ancient* church, we should be the *first* converts that should praise and magnify God under the religion of his Son Jesus Christ, the Messiah promised to us. It being the good pleasure of the Almighty thus to have it.

13. But the blessing of being made the church of *Christ* being not intended to be *confined* to our *nation*, is now come to you *Gentiles* also ; who, by your embracing the *gospel* religion, are put into the same capacity of salvation with *us*, and have it confirmed to you by your endowment with those very

14. For

---

\* *Both which are in heaven, and which are on earth.* *Heaven and earth* are sometimes a *Jewish* phrase to express the *whole world*. But they seem in these epistles to the *Ephesians* and *Colossians*, with relation to Christ's government, to include the *angels* and *heavenly spirits* along with *mankind*. The phrases of *visible* and *invisible*, in Colos. i. 16. being hardly capable of any other sense ; as likewise that of *thrones, principalities and powers*. See also and compare chap. iii. 15. Col. i. 20. Phil. ii. 9.



14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance, until the redemption\* of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.

15 Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the saints,

16 Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers,

any partial regard to their being *circumcised* or not; but I blessed God for it, and am ever remembering you in all the prayers I offer up to him.

17 That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the Spirit of wisdom and revelation, in the knowledge of him:

18 The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints.

14. For those endowments conferred on your church, are a perfect earnest and *pledge*, that God has now redeemed and purchased you *Gentiles* for his † peculiar people; and do assure you of the present and *future*\* blessings of so noble a privilege; to the honour and praise of this his glorious dispensation.

15. & 16. Wherefore, being thus assured of the gracious intent of God toward *you* as well as the *Jewish* nation, I no sooner heard of your steadiness to this *Christian* principle, ever since my first preaching to you, and that universal charity you bear towards all *Christian* brethren, without

17. Beseeching him, the glorious God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, to continue and encrease upon you the gifts of his spirit, for your still more complete knowledge of Christ's religion, and your final adherence to the true doctrines of it.

18. To enlarge your understandings, and give you a just and profound sense of the certainty and glorious advantages of your *Christian* profession.

19. And

---

\* Ver. 14. Until the redemption of the purchased possession, *ἕως ἀπολύτρωσιν τῆς περιποιήσεως*. So as to make us [Gentiles] a redeemed possession.

A. D. 62. 19 And what is  
 { the exceeding great-  
 ness of his power to  
 us-ward, who believe  
 according to the  
 working of his migh-  
 ty power.

20 Which he  
 wrought in Christ  
 when he raised him  
 from the dead, and  
 set him at his own  
 right hand in the hea-  
 venly places.

21 Far above all  
 principality, and pow-  
 er, and might, and do-  
 minion, and every  
 name that is named,  
 not only in this world,  
 but also in that which  
 is to come :

22 And hath put  
 all things under his  
 feet, and gave him to  
 be head over all  
 things to the church.

23 Which is his  
 body, the fulness of  
 him that filleth all in  
 all.

19. And of that great and Al-  
 mighty power, by the demonstra-  
 tions whereof he at first converted  
 you to, and by which he will con-  
 stantly support you in your *Chris-  
 tian* faith ; and will at last raise  
 you up to the final and eternal  
 rewards of it.

20. That Divine Power, I say,  
 whereof he gave so wonderful and  
 most evident an instance, in raising  
 up Christ the head of his church,  
 from the dead, and exalting him  
 to the highest degree of majesty  
 and glory with him in heaven.

21. Investing him there with a  
 dominion over all creatures, even  
 over all dignities, offices, and  
 powers, both of this and of the  
 future world.

22. & 23. Making him the  
 glorious head over the whole  
 church as his body, which is now  
 to be fully perfected and com-  
 pleted by the clearest discoveries  
 and most excellent privileges from  
 him in whom dwelleth all fulness  
 \* and perfection.

---

\* *The fulness of him that filleth all in all.* Much the same  
 expression with that of John i. 16. *Of his fullness have we  
 all received* (fulness) and *grace for* (ἀντι, in proportion to  
 his) *grace*. This is the sense, if πλεγμα refers to Christ,  
 but if it refers to the church (the substantive last mention-  
 ed) I have expressed that sense also.

## CHAP. II.

*Having shown it to have been the original Purpose of God to A. D. 62, unite the Gentiles to the Church of Christ; he declares the Ephesians to be actually Members of it. Gives them such an Account of the Gospel Privileges and Blessings, as exalts it far above, and makes it Independant of the Rites of the Mosaical law. He shows that Law to be abolished by the death and Religion of Christ, and thereby both Jew and Gentile united into one Church and Society. And all this for their Encouragement to adhere to the Christian Faith, without listening to the Necessity of the Mosaical Ceremonies.*

AND you hath he quickened\* who were dead in trespasses and sins,

conversion to Christianity, raised\* up you *Ephesians* to the hopes of pardon and salvation, who were formerly in a state of sin and death, under your vicious and heathenish life.

2 Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience.

3 Among

1. BE assured therefore, that God who raised up\* Jesus Christ from the dead, and made him the head of his church, has, by your

2. While you lived in the habitual practice of enormities that were common and fashionable in the *heathen* world; influenced by the temptations of the devil, that powerful and malicious spirit, that has his residence in the air about us, and still reigns by his influences on the wicked and unconverted *heathens*.

3. Of

\* I take the construction of this verse from the 20, 21, &c. verses of the foregoing chapter, and not from the 19th, as some, nor the 5th verse of this chapter, as other interpreters do. This makes the connection much clearer and less interrupted, and is confirmed by the *ἐν χρόνῳ*, in the 5th verse.

A. D. 62. 13 Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past, in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh, and of the mind, and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others\*.

4 But God who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us,

5 Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ (by grace ye are saved).

6 And hath raised us up together, and hath made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus.

7 That in the ages to come he might show the exceeding riches of his grace, in his kindness towards us, through Christ Jesus:

3. Of which number *you* all were before your conversion; indulging your carnal and depraved appetites, and actuated by the dictates and passions of a sensual mind; being, like all other *heathen* people, brought up from your birth to the habits of such vile courses as could not but subject you to the wrath and displeasure of God.

4. & 5. But God in abundant mercy and compassion to his sinful creatures, has now, by the death and resurrection of Christ, and by your embracing his religion, recovered you † from this dark and sad estate, and raised you to the hope of pardon and salvation. It is *this religion* that justifies and saves you; the *ceremonial* law has no hand at all in it.

6. For by raising *him* from the dead, God has given you, and all true *Gentile* believers, an assurance of all the noble privileges of his heavenly religion, and of all the blessings of his kingdom.

7. It being the purpose of God thus to display the wonderful extent of divine love and mercy to all mankind, under the dispensation of Christ the *Messiah*.

8. 9. And

\* Ver. 3. *By nature*: Φύσει. either by *customs* and *habits* (of *Kice*); or else *really* and *indeed* children of wrath; as this word is plainly used, Gal. iv 8. *By nature no gods*, i. e. not gods *at all*.

† Wherewith he loved *us*, hath quickened *us*. See note on chap. i. 3, 4.

8 For by grace are ye saved, through faith, and that not of yourselves: *it is* the gift of God:

9 Not of works, lest any man should boast.

servation of the *ceremonial* law, and so \* the *Jew* could no more pretend to claim it than the vilest *Gentile*.

10. For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.

11 Wherefore remember that ye *being* in times past Gentiles in the flesh, who are called uncircumcision by that which is called the circumcision in the flesh, made by hands.

12 That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world.

13 But now in Christ Jesus. ye who sometimes were afar off, are made nigh by the blood of Christ.

VOL. II.

E

14. While

8. & 9. And certainly this *gospel* A. D. 62. } salvation is the fruit of nothing but the pure grace and bounty of God, making our faith in Christ's religion the merciful condition of this happiness. No man has done any thing to deserve it; it could not be merited by the utmost ob-

10. Our regenerate state is wholly owing to what God has done for us in Christ, and by his *religion*. By *this* it was his design to prepare and enable us to live that life of purity and virtue that will qualify us for life eternal.

11, 12, 13. Remember then, and stand to it; that though you *Gentiles* were formerly quite out of the pale of God's church, without any knowledge of the Messiah promised to Abraham as the Saviour of all mankind, having little or no prospect of spiritual and future happiness, estranged from the knowledge and worship of the true God; in fine, *you* whom the *Jewish* people, that boasted themselves in their divine laws and privileges, were wont in derision, to call *uncircumcised*, *unclean* and *sinful*, are now, by Christ's religion, taken into covenant with him, and are his peculiar people as much as *they*.

---

\* Lest any man should boast, *ἵνα μὴ τις καυχῆσεται*. So that none can boast.

A. D. 62.

14 For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us.

ed us *all* to God, the difference is at an end, and we are *all* united into one church and society.

15 Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, *even* the law of commandments, contained in ordinances, for to make in himself, of twain, one new man, so making peace.

16 And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby :

17 And came, and preached peace to you *which were* afar off, and to them that were nigh.

18 For through him we both have an access by one Spirit unto the Father.

19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow-citizens with the saints, and of the household of God:

14. While *they* were his enclosed church, you *Gentiles* were kept at a distance ; and indeed were no way reconcilable to their ceremonies and worship. But now that

Christ by his death hath reconcil-

15. & 16. For that part of the *Jewish* law that consisted of such ceremonies as were designed to keep up the distinction between them and all other nations, is now, by the death of Christ upon the cross, abolished and become of no further obligation ; whereby he has made the way open for believers of *all* nations to join with them, and make up *one Christian* church under him, the common head and Saviour of us all.

17. And accordingly Christ has appointed his gospel to be preached, as the condition of peace and pardon, as well to the *Gentiles* that were hitherto strangers to his church, as to the *Jews* that had been his ancient people.

18. For by the sacrifice of his death, all true believers of every nation are admitted into favour with God the Father, and become his true people, all conducted by the same holy Spirit, without any further regard to the *Jewish* law.

19. Wherefore look upon yourselves as no longer excluded from the divine covenant, nor as only in part profelytes to it, because of your not being *circumcised* ; but esteem yourselves as *fully* privileged, and as *much* of God's family as *they* can be.

20. Be-

20 And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner-stone.

21 In whom all the building fitly framed together, groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord.

22 In whom you also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

20. Believe, for certain, you are members of that church of the *Messiah* which is built upon the truth of all the prophecies of the *Old*, and the apostolical doctrines of the *New Testament*; Jesus Christ himself being the head of this body, and as it were the chief corner-stone of this fabric, holding and cementing the two sides of *Jewish* and *Gentile* believers together. A. D. 62.

21. Under whose divine conduct and influence, all the members of this *Christian* society, like the stones of a material building, are so to unite and increase, as to become the temple and habitation of God.

22. You *Gentile* Christians of *Ephesus* being now a part of this glorious fabric as well as the *Jews*: And as God was formerly said to dwell in the *Jewish* tabernacle and temple, by the manifestations of himself there to that people; so may he now, in a much higher and happier sense, be said to *dwell in you*, by the gifts and graces of his holy *Spirit* conferred on you.

## C H A P. III.

*The same Assurances, viz. That the Gentiles are received into the Church of Christ, continued. He owns and professeth himself the Gentile Apostle, commissioned on purpose to preach the Gospel to them. The calling of the Gentile World, a Doctrine not allowed of by the Jews, nor discovered to the Gentiles themselves in former Ages, but now clearly revealed to have been always the Purpose of God; and in this respect is styled a Mystery. He exhorts them to rejoice in, rather than be discouraged at, his imprisonment and sufferings for this Doctrine. Prays for their confirmation and Progress in the Christian Faith, and blesteth God for his extended Mercies to Mankind.*

A. D. 62. 1. **FOR** this cause,  
\* I Paul, the  
prisoner of Jesus Christ  
for you Gentiles.

Gentiles are now received into all  
the privileges of the Christian  
church, as well as the Jews, am \* I Paul, now a prisoner at Rome, prosecuted by the malice of that † people, and to be tried for my life.

2 If ye have heard  
of the dispensation of  
the grace of God,  
which is given me to  
you ward:

1. **FOR** preaching this very  
doctrine, viz. That you  
Gentiles are now received into all  
the privileges of the Christian  
church, as well as the Jews, am \* I Paul, now a prisoner at Rome, prosecuted by the malice of that † people, and to be tried for my life.  
2. & 3. Nor can you doubt but  
I am a prisoner for *your* sakes,  
since ‡ you know my divine com-  
mission by an express revelation  
from

3 How

\* [I Paul, a Prisoner;] i. e. either [am now a prisoner], (as I have ventured to connect it with the 2d and 3d verses); or else [the prisoner], and then most probably all the following verses of this chapter are one continued parenthesis, to the first verse of the 4th chapter, where the apostle resumes his exhortation again in the very same words.

† See Acts xxii. 21. 22. xxvi. 19, 20, 21. xxviii. 17. 20.

‡ If ye have heard; *εἴπε ἡκούσατε*, Since ye have heard. See Dr. Mill, Prolegom. § 72, 73, &c.



3 How that by revelation he made known unto me the mystery (as I wrote afore in few words,

4 Whereby when ye read ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ),

5 Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto his holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit ;

6 That the Gentiles should be fellow heirs, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ, by the gospel :

7 Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me, by the effectual working of his power.

8. Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ.

9 And

from God, runs chiefly upon this <sup>A. D. 62.</sup> very thing, to authorise me to declare this unthought of mercy to you ; as I briefly explained it to you before, (Chap. i. 9, 10).

4. By reading and considering whereof, as I there did, and shall now give a further account of it ; you may clearly understand that gracious and surprising purpose of God so little expected by the world.

5. & 6. Viz. That though the *beathen* nations had it not expressly declared to *them* in former ages, nor could the *Jews* be brought to apprehend it from the predictions of their prophets ; yet it was now clearly revealed and *absolutely* declared to the inspired apostles of Jesus Christ, that the *Gentiles* should be taken into all the blessings of the Christian covenant, and be united to the *Jews* to make up *one church* under the Messiah.

7. Of which great and merciful dispensation God has made *me* a minister, and qualified me for preaching and demonstrating the truth of it, by the powers of his holy Spirit conferred on me.

8. I, who for my former immoderate and furious zeal against this very religion, can never sufficiently humble myself, have now the favour to be made an *apstle*, to declare this amazing and extensive love of God by Jesus Christ toward the *Gentile* world.

A. D. 62.

9 And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ.

10 To the intent that now unto the \* principalities and powers in heavenly places, might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God,

11 According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord: always directed and disposed, but now fully completed by Jesus Christ.

12 In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him.

people; and may address to him with full assurance of being rewarded as his true worshippers.

13 Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory.

14 For

9. To show both *Jew* and *Gentile* the exceeding great blessings they are now to enjoy, by being united into one church under Christ: a thing that God, who created and governs the world, and all the dispensations of it by *him*, thought not fit so manifestly to reveal to former ages, as he has now done.

10. & 11. Now that he intends not only to convince the governors and magistrates of this world, who have opposed and persecuted this religion, but to display to all ranks and degrees of creatures, both in heaven \* and earth, this manifold wisdom in the wondrous management of his church; so agreeably to the former † dispensations of it; all which were always directed and disposed, but now fully completed

12. Through whose mediation for us, but *Jew* and *Gentile*, that embrace his religion, are accepted of God as his true church and

people; and may address to him with full assurance of being rewarded as his true worshippers.  
13. Wherefore since I am now under persecution for delivering a doctrine so much to the benefit of you *Gentile* Christians: Be not disheartened or affrighted at my sufferings;

---

\* To the principalities and powers in heavenly places. See the note on Chap i. 10.

† [According to the eternal purpose]. *κατὰ πρόθεσιν τῶν αἰώνων*; [agreeably to the predisposition of former ages, or dispensations of religion]. Thus the Saviour was promised to Adam, then to Abraham, afterwards typified and represented to the *Jews*, and at last, *fully* and openly *preached* to all the *world*.

ings ; but rather rejoice at them, as an argument of the sincerity and truth of this doctrine ; and let it raise your hearts and strengthen your resolutions. A. D. 62.

14 For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.

15 Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named ;

16. That he would grant you according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might, by his Spirit in the inner man :

17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith ; that ye be ingrooted and grounded in love,

18 May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth and length, and depth and height :

19 And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled † with all the fullness of God.

20 Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us,

21 Unto him be glory in the church by Christ Jesus, throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

14. & 15. To which end I humbly and earnestly beg of God the Father, the Supreme Lord and Governor of the whole church in heaven \* and earth, uniting both angels and men under his government ;

16. That out of the infinite fullness of divine goodness and mercy, he would confirm your minds by the influence of his Holy Spirit.

17, 18, & 19. That so, by a due and profound sense of the inexpressible bounty of this dispensation of Christ toward you Gentiles, you and all Christian people may render him all unfeigned returns of love, gratitude and obedience, by an unshaken and firm adherence to his religion ; abounding in all the divine † gifts and spiritual graces belonging to it.

20. & 21. To him therefore who has already conferred such spiritual endowments on you, and is both able and willing to encourage your improvement of them, by giving you still more than you can wish or imagine for yourselves, be ascribed, by all succeeding ages of the church, all honour and glory, through Jesus Christ, for evermore. Amen.

E 4

C H A P.

\* [Family of heaven and earth.] See the Note on Chap. I. 10.

† [With all the fullness of God.] See the Note on 2 Cor. viii. 1.

## CHAP. IV.

*The Apostle having thus given the Gentile Christians of Ephesus all suitable encouragement to continue in, and firmly to rely upon, the Christian Faith, without the Observation of the Jewish Law; comes now to exhort their whole Church in general to the Practice of such Duties as became their holy Profession, especially that of Unity, Mutual Charity, and Forbearance; adviseth both the Jewish and Gentile converts to consider themselves as all united into the same Church and Privileges in Christ, without distinction; warning the gifted Teachers of both Parties to a sober and uniform Improvement of their gifts and offices; by showing them to be all derived from the same Spirit, and intended for the same religious Purposes. Then turns his Exhortation to the Gentile Part, showing them their Obligation to renounce all their former Heathenish Practices, and live up to the Purity of the Gospel Religion. Pointing out to them several of the most notorious Vices to which they had formerly been subject.*

A. D. 62. I. **I** Therefore the prisoner \* of the Lord, beseech you, that ye walk worthy of the vocation where-with ye are called,

given you full encouragement to maintain that privilege. And let me now by these chains I wear, beseech all parties among you to live worthy the excellency of their holy profession.

I. **T**HUS have I that am now a \* prisoner for Christ's sake, and particularly for upholding you Gentile Christians to be his true church, without your observance of the *Mosaical ceremonies*,

2. & 3. Taking

---

\* [I therefore, the prisoner of the Lord :] See Note on Chap. iii. Ver. 1.

2 With all lowliness and meekness, with long-suffering, forbearing one another in love :

3 Endeavouring to keep the unity of the spirit in the bond of peace.

4 *There is one body and one spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling.*

5 One Lord, one faith, one baptism.

6 One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all.

come the church and servants of the same God the *Father*, who is equally over you all by his *power*, conducts you all by the same good *Providence*, and dwells in you all by the same *Holy Spirit*.

7 But unto every one of us is given † grace, according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

ed to every member or *minister* alike ; but to each of them in such measures as Christ knows them best able to improve for the church's benefit. So that none ought to be dissatisfied with his *own*, or to undervalue those of *another*.

8 Wherefore he faith, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.

9 (Now

2. & 3. Taking special care to A. D. 62. preserve the peace and unity of the church by a gentle, meek, and forbearing behaviour to each other, agreeably to the spirit of the gospel.

4. 5. & 6. Duly considering, that both *Jewish* and *Gentile* believers are now joined together in one *Christian society*, enlightened and endowed with the same *spirit*, and brought into the same common hope of *salvation* ; having the same Christ for your Saviour and *Head*, into whose faith you are *all* alike *baptized* ; and are be-

7. But you ought to remember, That though you all belong to the same *Christian church*, the *body* of Christ ; yet the *gifts* and graces of the *Spirit* may not be distributed

8. These spiritual *gifts* to the *Christian church*, and the *variety* of them too, are represented in those prophetic words of the Psalmist, (Psal. lxxviii. 18.) *Resembling Christ the Messiah in his ascension*

---

† Grace χάρις, either *gifts* and *endowments* for an *office* in the ministry, or the *office* itself.

A. D. 62. *ascension into heaven, after the conquest of sin, Satan, and death, to an earthly monarch in triumph after victory, scattering gifts and largesses to his people.*

9 (Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth ?

10 He that descended, is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things.)

such measures as he in wisdom should think fit \*.)

11 And he gave some apostles ; and some, prophets ; and some, evangelists ; and some pastors and teachers ; *to declare the doctrines of it first to the world ; others to be prophets, to explain the passages of the Old Testament, relating to, and confirming, that doctrine ; others to be evangelists, to spread it to farther distant nations, and to record it in writing ; and some to be pastors and teachers, to build men up in the knowledge of it after they have embraced it †.*

12 For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ :

into a more firm and perfect society ; to render the discharge of the Christian ministry more orderly and effectual ;

9. & 10. (But whatever degrees they are given in to any of you, they all come from this triumphant Saviour, the very same Jesus who came down upon earth, died and was buried, to obtain this conquest, and then rose again, and was exalted to the highest degree of heavenly glory and majesty, to become the Lord of the whole church of God, to perfect and complete it, and to guide and model it by

11. And accordingly he fulfilled that prediction by this *variety* \* of endowments on the ministers of the Christian church ; qualifying some to be apostles, *to declare the doctrines of it first to the world ;* others to be prophets, *to explain the passages of the Old Testament, relating to, and confirming, that doctrine ;* others to be evangelists, *to spread it to farther distant nations, and to record it in writing ;* and some to be pastors and teachers, *to build men up in the knowledge of it after they have embraced it †.*

12. Which *variety* of gifts and offices, is so far from being a disadvantage from the excellency of one above another, that it is the very thing intended to knit and compact the Christian members

---

\* I see no connection in these two verses with the foregoing and following clauses, but by making them refer to the *variety* of gifts, and their being derived all from Christ. And the connection is best preserved by including them in a parenthesis.

† See 1 Cor. xii. for the same expressions and argument more at large.

effectual ; contributing, in their places and stations, to the better edification of the whole church. A. D. 62.

13 Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ :

14 That we henceforth be no more children tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine by the slight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive :

15 But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, *even* Christ :

16 From whom the whole body fitly joined together, and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body, unto the edifying of itself in love.

17 This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk in the vanity of their mind,

18 Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the

13. God so wisely providing, that each member should by this means be trained up to perfect Christianity ; and the whole become a complete body under him the common *head* of all :

14. That, by arriving at this perfection of Christian faith and knowledge, they may be above the influences and stratagems of cunning and deceitful teachers ; and not, like children, give ear to every plausible doctrine that is proposed to them.

15. & 16. But that, as the human body is composed of different joints and members, all in their several functions tending to nourish and keep up the whole frame ; so by this variety of spiritual gifts and offices in the church, Christians may grow up into one complete society under Christ their head, unanimously agreeing in the same rule of faith towards God, and conspiring in the same mutual affections to each other.

17. I must again particularly warn you *Gentile* Christians, how much it concerns, and is expected from you, entirely to renounce all the vile practices and idolatrous worship of the *Heathen* world,

18. Who still remain in that perfect state of ignorance and irreligion which *you* have solemnly forsaken,

A. D. 62. the life of God, through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart :

19 Who being past feeling, have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness.

20 But ye have not so learned Christ :

21 \* If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus :

22 That ye put off concerning the former conversation, the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts :

23 And be renewed in the spirit of your mind :

24 And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

25 Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour : for we are members one of another.

neighbours ; remembering, you are all now members of the same Christian body ; so that to deceive another is to injure and abuse *yourselves*.

forsoke, utterly estranged from that virtuous course of life that alone can render men like to God, and happy in his service.

19. And, by impure and unreformed habits, are become so insensible of all goodness, as to commit the worst degrees of uncleanness, not only without all regret and reluctance, but with the utmost eagerness and delight.

20. & 21. Remember, that by your \* conversion to the Christian religion, you are in quite another state ; and obliged by the highest engagements to a direct contrary course of life.

22, 23, 24. Namely, to forsake all your old heathenish lusts, and ignorant practices ; and to become new, and reformed men, by obedience to those holy and righteous laws prescribed in the *gospel*, that will raise you to the imitation of God, and render you his true and happy children.

25. Beware then of those vices you have been formerly most subject to, and are most opposite to the *Christian* spirit : for instance, detest that dangerous sin of *lying*, deceiving and over-reaching your

26. & 27. Sup-

---

\* If so be ye have heard him—*εἴ γε αὐτὸν ἤκούσατε*. Since you have heard him.



26 Be ye angry and sin not : let not the sun go down upon your wrath.

27 Neither give place to the \* devil. *name signifies a railer*

28. Let him that stole, steal no more § : but rather let him labour, working with *his* hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth.

29. Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying ; that it may minister grace unto the hearers.

those virtues that will procure favour and acceptance from God.

30 And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby you are sealed

26. & 27. Suppress all immoderate anger and resentment : suffer it not to ripen into revenge, reproach, and slander ; for then you are overcome by that wicked adversary the *devil*, whose very and a *blasphemer*\*.

28. Whoever has been accustomed to *steal*, before his conversion, and to esteem it but a small, or scarce any sin § ; must now abhor that practice, and by a laborious life in some honest calling, must endeavour not only to supply his own wants, but if he can, to have some-

29. Avoid all manner of scurrilous and filthy conversation ; and let your words and discourses in company be always such, as may not only be heard by any body with innocence and decency, but, as far as you can, with profit and advantage too ; by promoting

those virtues that will procure favour and acceptance from God.

30. In fine, do and say nothing that may be inconsistent with those blessed endowments of the Holy Spirit

\* Διάβολος, [Devil.] Ver. 27. [Neither give place to the devil, *or to the railer and slanderer* :] And the sense may be, [Give no occasion to slanderers to reproach your holy religion] ; as Erasmus and the French Protestant translation render it. See 1 Tim. iii. 6, 7. [give place, *τοπον*, opportunity, *or* advantage.]

§ As in several nations it was accounted ; and rather countenanced than discouraged, by some *Grecian* commonwealths ; particularly in that of the Lacedemonians, where Plutarch says, it was enacted or agreed, [*νενόμιστο*] κλέπτειν τὰς ἐλευθέρους παῖδας ὅ, τι τις δύναίτο. [That the free-born youths might steal whatever they could.] But of this let the reader see Dr. Clark's Evidences of Natural and Revealed Religion, p. 58, 59.

A. D. 62. **ed** unto the day of Spirit that are conferred on you, redemption. or may deprive you of his sacred influences ; which are the pledges of your present pardon, and the earnest of your eternal happiness.

31 Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil-speaking, be put away from you, with all malice.

31. And as he is the Spirit of peace and love, so let no differences in your religious sentiments and opinions, suffer you to launch out into any expressions of bitterness, rage, and clamorous reproaches, nor to harbour any purposes of malice and revenge.

32 And be ye kind one to another, tender hearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.

32. But treat one another, even those that injure you, with tenderness, pity and forgiveness ; remembering how much a greater debt of guilt and sin God has forgiven us all for the sake of Christ Jesus.

## CHAP. V.

*The first and second Verses conclude the Exhortation to Love and Unanimity in the End of the foregoing Chapter. Then he repeats his caution against their former Heathenish Vices, particularly such as accompanied their Idolatrous Worship. Descends to the Relative Duties, wherein the Jewish Christians, by former Prejudices, were too apt to be deficient.*  
\* See the Preface to this Epistle, § 4.

1 **B**E ye therefore followers of God as dear children. church of God, imitate him as your true Father and most perfect example.

1. **S**INCE therefore you are all, both Jewish and Gentile converts, become the children and

2. And

2 And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us, an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet smelling savour.

pattern of love, by charity and unity with each other.

3 But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named amongst you, as becometh saints.

still the attendants of idolatrous rites and worship. Let none of them be so much as named or heard of among *Christian* professors.

4 Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, \* which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks.

expressions of praise and thanksgiving to God.

5 For this you know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man †, who is an idolator, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ, and of God.

6 Let

2. And as the death and sacrifice of Christ for our sins was the highest instance of Divine love and mercy to us *all*, and an act most pleasing and acceptable to God; let it be the chief care of all parties among you to resemble this great

3. I must again especially warn you *Gentile* Christians from all those extravagant and lustful passions, and unclean practices, that were so common and fashionable in your heathen state; and are

4. And be as careful to avoid all that scurrilous, lewd and light way of talking, that is the usual \* incentive to such unclean actions. Break it entirely off by accustoming your mouths to continual ex-

5. For you cannot but know, by the natural design of the *Christian* religion, that no person addicted to such impure affections and practices as † are indulged in *idolatrous* and superstitious worship, can ever be a true member of the church of Christ here, or inherit his kingdom hereafter.

6. & 7. Let

\* [Which are not convenient—] τὰ μὴ ἀνήκοντα, [That are most disagreeable.] See Rom. i. 28. where τὰ μὴ κα-  
θήκοντα, ought so to be translated.

† [Or covetous man who is an idolator,] ἢ πλεονέκτης ὅς ἐστιν εἰδωλολάτρης, i. e. [One that may be called an idolater for making his lusts and pleasures his god; or else a man of such inordinate desires, as an idolater is and must be.] The former is indeed *good sense*; but the *latter* is plainly most agreeable to the apostle's design.

A. D. 62. 6 Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience.

|| Rom. i. 26, &c. 7 Be not ye therefore partakers with them.

8. For ye were sometimes darkness, but now *are ye* light in the Lord: walk as children of light,

you, that you must live in a quite contrary course.

9 (For the fruit of the Spirit *is* in all goodness, and righteousness, and truth)

10 Proving what is acceptable unto the Lord.

habitual practice whereof alone you can approve yourselves to God.

11 And have no fellowship with the † unfruitful works of dark-

6. & 7. Let no philosophers therefore persuade you by any arts of reasoning, that such practices can be any way innocent or allowable. They are the very things for which God gave up the heathens to vile || affections, and ever did, and do still, draw divine vengeance upon them that will not renounce and reform them.

8. In your dark and heathen state, it was indeed no wonder you should be guilty of them; but your *Christian* religion has so clearly instructed and better enlightened

you, that you must live in a quite contrary course.

9. (For the practice of all moral and divine virtues, ought to be the proper effect of your conversion to that pure religion that is attended with such gifts and influences of the Holy Spirit.

10. These virtues you must study and practise, as things most agreeable to the divine will, and by the

habitual practice whereof alone you can approve yourselves to God.

11. Never therefore be drawn in to those dangerous † practices that none but ignorant heathens would commit;

---

† The *unfruitful* works of darkness. Ἀκαρπιοὶ here cannot signify merely *unprofitable*, but *mischievous*: in the same manner as τὰ μὴ καὶ ὠφελόντα, signify most *abominable* things, Rom. i. 28. as I have noted there. And thus ἀκαρπῶς exactly answers to *inutilis*, which signifies *mischievous*, in the best Latin authors. Thus Cicero, [Potest enim accedere promissum aliquod et conventum, ut id effici sit *inutile*, vel ei cui promissum sit, vel ei qui promiserit. *De Offic. lib. I.*] And again, [Nec promissa igitur servanda sunt ea, quæ sunt iis, quibus promisseris, *inutilia*. Ibid.] The learned reader may see abundant instances of this in the learned Dr. Clark's Note on Hom. Iliad 2. p. 53.

darkness, but rather commit ; but, on the contrary, endeavour to expose their indecency, and make them ashamed of them. A. D. 62.

12 For it is a shame even to speak of those things which are done of them in secret.

12. For certainly it would shock the modesty of a good man, even to mention the abominable and filthy actions committed in the secret *mysteries* of *heathen* worship.

13 But all things that are reprov'd, are made manifest by the light : for whatsoever doth make manifest, is light.

13. But as light is the thing that renders every object clearly visible to the eye ; so has the Christian religion demonstrated the vileness and danger of these practices to the minds of all that embrace it.

14 Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light.

14. And accordingly the prophet Isaiah (Isa. lx. 1.) has expressed the happy condition of the *Gentile* part of the *Christian church*. *Arise, shine, for thy light is come, and the glory of the Lord is risen upon thee.* And again, *Awake and sing ye that dwell in the dust,* Isa. xxvi. 19. Signifying *the former dark and ignorant state of the heathen world, and the glorious light and knowledge it should attain to by the religion of Christ the Messiah ; and their great obligation to live suitably to the advantages of it.*

15 See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise,

16 Redeeming the time, because the days are evil.

not only with *innocency* but *discretion* ; not exposing yourselves to persecution upon needless occasions ; but while you endeavour to convert men, you ought to avoid their fury by all lawful and just means.

17 Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is.

15. & 16. Considering therefore how contrary the religion you have embraced is to that of the rest of mankind, and what violent opposition you are like to meet with ; you must have a prudential eye to that too, and manage yourselves

17. Remember therefore, that though it be the will of God you should firmly adhere to your Christian principles, and labour to bring others

A. D. 62. others over to them ; yet it is none of his will that you should indiscretely lay yourselves open to their obstinate malice and rage ; but only propose the divine truths to them in so prudent a manner, as may best work upon *them*, and secure your own *lives*.

18 And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess : but be filled with the Spirit :

18. But to proceed concerning the particular vices I was warning you from : To preserve yourselves from the impurities of heathen worship, be sure to shun that excess of *drinking* so usual in their idolatrous festivals ; the incentive to all lust and extravagancy. And instead of the beastly custom of filling yourselves with *wine*, endeavour by a habit of temperance and sober conversation, to be full of the gracious gifts and influences of the Holy Spirit.

19 Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns, and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord ;

¶ See 1 Cor. xi. Coloss. iii. 16.

20 Giving thanks always for all things unto God and the Father, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ ;

19. & 20. Which will inspire you in your religious || assemblies to praise and bless God in divine psalms and hymns ; and, contrary to their extravagant and lewd merriments, will render all your mirth truly spiritual and religious : exalting your minds to grateful and pious expressions of thanksgiving to God the Father, through Jesus Christ, for all his mercies towards you.

21 Submitting yourselves one to another in the fear of God, both in public and private, and in all relative duties to each other.

21. And these divine influences will conduct you in a regular submission of inferiors to superiors,

22 Wives, \* submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord.

22. Such as is that, for instance, between *husband* and *wife*, which the *Jewish* zealots are apt to think they may be excused in, where there is a disagreement in *religious* \* principles. Whereas the due

---

\* For the *occasion* and *design* of St. Paul's advice in this and the following relative duties, let the reader see the preface to this epistle, § 4.

due subjection of a *wife* to her *husband* (notwithstanding any difference in religious opinions between them) is not only the plain will of Christ, but is illustrated and enforced by the very constitution of his *church*. A. D. 62.

23 For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the Saviour of the body.

23. For as Christ is the Saviour, head and governor of the whole *church*, as his spiritual *body*, so is every *husband* the head and guardian || of his *wife*.

|| So in  
I Cor. xi.

24 Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in every thing.

and observance from her to her *husband*.

24. And therefore as the church pays all due subjection to Christ its *spiritual head*, so the natural relation of a *wife*, according to the first solemn institution of marriage, requires a just submission

25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it:

26 That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word,

27 That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle, or any such thing: but that it should be holy and without blemish.  
will terminate in the happiness in heaven.

28 So ought men to love their wives, as their own bodies: he that loveth his wife, loveth himself.

29 For no man ever yet hated his own flesh;

25. 26. & 27. On the other side, this comparison will as clearly show and highly recommend that *love* and *tenderness* that *husbands* ought to express to their *wives*. For as nothing can be so lively and perfect an example of love, care and tenderness, as that where-with Christ treats the *church*, his spouse, cleansing and purifying all its members from the guilt of sin, by baptizing them into his holy and pure profession; and by his word and Holy Spirit training them up to such unblemished holiness of life here upon earth, as perfection of virtue, glory and

28. & 29. So does this his tender regard to us, as the dear members of his own spiritual body, show every *husband* to treat his *wife* as a second *self*; convincing him by the dictates of *self-love*,

A. D. 62. flesh; but nourisheth  
 and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church.

to be kind and gentle towards her, and how unnatural it would be to do otherwise.

30 For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.

30. Thus close and dear is the union of Christ with his *church*, and of the *husband* with the *wife*, that they may be respectively considered as head and members of one and the same body.

31 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh.

31. And accordingly you know, when Eve was produced from Adam's rib, and given him for a *wife* (Gen. ii. 22.) it was expressly said, *That the relation between them was nearer and dearer than that of parents and children.*

32 This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church.

32. And thus have I, by this most noble and lively \* comparison of Christ and his *church*, illustrated and recommended to you

the great duty of *husbands* and *wives*. But indeed my *chief* design was to show you the happy union between Christ and his *church*.

33 Nevertheless, let every one of you in particular, so love his wife, even as himself, and

33. But whether I had made use of this *mystical* way of *illustration* or no, the very original institution of *marriage*, and the plain will of Christ

---

\* [This is a great mystery.] The generality of interpreters understand St. Paul here, as if the marriage of Adam and Eve were intended by the Holy Spirit to represent, and mystically to signify the spiritual union between the Messiah and the *Christian church*. The *Jewish* doctors indeed are full of this. But because no other undoubted expressions of scripture are found to demonstrate the thing itself to be *true*, and it not being clear these traditional doctrines of the rabbins were as early as our Saviour's or St. Paul's time, I have therefore expressed it as a *comparison* for *illustration*; and whether the great latitude in which St. Paul uses this word *mystery* will not warrant my so doing, I submit to the judgment of the learned and attentive reader. See Revelat. i. 20. with my Paraph. there.



and the wife *see* that Christ in the gospel religion, is A. D. 62.  
the reverence her husband. sufficient to convince them of the  
obligation to love and tenderness  
on the one part, and to respect and subjection on the  
other; and that no differences in *religious principles* can  
excuse either from so evident a moral duty.

## CHAP. VI.

*He proceeds in showing the Christian obligation to the other relative Duties of Parents and Children, Masters and Slaves. Then encourages them to general Constancy and Resolution against all Temptations and Persecutions for the sake of Christianity: and, by Metaphors taken from the Arts of Grecian and Roman Soldiery, directs them how to arm themselves against the Assaults of them. Desires their prayers for him, as their Gentile Apostle, and concludes with his Blessing.*

1 **C**Hildren, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right. 1. **T**O proceed in these relative duties. The same Christian principle that ought to induce *husbands* and *wives* to their reciprocal duties, notwithstanding any differences in religious notions\*, obliges all *children* and *young* people to pay all just reverence to their *parents*, and not think themselves exempt from it *to either*\* of them upon that account.

2 Honour thy father and thy mother (which is the first commandment with promise)

2. & 3. Let them remember, that duty to parents is of so natural and important obligation, that God was pleased in the fifth commandment to his ancient people the Jews,

3 That

F 3

to

\* See the Pref. to this epistle, § 4.

A. D. 62.

3 That it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live long on the earth.

to add the special promise of temporal prosperity and long life in the land of Canaan, for their greater encouragement to it.

4 And ye fathers, \* provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord. †

And let all Christian parents be particularly careful to treat their children with such mild and gentle usage as may more easily induce them to believe and embrace the Christian religion; and not \* prejudice them against it, by their froward and ill example.

5 Servants, be † obedient to them that are your masters according to the flesh, with fear and trembling, in singleness of your heart, as unto Christ:

5 Let such Christians as are slaves to heathen masters, not think themselves disengaged from their civil obligation by being Christians, † but continue to serve them sincerely and industriously, as their Christian duty.

6 Not with eyeservice, as men please, but as the servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart;

\* 6. & 7. Let them do it sincerely, I say, and not barely in such a manner as to escape their master's observation and punishment; but conscientiously seek their interest, knowing, that in serving them faithfully, they serve Jesus Christ their supreme Lord and master.

7 With good will doing service, as to the Lord, and not to men:

8 Knowing that whatsoever good thing any man doth, the same shall he receive of the Lord, whether he be bond or free.

8. And being fully assured, that Christ will hereafter as impartially and fully reward the diligent services of a slave, as the most generous actions of a freeman.

9. And

\* [Provoke not your children, but bring them up. &c. Μὴ παροργίζετε — οἷον οἱ πολλοὶ ποιεῖσιν, ἀποκληρονόμους ἐργαζόμενοι, καὶ ἀποκηρύκτες ποιεῖντες. Chrysostom. i. e. Provoke not your children, as many people do, by their ill usage, discouraging them from coming into the Christian church, and from hearkening to the gospel doctrine.

† See 1 Cor. vii. 20, 21, 22, 23, 24.

9 And ye masters, do the same things unto them, forbearing threatening; knowing that your Master also is in heaven, neither is there respect of persons with him.

forgave them infinitely more; and who regards no man's *external* circumstances, but will reward and punish the behaviour of a *master* as well as of a *slave*.

10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.

11 Put on the whole \* armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil.

ed you, for your defence against the stratagems and assaults of the devil, and wicked men.

12 For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places †.

13 Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may

9. And let all *Christian* masters, <sup>A. D. 62.</sup> that have any *slaves* under them, use them with gentleness and humanity; forbearing all passionate and violent expressions toward them; and forgiving their pardonable faults. Remembering, *they* themselves have a heavenly master who

10. And, now to conclude my exhortation to you: Be courageous and resolute in your profession, making the best improvement of the powers that God has given you.

11. Your conflict is very great and sharp. Wherefore, like true soldiers, arm yourselves from head to foot with the \* spiritual armour wherewith God has furnished

12. And great need you have so to do. For you must engage not only with men, with the magistrates and rulers of *this* world, but with wicked *spirits* too, those malicious *powers*, that have so long domineered over the blind and ignorant *heathens*, and have still their habitation in the regions of the air about us.

13. Be ready armed then with the following principles, that will enable you to resist them all, and

F 4

stand

\* [Armour of God] See note on 2 Cor. viii. 1.

† Ver. 12. [Spiritual wickedness in high places:] πνεύματα τῆς πονηρίας ἐν τοῖς ἐπεσθάνοις. [Against the wicked spirits in the regions of (our) air. ἐπεσθάνοις is the same with τῆς σκοτος τῆς, *this darkness*; the same with ζόφω, and ζοφον, *darkness*, in St. Peter and St. Jude.

A. D. 62. may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand.

14 Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breast-plate of righteousness ;

the habitual practice of them be as a breast-plate to fence off every mortal wound.

15 And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace.

edge of their malice ; as the soldier's boots preserves his legs from the roughness of the ways, and from the traps and galls that are laid by the enemy to retard his march.

16 Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked :

the shield does the soldier

stand your ground under the worst trial and temptation ; viz.

14. Keep close to the rules and plain precepts of the *gospel*, the knowledge whereof will secure you from all loose principles, and like the soldier's *girdle*, keep you in a firm and steady posture ; and

15. Be always prepared with a modest and peaceable mind toward your adversaries ; which will be a means to prevent and take off the

16. But especially have your thoughts ever possessed with a firm and steady faith in the *promises* of the gospel ; that will guard you from the secret suggestions, and open assaults of the devil ; as the

\*1 Thes. v. 8. 17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.

Read and meditate on the word of God in holy scripture, the understanding whereof will, like the keenest *sword*, enable you not only to resist, but to assault your adversaries.

18 Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all per-

severance, and supplication for all saints.

17. Let your hopes \* of eternal life and happiness, be ever ardent and vigorous ; which, like a *helmet* on the head, will secure you in the main points of your profession.

18. And withal be earnest and constant in a course of fervent prayer to God for yourselves and all Christian people.

19 And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly to make known the mystery of the gospel;

20 For which I am \* an ambassador in bonds; that therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak

21 But that ye also might know my affairs, *and* how I do, Tychicus, as a beloved brother, and faithful minister in the Lord, shall make known to you all things.

22 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that ye might know our affairs, and that he might comfort your hearts.

23 Peace *be* to the brethren, and love, with faith from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

24 Grace be with all them that love our Lord Jesus Christ.

¶ Written from Rome unto the Ephesians, by Tychicus.

19 & 20. Not forgetting to let <sup>A. D. 62.</sup> *me*, your *Gentile* apostle, have a share in those petitions; beseeching God to enable me with due constancy and courage, to maintain this doctrine *of the Gentiles being called into the gospel covenant*; a doctrine now absolutely plain and certain, how strange soever it seem to the *Jewish* zealots; and whereof I am now a commissioned preacher, and am \* imprisoned on that very account.

21. & 22. I send Tychicus, my dear Christian brother, and a faithful minister of Christ, with this letter to you, on purpose to acquaint you with my condition, and how it fares with me in my confinement; and to comfort you under your concern at it.

23. May all the Christians in your parts continue steadfast in the faith, love, and favour of God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

24. His favour and love be upon all sincere and good Christians. *Amen.*

---

\* [Am an ambassador in bonds]. *Πρεσβείω ἐν ἀλύσει.* Which some render, [I grow old in bonds]; agreeable to Philem. ix. He had indeed been imprisoned in Judea two years, and had now lain two more at Rome, for the same cause. But I keep to our translation, as more agreeable to the rest of the expressions to the same purpose in this epistle. See note on Philem. ix.

---

A

P A R A P H R A S E

ON

THE EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL

TO THE

P H I L I P P I A N S.

---

THE PREFACE.

A. D. 62. **W**HILE St. Paul was a prisoner at Rome, whither he was forced to make his appeal from the inveterate malice of the *Jews*, for his preaching to the *Gentile* world, the *Philippian* church send *Epaphroditus* to visit and salute him in their name ; to carry him supplies from them for his support in his confinement ; and to give him the comfortable account, how steady and firm their church continued to the Christian faith he had formerly planted amongst them ; and especially in that point of *relying upon the gospel religion for salvation, without the observation of the ceremonial law*, which the *Jewish* zealots every where cried up to be of absolute necessity to a *Christian* convert. This epistle is a return of St. Paul's great satisfaction, love and joy at the respects they had shown him, and especially for their

their firm adherence to this *true Christian* doctrine; <sup>A. D. 62.</sup> with several fresh exhortations to a resolute, but yet <sup>meek and peaceful</sup> behaviour in their disputes with those furious adversaries, on whose temper and practices he lets fall some very severe and just reflections. For a further account of the nature of the expressions in which this letter runs, I refer the reader to the preface of the *foregoing* epistle.

---

## C H A P. I.

*The Title and Salutation. He expresseth his good Opinion of them for their Kindness and Respect toward him, and especially for their firm Adherence to the true Christian Doctrine; and prays for their final Constancy in it. Acquaints them with the Success his present Sufferings had for the Promotion of the Gospel, even in the Emperor's Court. Intimates a set of contentious Teachers of the Judaizing party who levelled their Doctrine against him, instead of preaching Jesus Christ as the common Saviour of Mankind; but mentions others that were sincere, and stood by him and his Principles. Speaking of his Sufferings and his Constancy under them, he makes himself to be in a strait between the Desires of serving Christ by a longer Life, and enjoying him in Death; but is free to live, and even suffer longer, for the benefit of the Christian Church. Gives them hopes of seeing them again; but whether he should or no, exhorts them to Christian Piety, and Resolution in Suffering, after his own Example.*

I PAUL and Timothy, the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ

I. & 2. PAUL and Timothy, the servants and ministers of Jesus Christ, with all divine blessings from God the Father and our

A. D. 62. Christ Jesus, which are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons : our Lord Jesus Christ, to the bishops and deacons, and the whole Christian church of Philippi.

2 Grace *be* unto you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 † I thank my God upon every remembrance of you.

4 Always in every prayer of mine for you all, making request with joy,

5 For your fellowship in the gospel, from the first day until now ;

6 Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good work in you, will perform it until the day of Jesus Christ.

to the great day of Christ's recompence and reward.

7 Even as it is meet for me to think this of you all, because I have you in my heart; in as much as both in my bonds, and in the defence and confirmation of the gospel, ye all are partakers of my grace.

3, 4, & 5. Your conversion to the Christian faith, and your steadiness in it, from the very first propagation of it to you, to this day, is matter of such joy and satisfaction to me, that † I am ever blessing God for it, and praying for your further constancy in it, in every petition I put up to him.

6. Being sufficiently satisfied, that God, who has called you Gentiles as well as the Jews, to the profession of the *gospel*, will so assist your endeavours, as to keep you in the faith and practice of it

7 Nor can I but thus esteem and pray for *you*, that have thus distinguished your ‡ respects to *me*, in adhering so firmly to the doctrine I preached to you, and suffering for it now along with me, who am a prisoner for the truth and confirmation of it ||,

8 For

8. And

† *Ευχαριστώ*, I give thanks. Which shows St. Paul to be the *author* of the epistle, though Timothy was joined in the *salutation*.

‡ [Because I have you in my heart.] *Διὰ τὸ ἔχειν με ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ ὑμῶν.* Or, Because you have *me* at heart.

|| Ver. 7. [Partakers of my grace *or* gift. It is a dubious expression. It may signify, as in the paraphrase, [their being partakers of the honour of his suffering for the gospel ;] or their being *συγκοινοῦνται*, *contributors* to the *gift* the Philippians sent him by Epaphroditus, Chap. iv. 18. See Mr. Peirce in Loc.



8 For God is my record, how greatly I long after you all, in the bowels of Jesus Christ.

9 And this I pray, that your love may abound, yet more and more, in knowledge, and in all judgment.

10 That ye may approve || things that are excellent, that ye may be sincere, and without offence till the day of Christ ;

11 Being filled with the fruits of righteousness, which are by Jesus Christ unto the glory and praise of God.

12 But I would ye should understand, brethren, that the things *which happened* unto me, have fallen out rather unto the furtherance of the gospel.

13 So that my bonds in Christ are manifest in all the palace, and in all other *places*. particularly for preaching it to the *Gentile* world.

8. And God can testify, what <sup>A. D. 62.</sup> a hearty degree of Christian love, I, in return, bear toward your whole church.

9. And how earnestly I pray that your love of Christ, and of me his *apostle*, may continually increase, by a more complete and perfect understanding of the great truths of his religion.

10. & 11. That by || studying and embracing the most important doctrines, and abounding in the practice of all Christian virtues, you may be found his sincere and true professors at the solemn appearance of Jesus Christ; to the glory and praise of God the Father.

12. But, to give you an account of my present state and condition, according to your desire, know then, that my imprisonment at Rome has been no hindrance, but rather an advantage to the *Christian* cause.

13. For it is now publicly known in the emperor's court, and through all the city, that I am a prisoner for the Christian faith, and particularly for preaching it to the *Gentile* world.

14. And

---

|| Ver. 10. [That ye may approve the things that are excellent,] *εἰς τὸ δοκιμάζειν ὑμᾶς τὰ διαφέροντα*, "That ye examine into, and [proportionably] approve of, things, according as they differ in their excellency and importance.

A. D. 62. 14 And many of  
 { the brethren in the  
 Lord waxing confi-  
 dent by my bonds,  
 are much more bold  
 to speak the word  
 without fear.

\* See chap. 15 Some indeed  
 iii. 2, 3. &c. preach Christ even of  
 envy and strife, and  
 some also of good will.

16 The one preach  
 Christ of contention,  
 not sincerely†, suppos-  
 ing to add affliction  
 to my bonds:

17 But the other  
 of love, knowing that  
 I am set for the de-  
 fence of the gospel.

and that I am a sufferer for the true *gospel* doctrine.

18. What then?  
 notwithstanding eve-  
 ry way, whether in  
 pretence, or in truth,  
 Christ is preached;  
 and I therein do re-  
 joice, yea, and will  
 rejoice.

19 For I know that  
 this shall turn to my  
 salvation through your  
 prayer, and the sup-  
 ply of the Spirit of  
 Jesus Christ.

of Christ, to assist me to plead my cause‡.

14. And my patience and cou-  
 rage under it has raised the spi-  
 rits of several Christians, to pro-  
 fess and preach the *same* doctrine  
 openly and undauntedly.

15. 16. & 17. There is indeed  
 a set of *Jewish* \* converts, that  
 preach it more out of opposition  
 to *me*, than out of love to the  
 gospel *itself*. Their business is to  
 depress my character, and increase  
 my sufferings, (because I will not  
 allow the *ceremonial* law to be ne-  
 cessary to a *Christian's* salvation.)  
 But, thank God, there are others  
 that stand up for me and my prin-  
 ciples, being fully satisfied what I  
 preach is by *divine* commission,  
 and that I am a sufferer for the true *gospel* doctrine.

18. And though these two par-  
 ties preach out of very different  
 and contrary designs; yet there is  
 this advantage, that they both  
 contribute to make the *Christian*  
 religion in general more known in  
 the world; which is, and always  
 shall be a great satisfaction to me.

19. And I am assured the pre-  
 sent malice intended against *me*  
 will prove so short of succeeding,  
 that it will rather contribute to my  
 deliverance. For which I question  
 not your prayers, and the Spirit

20. As

---

† Ver. 16 [Not sincerely], ἐκ ἀγνῶς: [Not without mix-  
 ture], viz. of *Jewish ceremonies* with the *Christian faith*.

‡ [Turn to my salvation]; ἐς σωτηρίαν: Not to his future  
*salvation*, but to his *deliverance* at his *trial* at Rome.

20 According to my earnest expectation, and my hope, that in nothing I shall be ashamed, but *that* with all boldness, as always, *so* now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether *it be* by life or by death.

21 For to me to live *is* Christ, and to die *is* gain. in Christ's service, and by the *other* shall be the sooner rewarded.

22 But if I live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour; yet what I shall choose I wot not.

sweet, that, were it hardly know which to determine as best for me.

23. For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better:

24 Nevertheless, to abide in the flesh, *is* more needful for you.

25 And having this confidence, I know that I shall abide and continue with you all, for your furtherance and joy of faith:

26 That your rejoicing may be more abundant in Jesus Christ for me, by my coming to you again.

20. As therefore the only thing A. D. 62.  
I desire is, to demonstrate the power and excellency of Christ's religion, either by living longer to preach it, or by courageously dying for it; I shall not fail, in this juncture, to defend it publicly, as I have always hitherto done.

21. The only difference between life and death, to me is, that by the *one* I shall continue the longer

22. It is infinitely worth my pains and sufferings indeed, to continue here still, and do service to his religion; yet is the prospect of my future happiness so ravishing and sweet, that, were it left to my *own* choice, I should hardly know which to determine as best for me.

23. & 24. Thus are my desires straitened between the two conditions of longer *life* and present *death*. To die and be with Christ would be much the more immediate benefit to me; but to live longer is better for *you* and the Christian *church*; and I am very free to do it.

25. & 26. And because it is so, I am fully persuaded God will so order it, and I shall live and see you again, to your still further advancement and comfort in the Christian faith.

27 Only

A. D. 62. 27 Only let your conversation be as it becometh the gospel of Christ: that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may hear of your affairs, that ye stand fast in one spirit, with one mind, striving together for the faith of the gospel:

28 And in nothing terrified by your adversaries, which is to them an evident † token of perdition, but to you of salvation, and that of God.

come to *you* a means

29 For unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not only to believe on him, but also to suffer for his sake;

30 Having the same conflict which ye saw in me, and now hear to be in me.

\* Acts xiii. 23.

27. But whether I do or not, let me earnestly exhort you to go on in a life agreeable to the gospel religion; that I may hear a comfortable account how vigorously and unanimously you promote the credit and honour of the Christian faith; without partial distinction betwixt *circumcised* and *uncircumcised* converts.

28. And how undauntedly you bear the threats and persecutions of your adversaries, which, while they show *them* to be an obstinate and incurable people, bent upon their own destruction; so will the patient suffering under them become to *you* a means of eternal happiness and salvation.

29. & 30. Esteem it therefore as a high honour conferred on you, not only to be called into the Christian religion, as well as the *Jews*, but to suffer for it too; undergoing the same trials you saw me, your *apostle*, under, while I was first preaching to you \* at Philippi, and that you hear are still upon me here at Rome.

---

† Ver. 28. [Which is to them an evident token of perdition, &c.] Note, the word *which* may refer to the *Philippians standing fast*; and the token of perdition to them may signify, that their *adversaries* took this *steadfastness* of theirs to be a token of their perdition; but, says the *apostle*, [look you upon it as a token of your salvation.]

CHAP. II.

*He proceeds to exhort their whole Church to Unity, Meekness, and Humility, from the great Example of Christ suffering for us: And to Steadiness in Christian Principles and Practices, now in his absence from them. Hopes to send Timothy to them. In the mean while recommends their Messenger Epaphroditus, the Bearer of this Letter to them.*

1 IF there be therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any bowels and mercies:

2 Fulfil ye my joy, that ye be like minded, having the same love, *being* of one accord, of one mind.

to practise this *great* joy and satisfaction I have in you.

3 Let nothing be done through strife, or vain glory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves.

4 Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others. the good and edification of all his fellow Christians.

5 Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus.

1. & 2. I Exhorted you (Chap. i. A. D. 62. 27.) to unity and peace-

ableness in your Christian profession. And if there be any force in beseeching you in the name of Christ; if you have any sense of the sweet comforts of mutual *love*; if you have felt any motions of that good Christian *spirit* that excites us to love; finally, by all the compassions you bear towards *me* your suffering *apostle*, fail not

duty, which will complete all the

3. Let nothing be said and done amongst you out of a contentious or ambitious principle; but be all ready to do for and comply with one another, as if they were their superiors.

4. Let none of you be set upon pleasing his own humour, and minding his private credit or interest; but have a just regard to

5. In this you will imitate no less example than that of Jesus Christ, our great Lord and pattern.

A. D. 62. 6 Who being in  
the form of God \*,  
|| Heb. i. 3. thought it not robbery  
Colos. i. 15. ry to be equal with  
God :

7 But made himself of no reputation,  
and took upon him  
† Luke xxi. the form of a † servant,  
27. John xviii. 4—17. and was made in  
the likeness of men :

8 And being found  
in fashion as a man,  
he humbled himself,  
and became obedient  
unto death, even the  
death of the cross.

for a while of that majesty ; was clothed with human  
nature, ministering to us as a servant ; and so far hum-  
bled himself, as not only to live as a mean and ordinary  
*man*, but to die the ignominious death of the cross, for  
the expiation of our sins.

9 Wherefore God  
also hath highly ex-  
alted him, and given  
him a name which is  
above every name :

10 That at ‡ the  
name of Jesus every  
knee should bow, of  
*things* in heaven, and  
*things* on earth, and  
*things* under the earth ;

11 And

6. 7. & 8. Who though, before  
his incarnation, he was God, *the  
Son of God*, || *the brightness of his  
Father's glory*, and *the express i-  
mage of his person* ; and appeared  
to the patriarchs, and to the *Jew-  
ish* church, in the form of divine  
glory and majesty ; yet, for the  
salvation of us sinful men, did not  
insist\* upon appearing in that glo-  
ry, and to be honoured as God,  
did not look upon the honour God  
had given him, as upon a *prize* to  
be eagerly held fast, and never,  
upon any account whatever, to be  
parted with ; but divested himself

for a while of that majesty ; was clothed with human  
nature, ministering to us as a servant ; and so far hum-  
bled himself, as not only to live as a mean and ordinary  
*man*, but to die the ignominious death of the cross, for  
the expiation of our sins.

9. For which great and wondrous  
condescension, God has now exalt-  
ed this very man Christ Jesus the  
*Messiah*, to the highest degree of  
divine glory and majesty.

10. & 11. Making him the lord  
and governor of all creatures both  
in heaven † and earth, the Lord of  
the *living*, and raiser of the *dead* ;  
and obliging all to worship and a-  
dore,

---


\* Ver. 6. [Thought it no robbery to be equal with God] ;  
ἐν ἀφάρτησιν ἡγήσατο το εἶναι ἴσα Θεῷ. [He did not greedily in-  
sist upon showing himself, and being worshipped as God].  
Which sense is sufficiently proved by Bishop Bull, Dr.  
Whitby, and still more fully by Dr. Clark.

‡ [That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow].  
The Greek is, ἐν τῷ ὀνόματι. [In the name of Jesus—every  
knee should bow] ; *i. e.* worship God, agreeable to John xvi.  
23, 24. and many like passages.

11 And that every tongue should confess, that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

12 Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence; work out your own salvation with fear and trembling\*.

13 For it is God which worketh in you, both to will and to do of *his* good pleasure.

dore, to pray to, and praise God, A. D. 62. through him, and in his name, as  universal governor and saviour, to the glory of the supreme Father†.

12 Wherefore, dear brethren, being animated by so glorious an example, go on by these and the like virtues, to qualify yourselves for eternal salvation, with the utmost diligence and caution. You have hitherto proceeded very well in them, both while I was with you, and since my absence from you\*.

13. Nor be ye at all discouraged, at my being so long detained from you. Do your best endeavours, and God will assist you, under all temptations, to act agreeably to his holy will and religion.

G 2

14. & 15.

† [Of things in heaven, and things on earth, and under the earth]. See the note on Ephes. i. 10. And though *καταχθονίων* being joined to the other two phrases, may possibly, by the *Jewish* idiom, be meant to express only the whole world: Yet in this place I take it to signify the *dead*, in contradistinction to the *living*, agreeably to those other passages of scripture, concerning the government and exaltation of Christ. See Rom. xiv. 9. Rev. i. 18.

‡ Ver. 9, 10, 11. Note, If the *bowing the knee*, ver. 10. refers to Christ, then we may render the passage thus, [And hath given him a name, *ὄνομα*, a character, above every (*other*) character, that in that character of Jesus (*the Saviour*) every knee should bow,] and pay him reverence.

\* Ver. 12. Note, I have so paraphrased this verse, that the verb *κατεργάζεσθε* (work out) may be taken either *imperatively* or *indicatively* (ye do still work out.) So as that this may be understood as *commendation*, not an *exhortation* to the Philippians. Which indeed is very agreeable to the congratulatory style of this epistle. See Werenfel's *Desert. Theolog.* p. 459—469.

*Ibid.* [With fear and trembling, *i. e.* with all due carefulness, respect and regard]. So the same phrase is used, Psal. iii. 11. Ephes. vi. 5. 2 Cor. vii. 15.

A. D. 62. 14 Do all things  
without murmurings,  
and disputings :

15 That ye may be  
blameless and harm-  
less, the sons of God,  
without rebuke, in the  
midst of a crooked and  
† Acts ii. perverse † nation, a-  
40. Matth. mong whom ye shine ||  
xvii. 17. as lights in the world.  
Luke ix. 41.  
Deut xxxii.  
5. in lxx.

16 Holding forth  
the word of life, that  
I may rejoice in the  
day of Christ, that I  
have not run in vain,  
neither laboured in  
vain.

17 Yea, and if I  
be offered upon the  
sacrifice and service  
of your faith, I joy  
and rejoice with you  
all.

18 For the same  
cause also do ye joy  
and rejoice with me.

19 But I trust in  
the Lord Jesus, to  
send Timotheus short-  
ly unto you, that I  
also may be of good  
comfort when I know  
your state.

20 For I have no  
man like-minded, who  
will naturally care for  
your state.

21 For

14. & 15. Be particularly care-  
ful (as I before advised you) to  
avoid all needless disputes and ani-  
mosities ; and, by an innocent and  
inoffensive carriage, prove your-  
selves worthy the character of  
God's true church and children ;  
and become shining lights, and il-  
lustrious examples, to convince  
and reform the wicked generation  
of men you live amongst.

16 And that by your perseve-  
rance in Christianity, under all op-  
position, *I*, your *apostle*, may re-  
joice and triumph in the great day  
of Christ's appearance, for the  
happy effects of my labours in  
your conversion to the *gospel*.

17. & 18. As to myself, if *I*  
should not only be kept still from  
you, but die a sacrifice for preach-  
ing to you *Gentiles*, I should con-  
gratulate myself and you upon  
spending my life in so good a  
cause. And *you* ought to rejoice  
with me too, upon the same ac-  
count.

19. But be that as it may, I hope  
in Christ to have an opportunity  
of sending Timothy shortly to  
you ; and give myself the satis-  
faction of hearing by him of your  
happy state and condition.

20. I fix upon *him* as the only  
person I can find here, that, like  
myself, is truly ready and willing  
to serve you, or any other Chris-  
tian church.

21. For

---

|| Ver. 15. *Ye shine φαίνεσθε*, or *shine ye*, in the imperative mood.



21 For all seek their own, not the things which are Jesus Christ's.

the religion of Christ, by taking much pains or running any hazards for it.

22 But ye know the proof of him, that as a son with the father, he hath served with me in the gospel.

23 Him therefore I hope to send presently, so soon as I shall see how it will go with me.

24 But I trust in the Lord, that I also

25 Yet I supposed it necessary to send you Epaphroditus, my brother and companion in labour, and fellow-foldier, but your messenger, and he that ministred to my wants.

26 For he longed after you all, and was full of heaviness, because that ye had heard that he had been sick.

27 For indeed he was sick nigh unto death, but God had mercy on him: and not on him only, but on me also, lest I should have sorrow upon sorrow.

28 I sent

21. For the generality of Christians in these parts, are more concerned for their *own* safety and private interest, than to advance

the religion of Christ, by taking much pains or running

22. But Timothy, you know, has always stuck close to me, and served me in the *gospel* concerns with the perfect respects of a son to a father.

23. & 24. As soon as ever therefore I see the issue of my trial, I shall send him. And I have reason to hope I shall be cleared, and visit you soon myself.

25. In the mean time, I thought it proper with this letter, to send you back your worthy messenger and minister Epaphroditus, who ever since his coming to me, with supplies from you, hath been my fellow-labourer in *Christianity*, and done me great service.

26. And is very desirous to see you again, and relieve you from the concern he concludes you to be under at his late sickness here.

27. For indeed he has been so very ill, as to be at the point of death. And his recovery was not only a great mercy to himself, but to *me* in particular, and has prevented one of the greatest misfortunes that could have befallen me in my confinement.

G 3

28. I pitched

A. D. 62.

A. D. 62. 28 I sent him therefore the more † carefully, that when ye see him again, ye may rejoice, and that I may be the less sorrowful.

29 Receive him therefore in the Lord with all gladness, and hold such in reputation.

30 Because for the work of Christ he was nigh unto death, not regarding his life to supply your lack of service toward me.

28. I pitched upon him therefore for the bearer of this letter, to give myself the pleasure of rejoicing you at the sight of so dear a friend.

29. Nor need I much exhort you to receive him with all Christian respect, and to set a high value upon all such good ministers of Christ as he is.

30. Who has hazarded his own life in labours and pains for Christ's sake, and in doing that service to me, which you at this distance, how willing soever you be, were not capable to perform ‡.

### CHAP. III.

*He encourages them to a cheerful Profession of Christianity; and to a Dependence on the Faith of it alone, without regard to the Jewish Law, according to his own Example. Warns them against the Principles and Practices of the Jewish zealous, upon whom he makes very just and severe Reflections.*

1 Finally, my brethren, rejoice in the Lord. To write the same things to you, to me indeed is not grievous, but for you it is safe.

2 Be-

1. THE sum of what I have further to exhort you to is, a cheerful and joyful profession of Christianity, founded in a true sense of Christ's love toward you, and his protection over you. And as I have formerly, by word of mouth,

† Ver. 28. [The more carefully; or σπουδαιότεως, the more speedily;] viz. with this very *epistle*. *Vulg.* festinantius.

‡ Ver. 30. [To supply your lack of service to me—*[Greek]* To perfect or complete your beneficence to me.]

mouth warned you against the principles of a set of <sup>A. D. 62.</sup> men that are its worst enemies; I think it proper to repeat those cautions again.

2 Beware of \* dogs, beware of evil-workers, beware of the concision †.

and who put all the stress of religion upon the empty ‡ ceremonies of *circumcision* and the *Jewish law*.

3 For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh.

pardon and salvation in that, and not in the external observance of the *Mosaical rites*, that are quite out of date.

4 Though I might also have confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, I more.

5 Circumcised the eighth day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew

2. I mean the *Jewish zealots*, that snarling \* and malicious people; whose business it is to do mischief to the true *Christian* faith,

3. It is we *Christians* that are now the true *church* and people of God, by embracing the pure worship and spiritual religion of the *gospel*, which it was the design and purpose of the *law* to lead men to; and placing all our hopes of

4. And though we should suppose the *Jewish law* were the main thing yet to be depended on; yet those *zealots* have no manner of reason to boast themselves above *me*, who have as many and more *Jewish* privileges than most of them can pretend to.

5. For I was a true born Israelite, both by father and mother's side, of the tribe of Benjamin (a tribe that never revolted to Jeroboam,

G 4

as

---

\* [Beware of dogs.] So the Jews, by way of contempt, used to style all Heathens; and now, as a just return for their contentious and obstinate opposition to the true religion, the apostles, St. Paul and St. John, fling it back upon themselves. See Rev. xxii. 25. Psal. xx. 16.

† [The concision;] τὴν κατατομήν. The same natural act as περιτομήν, *circumcision*, but now a mere and insignificant cutting of the *flesh*; *circumcision*, as a religious ceremony, being now quite abolished.

A. D. 62. Hebrew of the Hebrews: as touching the law, a Pharisee. as the rest did), circumcised the eighth day, and so made a member of the *Jewish* church in exact conformity to the *law*; and was a perfect Jew both by *nation* and *language*; nay, and a Pharisee too, one of the most strict and honourable sects of that religion,

6 Concerning zeal, persecuting the church: touching the righteousness which is in the law, blameless.

6. And if *zeal* for the *law* be of such moment, none was so severe an observer of *ceremonies* and *traditions* as *myself*, nor so violent a persecutor of the *Christian* religion, which came to repeal those *ceremonies*.

7 But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ.

7. But now the case is justly altered with me: and those external privileges of the *Jewish* profession I so much valued myself upon, I *now* so little esteem, in comparison of the blessings of Christ's religion; that to retain them any longer, while far better and nobler are come in their room, would be the greatest *damage* to me.

8 Yea, doubtless, and I count all things but loss, for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ,

9 And be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith.

10 That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship

8. & 9. For verily, so excellent and great are the privileges of *Christianity*, that those temporal ones of the *Jewish* dispensation seem perfectly mean and vile things; and I make no difficulty to part with them all for the service and favour of Jesus Christ my great Lord and Saviour; by embracing of whose religion I obtain that perfect pardon and salvation at God's hands, which my strictest observance of the *ceremonial law* could never have procured for me.

10. & 11. I give them all up, I say, to own *him* for the true *Messiah* and Saviour of mankind; to suffer and die for *his* religion, who suffered

lowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death ;

11 If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead\*.

12 Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect : but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus.

13 Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended : but *this* one thing I *do*, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before,

14 I press toward the mark †, for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

15 Let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded : and if in any thing ye be otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you.

may not be all exactly agreed in every notion about this law,

suffered for *our* sins ; in full hope A. D. 62. and assurance to be raised again to eternal life by the same divine power that raised *him* from the dead ; not refusing to do and undergo any thing to attain that final blessing of a glorious and happy resurrection.

12. 13. & 14. *This* is the prize, dear brethren, I, as a *Christian*, hope for, and am assured of, but have not *yet* actually attained. My business in this life is, to strive and run for it ; and like a true *racer*, to mind nothing else about me, but keep my eye fixed upon *this* ; stretching on towards it with my utmost vigour and activity, in order to gain *that* at last which was the end for which Christ was graciously pleased to convert me to his religion.

15. Let all those Christians therefore, who duly understand and have fully embraced this religion, keep to this maxim, viz. *That this great prize of a glorious and happy resurrection is to be had by Christ's religion, without the ceremonial law.*

Hold to *this* and then, though you

---

\* Ver. 11. [If by any means,] &c. *ἵνα*, [that so I might attain,] &c.

† Ver. 14. [I press toward the mark ;] or, *κατὰ σκοπὸν*, [I press forward, according to my view or design.]

A. D. 62. *law*, or our obligation to it, God will \*, in due time, bring you all to a complete understanding of the case, and let you see it is perfectly abolished.

16 Nevertheless, whereunto we have already attained, let us walk by the same rule, let us mind the same thing †.

17 Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so, as ye have us for an example.

18 (For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, *that they are* the enemies of the cross of Christ :

19 Whose end is destruction, whose God is *their* belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things).

16. In the mean while, let us, that perfectly know it to be so, keep firm and unanimous to the true *Christian* principle.

17. Follow *my* example, and my principles in this matter ; and take *them* for your patterns, who have relinquished all their *Jewish* privileges for the sake of Christ's religion, as I have done.

18. As to the *Jewish* zealots, that would persuade you to the contrary, I have always told, and now tell you again, not without tears for their incurable obstinacy, that they are the worst enemies our religion has.

19. Their notions and views of religion are all *temporal* : and their chief aim is at the gratification of their sensual appetites and pleasures ; they boast in what they ought to be ashamed of ; and for such

---

\* [God will reveal even this unto you.] Some copies read ἀπεκάλυψε—[God has revealed it.] The sense being thus, [Whoever thinks otherwise is in a plain error ; for God hath now expressly declared the Jewish law to be abolished, and no further necessary.] A most agreeable sense indeed : but I keep to our translation, according to the more ancient MSS.

Ibid. [Will reveal.] Thus the abrogation of the ceremonial *law* was *completely* demonstrated by the total destruction of Jerusalem and the temple, about *eight* years after the date of this epistle.

† Ver. 16. [Let us mind the same thing :] or rather, perhaps, τὸ αὐτὸ φρονεῖν. [To be at unity with one another, according to Chap. ii. 2. Rom. xii. 16.—xv. 5. As Mr. Pierce well observes.

such irreclaimable prejudices and practices God will de- A. D. 62.  
stroy their whole nation with a most exemplary de-struction.

20 For our conversion is in heaven, from whence also we look for the Saviour the Lord Jesus Christ: day expects to behold him raise and exalt him thither.

21 Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.

20. Directly contrary to their worldly principles, a *Christian* ought to look further and higher, and consider himself as a citizen of *heaven*, from whence he one day expects to behold Jesus his Saviour descending, to raise and exalt him thither.

21. To transform these frail and mortal bodies of ours into a resemblance of his own glorious body, enabling them by his Almighty power, for which nothing is too hard, to mount \* up after \* 1 Thes. him thither, where we shall be iv. 17. for ever happy with him.

#### C H A P. IV.

*The Encouragements to Christian Constancy, Cheerfulness, and and Resignation, continued. He expresseth the due Sense he had of the Philippians Kindness to him. The Apostle's Courage and Contentedness under all Conditions of Life. The Salutations and Conclusion,*

1 **T**HEREFORE, my brethren, dearly beloved and longed for, my joy and crown, so stand fast in the Lord, my dearly beloved.

2 I beseech Euodias, and beseech Syntiche, that they be of the same mind in the Lord.

1, **A**ND thus, my dear Christian converts, in whose steadiness to the faith I glory and triumph, continue still firm and unanimous in your profession, from all the foregoing considerations.

2. I particularly entreat Euodias and Syntiche to do thus, and not to be led aside by the *Jewish* zealots,

3. And

A. D. 62.

3 And I entreat thee also, \* true yoke-fellow. help † those women which laboured with me in the gospel, ‡ with Clement also, and with other my fellow-labourers, whose names || are in the book of life.

of everlasting life ||, as truly sincere Christians.

4 Rejoice in the Lord alway, *and* again I say, rejoice.

5 Let your moderation be known unto all men. The Lord is at hand.

utmost right, nor impatient in suffering wrongs. Remember, the Judge is not far off, that will take vengeance on your furious adversaries, and reward your Christian patience.

3. And I beg of you, my true Christian brother \* and a fellow apostle, to give your assistance to those † pious women that laboured so heartily to serve me, while I preached in your parts: along with ‡ Clement, and all those my fellow-labourers in the Christian ministry, who, I verily believe, are to be partakers of the reward

4. I exhort you again and again, to rejoice and be cheerful under the hopes and privileges of your *Christian* profession.

5 Show an even, patient, and contented spirit toward all that oppose and persecute you: Be not rigorous in insisting upon your

not rigorous in insisting upon your

---

\* [True yoke-fellow]. Who the apostle particularly means, is not agreed upon by interpreters.

† Ver. 3. [Those women]: Probably he means Euodias and Syntyche, before mentioned.

‡ [With Clement and the rest, &c]. These words may be joined either to συζυγε γνήσιε, [true yoke-fellow] or to αἱτινες συνήβλησαν μοι, [those who laboured with me and Clement]. The latter seems most probable

|| [Whose names are written in the book of life]. It is a *Jewish* phrase, and does not at all imply any absolute degree or predestination to eternal life; but signifies their being *registered* in that *corporation* or society where eternal life was the privilege. on condition of faith and obedience to Christ's religion: Alluding to both the *Jewish*, *Greek*, and *Roman* custom of *registering* the inhabitants of every city and great town; and then blotting out their names again as fast as they died. See Exod. xxxii. 32. with my note on that passage. See also my note on Rev. iii. 5.



6 Be careful for nothing: but in every thing, by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving, let your requests be made known unto God.

7 And the peace of God which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds, through Christ Jesus.

satisfaction and complacency of mind, that no tongue can express, nor any heart conceive, but such as enjoy it.

8 Finally brethren, whatsoever things *are* true, whatsoever things *are* honest, whatsoever things *are* just, whatsoever things *are* pure, whatsoever things *are* lovely, whatsoever things *are* of good report; if *there be* any virtue, and if *there be* any praise, think on these things.

9 Those things which ye have both learned and received, and heard and seen in me, do: and the God of peace shall be with you.

10 But I rejoiced in the Lord greatly, that now at the last your care of me hath flourished again, wherein ye were also careful, but ye lacked opportunity.

11 Not

6. Be not anxiously careful, or show any distraction under your greatest sufferings. But commend yourselves and your cause to God, in prayer for his assistance, and in thanksgiving for all his former mercies; and he will not fail to comfort and support you. A. D. 62.

7. For the continual sense of the divine favour and mercy, and the lively hope of the happiness and reward procured for you by Jesus Christ, will guard you under all trials, and give you that inward

8. In fine; be constant in the study and practice of truth, decency, justice, and purity; and of every virtue that is lovely and commendable, or that favours of a courageous and manly disposition.

9. Such virtues as I taught you, both by my doctrine and example: follow them, and the God of peace and comfort will never forsake you.

10. I cannot but repeat my satisfaction at the care you took to supply my wants, now under my confinement. I know you would have done it sooner, had not my great distance from you prevented it.

11. Not

A. D. 62. 11 Not that I speak  
in respect of want:  
for I have learned in  
whatsoever state I am,  
*therewith* to be con-  
tent.

12 I know both  
*how* to be abased, and  
I know *how* to abound;  
everywhere, and in all  
things I am instruct-  
ed, both to be full  
and to be hungry, both

\* πάντα. 13 I can do all \*  
things, through Christ,  
which strengtheneth  
me.

14 Notwithstand-  
ing, ye have well  
done, that ye did  
communicate with my  
affliction.

15 Now ye Philip-  
pians know also, that  
in the beginning of  
the gospel, when I  
departed from Mace-  
donia, no church com-  
municated with me,  
as concerning giving  
and receiving, but ye  
only.

16 For even in Thessalonica ye sent once and again unto  
my necessity.

17 Not because I  
desire a gift: but I  
desire fruit that may  
abound to your ac-  
count.

11. Not that I was reduced to  
absolute want, or was *uneasy*, be-  
fore you sent Epaphroditus to me;  
for though I had but little, I have  
learnt to be contented with any  
thing.

12. I am become so perfectly  
master of myself, as to bear, with  
an equal mind, the utmost de-  
grees either of prosperity or ad-  
versity.

and to abound and suffer need.

13. I can do or suffer any hard-  
ship in the course of my *apostoli-  
cal* \* office, through the assistance  
of Jesus Christ, who is ever pre-  
sent to support me.

14. However, you did very  
Christianly and well, in sending  
me a supply; and in the tokens  
you have given me, how much  
you sympathize with me in my  
present affliction.

15. & 16. And I must acknow-  
ledge, to your particular credit,  
that while I was preaching in your  
parts, I received contributions from  
no church but *yours*, and especially  
at my leaving Macedonia, and while  
I was at Thessalonica, you sent col-  
lections to me several times.

17. Nor do I remind you of  
this your kindness to me, with  
the least design to draw more  
from you. My acknowledgments  
for what is done to *myself*, are  
purely

purely to encourage you in *general* to such excellent acts of Christian charity and beneficence, as will be most amply and gloriously rewarded. A. D. 62.

18 But I have all, and abound: I am full, having received of Epaphroditus the things which were sent from you, an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice

18. What you have now sent is abundantly enough for me; and God will accept it as the best sacrifice you could offer up to him. acceptable, well-pleasing to God.

19 But my God shall supply all your need, according to his riches in glory, by Christ Jesus.

19. And the same God, whose apostle I am, will not fail, out of the infinite fullness of divine goodness towards us, in the glorious dispensation of Jesus Christ, to give you a plentiful return of supplies, for your liberality towards me.

20 Now unto God and our Father be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

20. Now to him, our supreme Creator and Father, be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

21 Salute every saint in Christ Jesus. The brethren \* which are with me greet you.

21. & 22. My hearty love to all the Christians in your parts, as all the Christian brethren here give theirs to you and them; particularly the converts that belong to the emperor's court.

22 All the saints salute you, chiefly they that are of Cæsar's household.

23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

23. The love and favour of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to the Philippians from Rome, by Epaphroditus.

---

\* Ver. 21. *The brethren*; viz. the *ministers*, in contradistinction to the *saints* here, and in the following *verse*.

---

P A R A P H R A S E

ON

THE EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL

TO THE

C O L O S S I A N S.

---

THE PREFACE.

**I**T appears from several (Chap. ii. 1.) passages in this epistle, that St. Paul did not *personally* preach to, and convert the Colossians to the Christian faith; nor had ever seen them. Though how near he was to them in his travels, we read, Acts xvi. 6.—xviii. 23. xix. 10. But that he was concerned in their conversion, by sending *others* to them for that purpose, is allowed by all; and that Epaphras was the person particularly employed by him there, seems probable from Chap. i. 7. Upon hearing their steadiness to the Christian faith, in opposition to the *Jewish zealots* that would have persuaded them (as they endeavoured to do all other Christian converts) to a necessity of observing the *ceremonial law*; and likewise to arm them still against the mixture of *Gentile philosophy* (or of such speculations as some *Jewish zealots* might have learned from *Gentile philosophers*) with their *Christian* principles, he sends them

them this epistle ; wherein he expresseth his great satisfaction at their constancy in their profession, and confirms them in it, against the insinuations of *each* of those adversaries. It was written at the same time and place with those to the Ephesians and Philippians (*viz.* during his confinement at Rome) and in the same strain of expressions. For a clearer notion whereof the reader may please to see, and compare this with, the preface to the Ephesians.

## CHAP. I.

*The Title. He congratulates their Conversion, and steady Adherence to the Christian Religion. Prays for their Continuance in it. Declares it to have ever been the gracious Purpose of God to bestow on them (the Believing Gentiles) the Blessings of Christ's Religion, as well as on the Jewish nation ; and Himself, the Apostle especially commissioned to preach it to them and the rest of the Gentile World.*

**I PAUL** an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, and Timotheus *our* brother,

2 To the saints and faithful brethren in Christ, which are at Colosse : Grace *be* unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 We give thanks to God, and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, praying always for you :

VOL. II.

**1. & 2. PAUL**, called by the express \* revelation of A. D. 62.  
\* Acts ix.

God to be an apostle of Jesus Christ, sending this epistle to the steady and faithful Christian church of Colosse. Wishing you all spiritual favours and blessings from God our supreme Creator and Father, and from Jesus Christ our Lord and Governor ; as does also Timothy my Christian brother.

3. & 4. Expressing my hearty thanks to God the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, for your conversion to his true religion, and your extensive charity to all the professors

A. D. 62.

4 Since we heard of your \* faith in Christ Jesus. and of the love *which ye have* to all the saints ;

5 For the hope which is laid up for you in heaven, whereof ye heard before in the word of the truth of the gospel ;

6 Which is come unto you, as *it is* in all the world, and bringeth forth fruit, as it *doth* also in you, since the day ye heard of it, and knew the grace of God in truth.

7 As ye also learned of Epaphras our dear fellow-servant, who is for you a faithful minister of Christ.

8 Who also declared unto us your love in the Spirit.

9 For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding :

10 That ye might walk worthy of the Lord

professors of it (without partial distinction between such as receive *circumcision*, and such as do not receive it) and ever praying for your perseverance in it.

5. & 6. Blessing God, I say, for the hope and full assurance you now have of the heavenly happiness promised in that gospel of Christ, which is now preached to so considerable a part of the *Gentile* world, and embraced by you in particular, with such good effects on your lives and principles, from your very first conversion to it by Epaphras my dear fellow-servant in Christ.

7. & 8. Whom I sent to Colosse for that work, and who like a trusty minister of Christ, has fully performed it ; and given me a most comfortable account of your love to Christ, and great charity to all his members, according to the true spirit of the gospel religion.

9 Since my hearing whereof, I have continually made it an article of my most hearty prayers, That God would give you a still larger knowledge of his true religion, and bestow on you greater gifts of his Holy Spirit for that purpose, and bring you to the perfect understanding of its spiritual and excellent nature.

10. That you may constantly improve in Christian principles, and in

---

\* Ver. 4. [Since we heard of your faith]—*τῆς πίστεως ὑμῶν*, your *fidelity* or *steadiness*, viz. to the *Christian* religion, without the observance of the *ceremonial law*.

Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God: A. D. 62.

11 Strengthened with all might according to his glorious power, unto all patience and long-suffering with joyfulness:

12 Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light:

13 Who hath delivered \* us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son.

subject to the power and delusions of the devil; and has made you members of the church of Christ, the Messiah, his dear and only Son.

14 In whom we have redemption through his blood, *even* the forgiveness of sins:

15 Who is the image of the invisible God, the first-born of every creature †.

the invisible *Father*, and was before all creatures, even the Lord and Governor of all things.

in all such practices as are truly pleasing and acceptable to God.

increasing in the knowledge of God:

11. And, by his great and powerful assistance, may suffer all the hardships your religion brings on you, not only with perfect patience; but with joy and satisfaction.

12 Giving all praise and glory to God the Father, for vouchsafing you, *Gentile* Christians, the promise of inheriting the happiness of *heaven*, and of glorified saints; as the *Jews* had formerly of the promised land of Canaan.

13. In order to which, he has now, by the revelation of the gospel-doctrine, delivered you \* from your heathenish state of darkness, ignorance, and vice; wherein you were so miserably

and delusions of the devil; and has made you members of the church of Christ, the Messiah, his dear and only Son.

14. By the sacrifice of whose death, *you* and all the *Gentile* world, as well as the *Jews*, are put into a state of pardon and eternal salvation.

15. And well may *his* death extend to an atonement for the sins of all mankind, who is the *Son of God*, the express image of

the invisible *Father*, and was before all creatures, even the Lord and Governor of all things.

H 2

16. & 17. For

---

\* *Delivered us*: Making *himself* as it were, one of the *Gentile* converts, as his usual method is. See Ephes. i. 2, 3.

† Ver. 15. (The first-born of every creature.) For the true *original* meaning of this phrase *πρωτότοκος*. See my note on Gen. xlix. 3.

A. D. 62. 16 For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are \* in earth, visible and invisible, whether *they be* thrones or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him.

17 And he is before all things, and by him all things consist.

18 And † he is the head of the body, the church; who is the beginning, the || first-born from the dead, that in all things he might have the pre-eminence.

re-ction to an immortal life, by him || *who is the Lord both of the dead and of the living*, Rom. xiv. 9.

19 For it pleased *the Father*, that in him should all fulness dwell;

things, and for the redemption, government and preservation of his *whole church*, viz. by uniting both *Jews and Gentiles* into one body under *him*, the great Saviour and Head of all.

16. & 17. For by *him* were all things created in \* heaven and earth, angels and archangels, all degrees of spirits *above*, as well as of men here *below*, even the whole visible and invisible world: before all which *he* had an existence with the *Father*, by whose power he created them all at first, and still governs and preserves them.

18. And † *this glorious Messiah* is now the Lord and *Head* of the *Christian church*, which has the noble privilege of being *his* spiritual body; and, by his resurrection from the dead, has given *us*, his members, the first and most absolute assurance of *our* resur-

19. It having pleased God the Father thus to invest him with the fulness of divine power and wisdom, for the creation of all

20. And

---

\* (In heaven and in earth.) See Ephes. i. 10. note there. Ephes. i. 20, 21, 22.

† *Αὐτός*, *He the same* emphatically.

|| *Πρωτότοκος* ἐκ τῶν νεκρῶν. (The first-born from the dead,) *i. e.* either is declared and proved to be the *Lord* and *Governor* of the church by his *resurrection*: Or else, The Lord that should *so first* rise from the dead as to give *others* a perfect assurance of *their* resurrection, according to Acts xxvi. 23. I have expressed both senses. See Ephes. i. 10 —20, 21, 22.



20 And (having made peace through the blood of his cross) by him to \* reconcile all things unto himself, by him, *I say*, whether they be things in earth or things in heaven.

21 And you that were sometime alienated, and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled,

22. In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and unblameable, and unproveable in his sight.

23 If † ye continue in the faith grounded and settled, and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, *and* which was preached to every creature which is under heaven, whereof I Paul am made a minister.

24 Who

20. And by his death upon the cross hath God procured the \* re-<sup>A. D. 62.</sup>concilement of both *Jews* and *Gentiles* to himself; giving to them all, peace and pardon through his merits; and intending, at last, to bring all good and obedient creatures, *men* on earth, and *angels* in heaven, into one blessed and happy society ||.

21. & 22. Thus you *Gentile* <sup>|| See Eph. i. 10.</sup>Christians of *Colosse* are now in a state of pardon and reconciliation with God, and made the pure and holy members of his church; even *you*, who in your *heathen* condition, were utter strangers to his covenant, and, by a habit of idolatrous and wicked courses, were at perfect enmity with him.

23. Which glorious privilege you will remember to be upon this condition, viz. your firm adherence, against all false insinuations, and under all persecutions, to the same gospel-doctrine you were first instructed in; and which is now offered to the whole *Gentile* world; as I Paul am divinely commissioned to preach and propagate it.

H 3

24. Who,

\* Ver. 20. [To reconcile all things unto himself]. Note, *This* sense of the word ἀποκαταλλάξαι, is indeed agreeable to the matter of the *Jews* and *Gentiles* being *reconciled* and brought together by Christ; [consonantly to the main scope of the epistle]; but not to that of *thrones*, *principalities*; viz. *angels* and *men* together. I think therefore, that in this verse it is to be most truly interpreted by the parallel phrase ἀνακεφαλαιώσασθαι, Ephes. i. 10. To *unite* or *sum up* all under his government.

† Ver. 23. [If ye continue]. εἴγε, either *if* ye continue, or *since* ye, &c.

A. D. 62. 24 Who now rejoice in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind of the \* afflictions of Christ in my flesh for his body's sake, which is the church,

son; for the sake of his body the church.

25 Whereof I am made a minister, according to the dispensation of God, which is given to me for you to fulfil the word of God:

26 Even the mystery which hath been hid from ages, and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints.

27 To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles,

24. Who, instead of being discouraged, do now glory and triumph in being a prisoner for preaching it to *you Gentiles*; whereby I show Christ to be a truly *suffering* Messiah, by his being still a sufferer in me his apostle, as he was once in his *own person*.

25. Of which church, particularly the *Gentile* part of it, I am (as I have frequently said) a *special* apostle, commissioned to preach its doctrines to *you*, and the rest of the world, in common with the *Jewish* nation.

26. & 27. A thing, indeed, that the former generations of men had little or no notion of, nor had the generality of the *Jewish* nation any understanding of what their own prophets had said about it; but is *now* most expressly and clearly declared to the *Christian* church, as agreeable to the many prophecies of the Old Testament, viz. that God would,

---

\* Ver. 24. [And fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ]; καὶ ἀνταναπληρῶ τὰ ὑστερήματα τοῦ θλιψέων τοῦ Χριστοῦ. Note, The sufferings or *afflictions* of Christ, are, either Christ's *own* sufferings, or those of *Christians* for *his* sake. St. Paul's *filling up*, &c. is not well expressed in our translation. The word is, I, *in my turn*, *fill up*, &c. ἀνταναπληρῶ, &c. i. e. As Christ suffered for *me*, so now (in my *turn*) I suffer for *him*. Or else, as I have exhorted *other Christians* to endure afflictions for Christ, so now I *myself* complete, as it were, that work, by my *own* suffering: The learned and judicious Dr. Clarke rightly also observes, that the phrase *fill up*, signifies the *accomplishment* of what remained to be *fulfilled* of those *prophecies* which foretold that, after the sufferings of Christ, his *servants* also should therein follow his example—for the good of his church. Serm. Vol. I. page 274, 275.

tiles, which is Christ in you, the hope of glory.

glory. eternal happiness, by Christ the *Messiah*, that the *Jewish* nation was to enjoy.

28 Whom we preach, warning every man. and teaching every man in all wisdom, that we may present \* every man perfect in Christ Jesus.

29 Whereunto I also labour, striving according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

would, in infinite mercy, bestow upon all *Gentile* believers, the same hopes and conditions of eter-

nal happiness, by Christ the *Messiah*, that the *Jewish*

28. Which comfortable doctrine I therefore preach to *all*, without distinction, in order to train them up to that spiritual wisdom, that will make them true and perfect members of his church\*.

29 Using my utmost endeavours in the improvement of all those powerful gifts and graces which Christ has endowed me with for that purpose.

A. D. 62.

## CHAP. II.

*He repeats his earnest Concern and Prayers for them; the better to warn them against the Error and Subtily of Heathen Philosophy, and the vanity of Jewish Traditions; encouraging them to depend upon Christ and his Religion alone, without any regard to the Jewish Ceremonies, or mixing any Part of Heathen Devotion with their Christian Worship; especially that of the Worship of Angels or inferior Demons, as Mediators to God, under a Pretence of Religious Humility.*


I FOR I would that ye knew what great conflict I have

1. **T**HUS, I say, ‡ I strive and labour to make all my converts become true and perfect Christians;

† Chap. i.

H 4

\* [Every man *perfect* in Jesus Christ]; i. e. either *perfect* in the understanding of Christianity *here*, or *crowned* with the reward *hereafter*, as the word *τελειος* often signifies.

A. D. 62  have for you, and for them at Laodicea, and for as many as have not seen my face in the flesh.

not personally seen *them*, nor they *me* ;

2 That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgment of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ.

3 In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

4 And this I say, lest any man should beguile you with enticing words.

† See Ver. 9, 10. *sinuations of some* †

5 For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, joying and behold-

Christians ; but for none more than *you*, and the *Laodiceans*, and all those *Gentile* Christians, whom I converted by other peoples ministry under me, but as yet have

2. Continually praying for their cheerful and unanimous progress in the true faith, and for their full and complete understanding, and free and public profession of all the gospel-doctrines ; particularly this great and unexpected point, *of the Gentiles being now called into the Christian covenant* ; as God and Christ have plainly declared it.

3. In whom \* are all the perfections of the divine wisdom, and by whom the will of God is perfectly and completely revealed to mankind.

4. And this perfection, both of the person and revelation of Christ, I the more carefully observe to you, to secure you from the ensnaring in-

† men, that lead you into principles that very much derogate from them both.

5. For though I be at such a distance from you, and indeed never saw you, yet, by the inspirations † of the Holy Spirit, I know the condition

---

\* *In whom*—it seems ambiguous, whether *ἐν ᾧ* refers to Christ, or the *mystery* in the forgoing verse : But the following verses, especially the 9th and 10th, make it most agreeable to understand it of Christ.

† [Am with you in the spirit.] *Τῷ πνεύματι σὺν ὑμῖν εἰμι*. It may be rendered, [My mind or heart is with you]. But the former sense is more agreeable to the general acceptation of this phrase in the New Testament. See Acts xx. 22. 1 Cor. v. 3. However, I thought fit to express them both.

beholding your order, and the stedfastness of your faith in Christ. A D. 62.  
} tions you are most liable to ; my  
 heart and my *authority* is with you, and I think upon your orderly behaviour, and constant adherence to the true faith, with great delight and satisfaction.

6. As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him :

7 Rooted and built up in him, and stablished in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving.

8 Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ :

nal and figurative things, that do not at all belong to the religion of Christ.

9 For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily.

his incarnation, sufferings, and exaltation into heaven, is demonstrated to be invested with all that *power* and \* *dominion* over the church of God, which qualifies him, and

6. & 7. And I now again exhort you, to keep close to the same rule of Christian doctrine, that Epaphras || first instructed || Chap. i. 7, 8.  
 you in. Build your hopes of pardon and happiness upon Christ and his religion only ; go on in that profession with a thankful heart, for the honour of being *his* disciples.

8. Taking special care, that neither the *Gentile philosophers* deceive, and make a prey of you, by mixing their vain *speculations* with your *Christian* principles ; nor the *Jewish zealots* persuade you to embrace their *traditions* and *ceremonial* observances, those mere external

9. You can have no reason to comply with *either* of these kinds of corruptions ; since Christ, by

---

\* Ver. 9. [Fulness of the Godhead]. Τὴς θεότητος of *power* and *dominion*. It is the same with his being made the *Head* or *Lord* over the church, as is most evident from chap. i. 15, 18, 19. which passages, compared with the 18, 19, and 20. verses of this chapter, will show the justness of the other part of my paraphrase on this verse. I understand the phrase *bodily* to signify Christ's *incarnation*, and his whole transaction for us in *our flesh*. But if the reader rather chooseth to understand it to signify *really* and *substantially*, in opposition to *figuratively* and *typically* agreeably to ver. 17]. it will make no alteration in the main sense given of the whole verse.

A. D. 62. and him *alone*, to be our mediator with the Supreme Father : And therefore by *him only*, and his intercession, ought we to offer up all our prayers and praises to him.

10 And we are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power.

and ranks of creatures whatever. (Compare John i. 14. 16, 17)."

11 In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh, by the circumcision of Christ :

and entitled to nobler and better *privileges*.

12 Buried with him in baptism, wherein also you are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

*you* the certainty of your *own* resurrection to glory and happiness ; by the same divine power that raised up *him* from the dead.

13 And you being dead in your sins, and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses,

14 Blot-

10. And you cannot but be absolutely safe, as to all the means of salvation, by *him*, who is the Lord and Governor of all degrees

11. And as *circumcision* was the external rite of admitting men into the *Jewish* religion, your *baptism* into Christ's profession, and the reformation of all your sinful principles and practices, make you, in a much higher and better sense, the members of God's true *church*, and better *privileges*.

12. For as your being plunged in water signifies your dying to all sin and vice, in conformity to Christ's death and burial ; so your certain belief and assurance of his *resurrection* (denoted by your *rising* again out of the water) gives

13. And this is now the privilege of you *Gentile*, as well as of the *Jewish* Christians, God having now reduced you from your heathenish and reprobate condition, and granted you the pardon of sin, and the hopes of eternal life by his religion ;

14 For

14 \* Blotting out the hand-writing of ordinances, that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross :

15 And † having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a show of them openly, triumphing over them in it.

16 Let no man therefore judge you in meat or in drink, or in respect of an holy day, or of the new-moon || or of the Sabbath *days*.

17 Which are a shadow of things to come, but the body is of Christ.

answered and ceased ; and in comparison of *his* religion, they are no more than the *shadow* is to the *substance*.

18. And

14. For he has now, by the death of Christ upon the cross for all mankind, cancelled and disannulled \* the obligation to all those *Jewish ceremonies* that made the difference between you and that people, and kept you at a distance from them. A. D. 62.

15. And by the same sufferings on the cross, has made Christ the conqueror of sin and Satan, depriving them of their former wicked power and influences over mankind, and leading them, as it were, captives in triumph †.

16. & 17. Wherefore, it is a vain thing for the Jewish zealots to condemn you Gentile converts, for not observing the Jewish festivals or || Sabbaths, and the ceremonial distinctions between clean and unclean meats. For the *ceremonies* of that law were nothing but figurative and temporary representations of *Christianity* ; in Christ they are all now perfectly

---

\* [Blotting out the hand-writing—nailing it to his cross.] An allusion to the two ancient ways of cancelling a bond or obligation ; viz. either by *crossing* the *writing*, or striking it through with a *nail*.

† Ver. 15, [And having spoiled principalities and powers, &c.] *Note*, I have expressed the meaning of this verse agreeably to the general sense of interpreters. That of the learned Mr. Peirce (who interprets the *principalities* and *powers* of the *good angels*) is very particular, but withal exceedingly curious, and worthy of consideration. Let the judicious reader judge for himself.

|| [Or of the Sabbath days—] Perhaps this is not meant of the *seventh day* sabbath, enjoined by the *moral* law ; but of the *festivals* appointed by the *ceremonial* law. Let the reader judge for himself.

A. D. 62.

18 Let no man † beguile you of your reward, in a voluntary humility, and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind:

God and Christ. Particularly that of addressing to angels, or inferior *demons*, as *mediators* and *intercessors* with God for mankind; under pretence of *humility*, in not addressing to God himself *immediately*. This is the effect of a proud conceit of human reason, that makes men venture to dive into, and determine those divine matters they have no notion of, nor warrant for.

19 And not holding the head, from which all the body by joints and bands having nourishment ministered, and knit together, increaseth ‡ with the increase of God.

of his body only receive all proper and full ‡ supplies, for their growth and progress in true religion.

20 Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ, from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances?

21 (Touch not, taste not, handle not:

18. And as you are to fence against these notions of the Jewish zealots, so take heed that none of the philosophers, either of the Gentiles, or of those Jews that borrow their philosophy from them, impose upon you, and endanger † your future happiness by any mixtures of false worship with that of

19. For to worship any such beings, as *intercessors* for us, is the highest disparagement to Christ, our only *Mediator* and all-sufficient *Intercessor*; who being the *Head* of his church, it is by him alone that we have access to God the Father; and from our union to *him* only, do all the members

20. & 21. As to the nicety of the *Jewish* zealots, about not touching any thing that has been offered to an *idol*; not tasting any forbidden meats, and not handling any *unclean* thing, &c. it is plain, that since the death and religion of Christ has freed you from them all,

---

† Ver. 18. [Let no man beguile you of your reward.] *καταρκεῖν*. Note, This word sometimes signifies to *judge* or *condemn*. If it be so taken here, the sense is the same as in ver. 16.

‡ [With the increase of God.] See the note on 2 Cor. viii. 1.



all, it would be the greatest folly imaginable for you to <sup>A. D. 62</sup> impose, or suffer others to come under, the slavery of such observances.

22 Which all are to perish with the using\*) after the commandments and doctrines of men.

22. And to impose them *now*, as absolutely necessary, upon so better authority than that of human *traditions*, is such an abuse\* as tends to corrupt and spoil the Christian faith.

23 Which things have indeed a show of wisdom in will-worship and humility, and neglecting of the body: not in any honour to the satisfying of the flesh.

fures and appetites. *pretence*; nor is there any thing of true religion in either of them, but the gratification of a carnal or Jewish mind.

23. Thus do they *both* equally err; the heathen *philosophers*, in pretending *angel*-worship to be a *religious* act of humanity and reverence; and the *Jewish* zealots in recommending their niceties about meats and drinks, &c. as a means to mortify our bodily pleasures and appetites. It is all *show*, *invention* and mere *pretence*; nor is there any thing of true religion in either of them, but the gratification of a *carnal* or *Jewish* mind.

## CHAP.

---

\* Ver. 22. [Which things are all to perish in the using.] The literal translation is, [Which things tend to corruption, by the abuse of them, according to the doctrines and commandments of men.] Or else thus, It is the *abuse* of these things, not the mere *use* of them, that tends to corrupt or *defile* a man. So referring the following clause, [after the doctrines and commandments of men,] to the foregoing verse; I think the latter is the more natural construction, (though the former be very good sense) agreeable to our Saviour's words, Matth. xv. 11. as interpreted by Grotius and Le Clerc. There is yet another way of rendering these words, *ὅτι ἐστὶ πάντα εἰς φθοράν τῇ ἀποχρήσει*. [All which things are, or were made to be consumed for our use.] Which is very consistent sense, if they be put into a *parenthesis* by themselves. The judicious reader is to choose for himself.

## C H A P. III.

*From the Consideration of the Happiness of a future State, now assured to them by their Christianity, the Apostle exhorts them to renounce all those vicious Practices they were subject to, in their Heathenish Condition; among which immoderate Anger, Revenge, and filthy Conversation were the chief. He shows them their great Obligation to Purity, Peaceableness, and Charity; and to an exact Observation of the relative Duties, notwithstanding any Differences of religious Principles, in the Persons so nearly related to each other.*

**A. D. 62. 1** IF ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God.

2 Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth.

ments, but to fix the main of your thoughts and endeavours after the happiness of heaven; where Christ your *Head* is now set, in the utmost degree of glory and majesty. And, for the same reason, do you *Jewish* Christians raise your minds above carnal and earthly *cere-*  
*monies*, and fix them upon *spiritual* and *heavenly* things.

3 For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God.

3. By your baptism into this religion, you profess yourselves dead to sin, and the world, and them to you. The life you are now to lead is purely *Christian*, and *Godlike*; and though your *future* happiness, consisting in the full enjoyment of God through Christ, be yet at a distance, and its glories invisible;

that

that ought by no means to slacken their endeavours. A. D. 62. God has it reserved \*, and laid up in store for you ; and you are sure to enjoy it.

4 When Christ who is our life shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory.

good Christians shall shine out with him, in perfect splendor and happiness.

5 Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth: fornication. uncleanness. inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness. which is idolatry :

6 For which things sake, the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience †.

7 In the † which ye also walked sometime, when ye lived in them. conversed among the world.

8 But now you also put off all these, anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth.

4. For the *present* life is a state of trial and duty ; the season for your *complete* reward is at the great appearance of Christ to *judgment*, when all sincere and

good Christians shall shine out with him, in perfect

5. In order, therefore, to qualify you for this glory, you must be careful to subdue the habits of all those carnal vices you were so addicted to in your heathen state ; all those lustful passions and † impure practices, you so freely indulged, in your course of idolatrous religion.

6. Such enormities as these all along have, and do still, bring down the heavy wrath of God upon the wicked and unreformed part of mankind.

7. And you *Gentile Christians*, of *Colosse* well know, how sad a share you have formerly had in the practice of them, when you *heathenish* and wicked part of the

8. But now you are converted to the pure and spiritual religion of the gospel, you must utterly renounce them ; and, in like manner, you must carefully reform that temper of furious anger, and bitter

\* Ver. 3. *Hid*, κρυπτός. *Hid* as *treasures* are said to be hid—*ibid.* with *Christ* in *God*. Compare John x. 28—30.

† Πλεονεξία, Ephes. iv. 19.—v. 5.

‡ Ἐν οἷς, Among which *children of disobedience*.

A. D. 62. bitter revenge, with all those reproachful || words and filthy expressions that flow from it.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds.

10 And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge, after the image of him that created him.

blest resemblance of God, after whose image you were at first created, and of Christ, who has reformed you to a new and happy life.

11 Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free: but Christ is all in all.

his pardon and salvation, that he becomes a Christian, and lives up to the precepts and faith of the gospel.

12 Put on therefore (as the elect of God, holy and beloved) bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, long-suffering:

ness, humility, meekness, and patient forbearance.

13 Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any; even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye.

9. & 10. With the same care must you forsake that wicked custom of lying to, and deceiving each other in your dealings and expressions. Which is a particular instance of that former course of life, you are engaged by your baptism to renounce, in order to live up to those rules of the gospel that will reduce you to a

11. In the profession of whose religion, God now makes no difference between Jew and Gentile; it matters not of what *country* or *parentage* any man be, whether he be *circumcised*, or *not*, a *free* man or a *slave*; it is sufficient for

12. Wherefore, being thus made members of the true church of God, make it your principal endeavour to be masters of those graces and virtuous dispositions, that become persons so highly privileged; such as mercifulness, kindness,

13. In all debates of right, between man and man, let the example of Christ, who forgave us all, excite you to bear with the infirmities, and to forgive the injuries of each other.

14. Let

14 And above all these things, put on charity, which is the bond of perfectness.

*second table*, the very bond of all perfect union and happy society, be your principal virtue, and become habitual to you.

15 And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which also we are called in one body: and be ye thankful.

another, look *all* up with a thankful heart to him, for his universal mercies toward you, in restoring you *all*, both *Jews* and *Gentiles*, to peace and reconciliation with him.

16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom, teaching and admonishing one another in psalms, and hymns, and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord\*.

your private families, most decently and religiously to sing *his* praises, in spiritual psalms and divine hymns; instead of those lewd and profane songs with which you were formerly wont to celebrate your *idolatrous* festivals.

17 And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, *do* all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him.

VOL. II.

14 Let *charity*, which consists in a tender regard for the good and welfare of others, and which is the sum of all the duties of the

15. Let that perfect spirit of peace, by which God intends to cement you all into one Christian society, be the rule and umpire to decide all controversies amongst you: and, instead of envying one

another, look *all* up with a thankful heart to him, for his universal mercies toward you, in restoring you *all*, both *Jews* and *Gentiles*, to peace and reconciliation with him.

16. Let the doctrine of the *gospel* be carefully studied, and freely communicated; let Christ be the frequent subject of your conversation with one another; that God may daily bestow on you more and more of the spirit of wisdom, and the true knowledge of his word; which will enable you in your Christian assemblies, or in

17. In fine, in all your words and actions, whether in public or private, have a careful and conscientious regard to the authority and commands of Christ, and the just limits of your Christian duty; offering up all your prayers and devout

\* Ver. 16. [Singing with grace, *ἐν χάριτι* with or by the (*spiritual*) gift, Ephes. v. 19, James v. 13.]

A. D. 62. **v**out praises to God the Father, through his mediation,  
 and for his sake.

18 Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.

19 Husbands love your wives, and be not bitter against them.

the *husband*, and the *husband* use all loving and tender carriage to the *wife*; whether they be both of the same *Christian* \* sentiments, or not.

20 Children, obey your parents in all things for this is well-pleasing unto the Lord.

21 Fathers, provoke not your children to *anger*, lest they be discouraged.

§ Sec Eph  
vi. 4:

to themselves, or from embracing the Christian religion, by the badness of their temper or example §.

22 Servants, obey in all things your masters according to the flesh: not with eyeservice, as men please, but in singleness of heart, fearing God:

23 And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the Lord, and not unto men:

24 Knowing, that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for ye serve the Lord Christ.

25 But

18. & 19. Let none of your *Christian* privileges, nor any differences in religious opinions, make any person think himself exempt from the perfect performance of *relative* and *civil* duties. Let the *wife* pay all due submission to

the *husband* use all loving and tender carriage to the *wife*; whether they be both of the same *Christian* \* sentiments, or not.

20. & 21. Let children and all young people obey their parents, in every lawful thing, as an essential duty of Christianity. And let all *Christian* parents be especially careful that, by no severe usage, they discourage their children, either from paying just obedience

to themselves, or from embracing the Christian religion, by the badness of their temper or example §.

22. Let such Christians as are *slaves* to *heathen* masters, serve them cheerfully and sincerely from a religious principle; carefully discharging their duty, and seeking their interest, as well out of their sight, as while they are under their inspection.

23. & 24. Remembering that a laborious and faithful service to an *earthly* master is in effect to serve Christ our great Lord, whose providence put you into that condition, and who will not fail to reward your patient submission to it, with an inheritance of eternal life.

25. And

---

\* See Pref. to the Ephesians, § 4. for St. Paul's full meaning in this and the following *relative* duties.

25 But he that doth wrong shall receive for the wrong which he hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

25. And let both master and servant consider, that whichever of them does wrong to the other, shall be justly and proportionably punished for it another day, by him who can have no partial regards to any man upon any account of his external circumstance in this world. A. D. 62.

## CHAP. IV.

*The first Verse concludes the Exhortations of the latter Part of the foregoing Chapter, and ought to have been joined to it. Then he exhorts them to constant Prayer for themselves, and for him their Gentile Apostle; to Discretion in their Behaviour towards Infidels, and to Prudence in their Words and Expressions to all Men. Salutations to and from several Christians. Orders this Epistle to be read to the Laodiceans, and theirs to be read by the Colossians. A Warning to Archippus. His own Salutation, and Conclusion.*

**I** MASTERS, give unto your servants that which is just and equal, knowing that ye also have a master in heaven\*.

**1. AND** as Christian slaves are obliged to be sincerely observant to even their *heathen* masters; so let all Christian masters be just, and kind toward their servants or slaves, be they of what religious principles soever†; remembering, they themselves have a heavenly Lord, that will reward and punish their behaviour as impartially as he will do that of the meanest servant. || Cap. iii. 22, &c.

I 2

2. AND

\* *Note*, This *first* verse does so evidently belong to, and conclude the *foregoing* chapter, that it is amazing it should here be put at the *beginning* of a chapter, which enters upon a quite different argument.

† See Pref. to the Ephesians, § 4.

A. D. 62. 2 Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thanksgiving:

to draw you from the true faith, be diligent, and constant in earnest prayer to God, for all needful blessings, and in thanksgivings for the mercies you have received.

3 Withal, praying also for us, that God would open unto us a \* door of utterance to speak the mystery of Christ, for which I am also in bonds:

4 That I may make it manifest, as I ought to speak.

5 Walk in wisdom toward them that are without †, redeeming the time.

circumspection, to avoid † the dangers their obstinacy and malice may expose you to.

6 Let your speech be alway with grace, seasoned with salt, that ye may know how ye ought to answer every man.

of them before *heathen* magistrates, in such a manner as may conduce to the credit of Christianity, and your own safety in these evil times.

7 All my state shall Tychicus declare unto you, *who is* a beloved brother, and a faithful minister, and fellow-servant in the Lord:

8 Whom

2. AND NOW, to conclude my exhortation to you all, as you have many difficulties to encounter, many adversaries that strive

3. & 4. In which devotions, let me, your apostle, have a continual share; beseeching God to assist and encourage me \* in preaching the gospel to the *Gentile* world: a thing so unexpected by them, and so violently opposed by the Jews, that I am now a prisoner for doing it.

5. Use the utmost discretion in your carriage toward infidel people; endeavouring as much as lawfully you may, by due cir-

6. Let all your discourses in company be mild and courteous, prudent and cautious, so as to answer every question, or objection against your religious principles, and stand any public examination

7. 8. & 9. As to my condition here, under my present confinement, of which I conclude you would gladly hear; I have, with this letter, sent Tychicus my beloved Christian brother, and faithful minister of Christ, and along with

\* [A door of utterance.] See 1 Cor. xvi. 9. the note there.

† See Ephes. v. 15, 16. And the LXX. in Dan. ii. 8.



8 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that he might know your estate, and comfort your hearts:

9 With Onesimus a faithful and beloved brother, who is one of you. They shall make known unto you all things which *are done* here.

10 Aristarchus, my fellow-prisoner, saluteth you. and Marcus siter's son to Barnabas (touching whom ye received commandments; if he come unto you, receive him.

11 And Jesus which is called Justus, who are of the circumcision. These only *are* my fellow-workers unto the kingdom of God which have been

12 Epaphras, who is one of you, a servant of Christ, saluteth you, always labouring frequently for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect and complete in all the will of God.

13 For I bear him record, that he hath zeal for you, and them that are in Laodicea, and them in Hierapolis.

14 Luke the beloved phyfician, and Demas greet you.

15 Salute the brethren which are in Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the church which is in his house.

16 And

with him Onesimus \*, a faithful member of your own church, on purpose to acquaint you with it, to give you a comfortable account of my circumstances; and to bring me word back how you all do.

10. Aristarchus, my fellow-prisoner, sends his hearty love to your church. And if Mark, nephew to Barnabas, comes to you, entertain him according to the directions you have formerly had about him.

11. Those two, and Justus, are the only *Jewish* converts that have assisted me here, in promoting the gospel, and comforted me under my confinement.

12. & 13. Epaphras, your good Christian teacher, who has a zealous love for your church, and is ever praying for your constancy and perfection in Christianity, salutes you.

14. So does Demas and Luke the beloved phyfician.

15. My hearty love to Christians of Laodicea, particularly to Nymphas and his Christian family.

I 3

16. And,

A. D. 62.  
See Epistle to Philemon.

A. D. 62. 16 And when this  
 { epistle is read amongst  
 you, cause that it be  
 read also in the church  
 of the Laodiceans;  
 and that ye likewise  
 read † the epistle from  
 Laodicea.

17 And say to Archippus, Take heed to the ministry which thou hast received in the Lord, that thou fulfil it.

18 The salutation by the hand of me, Paul. Remember my bonds. Grace be with you. Amen.

16. And, when this epistle has been communicated to all your own church, let it be read to the church of Laodicea, and let their † epistle be read to your church too.

17. Warn Archippus, from me, to mind the main duties of his Christian ministry, and not trouble himself, or other people, with needless controversies and disputes.

18. I here salute you, with my own hand-writing. Remember I am a prisoner for your sakes, and keep steady to my doctrine. The divine love and favour be with you. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to the Colossians, by Tychicus and Onesimus.

---

† [The epistle from *Laodicea*.] It is not known, for *certain*, what this epistle was. Dr. Mills and Dr. Whitby think it to have been St. Paul's Epistle to the Ephesians; (which they suppose in reality, to have been written to the Laodiceans.) See Dr. Mill. Prolegom. § 72, 73, &c. and Mr. Benson's Hist. of the first Propag. Gosp. Vol. II. Chap. 10. Sect. 8. Others take it for one written to the Laodiceans, which is now lost; as no doubt many other apostolical papers may be, without any derogation to the sacred canon; there being as many of them left and providentially preserved, as are abundantly sufficient for the end for which they were written.

---

A

P A R A P H R A S E

ON THE

FIRST AND SECOND EPISTLES  
OF ST. PAUL

TO THE

*T H E S S A L O N I A N S.*

---

THE PREFACE.

§ 1. **I**T is agreed on by the most exact chronologers, that there could not pass above a year, between the writing of these two epistles. That they were also written from the same *place*, viz. Corinth; and upon the same argument and occasion, appears by the concurrent suffrage of the best, both of ancient and modern authors. What the chief aim of them was, will be learned partly from the history of the Acts, relating to St. Paul's preaching to this church, and partly from the passages in the epistles themselves.

§ 2. Acts 17. We find St. Paul preaching in a *Jewish* synagogue at Thessalonica. The converts he then made, according to the account there given, consisted of some Jews, but mostly of Greeks, profelyted to their religion. But that some Gentiles also came in, before either of these epistles were sent, and made this, like most others, a church mixed up of both kinds of believers, seems clear from several expressions and advices peculiarly directed to Gentile converts, as in 1 Thess. i. 9. iv. 3, 5, 6.

§ 3. The violent opposition, and implacable malice wherewith the generality of the Jews of this place persecuted the apostle and his doctrine, we read in the forementioned chapter of the Acts. And the whole strain of these epistles, together with the time of their inditement, which was during his stay at Corinth, even in the same year he converted the Thessalonians, shows his design to have been, by an early care, to support and cherish his new Christians, under the furious attacks, and the false and malicious suggestions of those *Jewish* zealots.

§ 4. Those obstinate wretches, not contented to injure the *bodies* and *estates* of such of their brethren as had forsaken the *ceremonial law*, to profess the *Christian* faith, endeavoured to affright and terrify their *minds* also by continually sounding in their ears that confident assertion of theirs, *That none but a circumcised Israelite could have any share in the future happiness*; and consequently that all Christians that died without *circumcision*, were eternally lost. To this the apostle refers, 1 Epist. chap. iv. 13, to the end. And, whereas the prophetic writings had spoken much of *the great and terrible day of the Lord*, and the apostles themselves had frequently given notice of a dreadful *appearance of Christ to judgment*; this they understood of the temporal kingdom and conquests of their Messiah; affirming it to be near at hand, and that its greatest terrors were to light upon the head of such Christians as revolted from the *law* of Moses. On the contrary, the sounder Christians, according to St. Paul's doctrine, expected that judgment to fall on the obstinate Jews, and those false Christians that corrupted the gospel religion; though by a common prejudice they seem to have expected it to come sooner than they had any just grounds for. See 1 Epist. chap. 5,

chap. 5, and 2 Epist. chap. 2, wherein St. Paul seems plainly to include both the day of *final judgment*, and that of the destruction of the *Jewish nation*, under one and the same phrase of the *day of the Lord*; as our Saviour had before done under that of, the *day, or coming of the Son of Man*. Thus, keeping to the general terms of the prophetic scripture, without giving such open and distinct notices of that previous judgment upon Jerusalem, and the temple, which, to have then done, would most probably have exasperated the infidel part of that prejudiced people, into an untimely and incurable degree of rage and bitterness. So then, though the apostle's account of this matter was prudently couched in expressions of a latitude adapted to the times, and persons he wrote to; yet to them who knew his mind, and to us, who have seen the subsequent events so concurring and agreeable, the sum of what he says upon this point in these epistles, is clearly reducible to this; viz. That indeed there was a day of dreadful judgment and wondrous revolutions a coming, as both the *scriptures* and Christ himself hath foretold: but that neither the day of *universal doom* was any thing near at hand, nor even that of the destruction of the *Jewish nation* was to happen till some particular occurrences had passed; viz. That before the final judgment of the *whole world*, there would be great corruptions, by the violent abuse and impositions of temporal power, even by such as would, in several ages, be governors of *Christian churches*. This is the *grand apostacy*, or *falling-away*, or the *man of sin*, &c. in St. Paul, and the *ὁ ἀντίχριστος*, *The Antichrist*, in the most *eminent* sense of that phrase in St. John (1 John ii. 18, 22, 23.) And moreover, that God would in his due time, and in most terrible manner, scourge and punish all such arbitrary governors, and vile corrupters of the church of Christ. In like manner, the obstinate and infidel nation of the Jews were not to feel the fatal effects of divine wrath upon themselves, their *city* and *temple*, till, by their last and utmost rage against the *Christian* faith, by their persecuting its professors, and their seditious revolt from the *Roman* government, they had began the work of the *great Antichrist*, and might, in a *primary* sense, come under

under his title and character. And thus, as the destruction of *Jerusalem* is allowed by all judicious divines, to be described in expressions common to that of the *final judgment*, and to be a kind of type and emblem of it; so (I think) the *Jews*, and *heretics* spawned from them, were the *Antichrist already come*, the forerunners of that *great Antichrist*, to all whose most eminent characters the church of *Rome* has so undoubted a title. (See and compare Pref. to 1 Epist. John, and 1 John ii. 18, 22, 23, with 2 Peter chap. iii). See also my Parap. on the *Revelations*.

C H A P. I.

*The Title and Salutation. He expresth his Religious Joy and Satisfaction, at their embracing the Christian Faith, by his preaching to them; and their firm and exemplary Adherence to it, against the violent Usage they met with from the Jewish Adversaries.*

**I** PAUL and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of the Thessalonians, *which is in God the Father, and in the Lord Jesus Christ, grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ,*

2 We give thanks to God always for you all, making mention of you in our prayers,

3 Remembering without ceasing, your work of faith, and labour of love and patience of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ, in the sight of God, and our Father:

4 Knowing, brethren beloved, your election of God.

God has now made you converted *Gentiles* true members of the church of Christ, by your firm belief of its doctrines, and dutiful observance of its precepts.

**I.** PAUL, the apostle of Jesus A D. 52. Christ, sendeth this epistle to the church of *Thessalonica*, converted to the true religion of God the Father, and his Son Jesus Christ, wishing you all divine favours and blessings from them; as do also \* *Silvanus* (or *Silas*) and \* Timothy, who are now with me. \* See note on Phil. i. 3.

2. To let you know how much I bless and praise God for your conversion; and how mindful I am of you in the prayers I put up to him.

3. Religiously and thankfully remembering your steady faith in the gospel, your pious endeavours to promote it, out of pure love to God and to mankind; and the great patience wherewith you suffer for it, from the lively hopes you have in God through Jesus Christ.

4. These are my delightful thoughts, dear brethren, while I consider, and assure myself, that

5. Especially

A. D. 52. 5 For our gospel came not unto you in word only; but, also in power, and in the Holy Ghost, and in much assurance, as ye know what manner of men we were among you for your sake.

6 And ye became followers of us, and of the Lord, having received the word in much affliction, with joy of the Holy Ghost:

7 So that ye were ensamples to all that believe in Macedonia and Achaia.

8 For from you founded out the word of the Lord, not only in Macedonia and Achaia, but also in every place your faith to God-ward is spread abroad, so that we need not speak any thing.

9 For they themselves show of us, what manner of entering in we had unto you, and how ye turned to God from idols, to serve the living and true God;

¶ Acts, xvii.  
1.

10 And to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead, even Jesus, which delivered us from

5. Especially when I reflect upon myself, as the happy instrument of bringing you to it, by not only delivering its doctrines to you, but demonstrating and confirming the truth of them, by such miraculous powers and evidences of the Holy Ghost, as you know I did.


6. And were so entirely convinced by them as to imitate our great master Christ Jesus, in suffering for it with a most cheerful mind, assisted with the inward comforts of the Holy Spirit.

7. & 8. So that, as your *city* is the metropolis of *Macedonia*, your church has been the first and chief spring of the gospel-doctrine in the *Grecian* countries. And I need not say how celebrated and exemplary your Christian principles are become in all those parts.

9 For every one's mouth is full of it; friends and enemies acknowledge how ready and cheerful a reception you gave me at my first || preaching to you; and how effectually you were converted from *heathen* idolatry to the true *Christian* religion.

10. In full hope, and expectation of deliverance from that future punishment which will fall upon all wicked men; and of eternal happiness, at the great appearance



from the wrath to the grace of Jesus Christ the Son of God, our Redeemer and Saviour;  an assurance founded on the certainty of his resurrection from the dead.

## CHAP. II.

*He remembers them again of the Powerfulness and Sincerity of his Ministry amongst them; and of the good Effects it had on them. The Apostle's Readiness and Courage to preach to them, as their Gentile Apostle; and their Steadiness in his Doctrine, against all the Persecution of the Jews. The Obstinacy and Punishment of that People. St. Paul's Desire to visit the Thessalonians again, out of his great Affection for their Church.*

1 **FOR** yourselves, brethren, know our entrance in unto you, that it was not in vain.

2 But even after that we had suffered before, and were shamefully entreated, as ye know, at Philippi, we were bold in our God to speak unto you the gospel of God with much contention.

3 For our exhortation was not of deceit, nor of uncleanness, nor in guile:

4 But as we were allowed of God to be put

1. **THUS** complete \* is your \* Chap. i. conversion to Christianity; 5, &c. and well might it be so, considering with what powerful demonstrations my doctrine was attended.

2. And with what courage and resolution I preached it to your church, against all the furious opposition from the Jews; and after the many contemptuous abuses I had just before suffered for it, as you know, at Philippi †.

† Acts xvi  
12, &c.

3. & 4. And considering how free my arguments to you were of all sinister and selfish designs; void of all deceitful purposes to ingratiate myself with men, for the gratification of any sinful passions of

A. D. 52. put in trust with the gospel, even so we speak, not as pleasing men, but God, which trieth our hearts.

5 For neither at any time used we flattering words, as ye know, nor a cloke of covetousness, God is witness;

6 Nor of men sought we glory, neither of you, nor yet of others; when we might have been burthensome, as the apostles of Christ.

7 But we were gentle among you, even as a nurse cherisheth her children:

8 So being affectionately desirous of you, we were willing to have imparted unto you, not the gospel of God only, but also our own souls, because

9 For ye remember, brethren, our labour and travel: for labouring night and day, because we would not be chargeable unto any of you, we preached unto you the

10 Ye *are* witnesses, and God *also*, how holily, and justly, and unblameably we behaved ourselves among you that believe.

of my *own*; aiming at nothing but the faithful discharge of the great trust committed to me by God the searcher of hearts.

5. & 6. Who can testify how perfectly clear I was of all flattering expressions to promote my private interest; how far from seeking popular applause, or temporal profit; insomuch that I refused to be *maintained* by yours, and several other churches, though I could have claimed that privilege belonging to me as a Christian *apostle* and *minister*.

7. But, on the contrary, used you with the tenderness of a mother to her child, giving nourishment to you, but receiving none from you.

8. Thus affectionately desirous of your spiritual good, was I ready not only to preach the gospel to you of free-cost, but to die \* for you: so dear are you to me.

ye were dear unto us.

9. For you cannot but remember, that I and my companions wrought at our trades early and late, to maintain ourselves, and live without any contributions for preaching the gospel to you.

gospel of God.

10. God, and yourselves, can testify, what care I took to cut off all objections, from every sort of Christian converts, while we conversed among you.

11. & 12.

---

\* Our own soul, *τας ψυχας ἑαυτῶν*, my own life.

11 As you know how we exhorted, and comforted, and charged every one of you (as a father doth his children.)

12 That ye would walk worthy of God, who hath called you unto his kingdom and glory.

13 For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because when ye received the word of God which ye heard of us, ye received *it* not as the word of men, but (as it is in truth) the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that believe.

14 For ye, brethren, became followers of the churches of God, which in Judea are in Christ Jesus: for ye also have suffered like things of your own countrymen, even as they *have* of the Jews:

15 Who both killed the Lord Jesus and their own prophets, and have persecuted us: and they please not God, and are contrary to all men.

persecute us his disciples and followers; being a people that have very few true notions of religion themselves,  
and

11. & 12. And both by doctrine, <sup>A. D. 52.</sup> and example, treated you, as good and kind parents do their own children, encouraging you all to your duty, confirming you under your affliction, and charging you in the most earnest manner, to live in all respects worthy of this mighty favour of God, in making you members of Christ's kingdom and religion here, in order to your eternal glory hereafter.

13. I am now therefore constantly blessing and praising God for the happy effects of my endeavours upon you; that you entertained my doctrine, not as a well-laid scheme of *human philosophy*, but (what it really is) as the pure word and revelation of God, so powerful in its influences on the principles and practices of all that sincerely embrace it.

14. As yourselves are now a plain instance, who are persecuted by the *Jews* of *your* own country\*, as the Christians of Judea\* Acts xvii. are by *theirs*, for the sake of this<sup>s</sup> religion; and have courage to bear it patiently, after their example.

15. Being both of you persecuted by that obstinate and malicious people, that crucified Jesus Christ their own *Messiah*, as their forefathers, by the same wicked principles, slew their own prophets that foretold his coming; and so it is no wonder they still

A. D. 52. and yet proudly insult, contemn, and scorn all other people that are not of their own nation and persuasi

16 Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles, that they might be saved, to fill up their sins alway : for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost.

judice they are likely to fill up the measure of their iniquities, and become ripe for a complete and final destruction.

17 But we, brethren, being \* taken from you for a short time, in presence, not in heart, endeavoured the more abundantly to see your face with great desire.

18 Wherefore, we would have come unto you (even I Paul) once and again ; but Satan hindred us.

16 For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of rejoicing ? are not even ye in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at his coming ?

20 For ye are our glory and joy.

16. They are averse to us for preaching the gospel of salvation to the *Gentile* world ; utterly refusing to embrace the religion of Christ, unless they can engross all the mercies and privileges of it to themselves. By their incurable obstinacy, in which pride and pre-

17. But though, dear brethren, I am, by their malice, \* detained from you for the present ; be assured my heart is with you ; and my desires and resolution to visit your church again, are thereby only heightened and confirmed.

18. Do not therefore misinterpret my stay from you : For I had been with you long ago, had not these wicked instruments of Satan prevented me.

19. & 20. And believe me sincere in what I say ; for there is nothing I so much delight and rejoice in, nothing I expect so much glory from, at the great day of Christ's appearance to judgment, as from *you* my steady converts to his religion, and from the success of my great labours in converting you to it.

C H A P.

---

\* Ver. 17. [Taken from you,] ἀποφαινομένης—It is a most *emphatical* word, [Taken away, as a dying parent is from his orphan children]. See Acts xvii. 5—10.

CHAP. III.

*A Testimony of his great affliction for them, in sending Timothy to them, to know how they did, to comfort them under their Persecutions, and confirm their Christian Resolution. The Satisfaction he reaped from the good Account Timothy brought him of their Church. His Prayers for their final Perseverance.*

1. **W**herefore when we could no longer forbear, we thought it good to be left at Athens alone ; 2 And sent Timothy our brother and minister of God, and our fellow-labourer in the gospel of Christ, to establish you, and to comfort you concerning your faith ; 1. & 2. **T**HIS \* ardent and sincere affection for your church, put me under such dread and concern at the persecutions you were exposed to, from the malicious Jews, that I no sooner left you, and arrived at Athens, but I sent Timothy, that faithful and good minister of Christ, back again to you, to see how you did, to comfort and support you under your distresses. And though I much wanted his assistance there, yet I chose rather to be left only with Silas, amongst those proud || and contentious philosophers, than not serve you and hear from you. A. D. 52.  
\* Chap. ii.  
19, 20.  
Acts xvii.  
14, 15, 16.

3. That no man should be moved by these afflictions ; for yourselves know that we are appointed thereunto.

4 For verily when we were with you, we told you before, that we should suffer tribulation ; even as it came to pass, and ye know.

VOL. II.

3. 4. & 5. I sent him, therefore, for fear any of you should be discouraged from your profession ; and to remind you of what I had often told you, viz. That Christianity is, what you have found it to be, a state of trials and sufferings, and those so hard too, that I was under apprehensions the devil, by these his wicked instruments, might succeed in his attempts, and draw some

K

A. D. 52.

5 For this cause, when I could no longer forbear, I sent to know your faith, lest by some means the tempter have tempted you, and our labour be in vain.

6 But now when Timotheus came from you unto us, and brought us good tidings of your faith and charity, and that ye have good remembrance of us always, desiring greatly to see us, as we also to see you ;

7 Therefore, brethren, we are comforted over you in all our affliction and distress by your faith :

8 For now we live, if we stand fast in the Lord.

9 For what thanks can we render to God again for you for all the joy wherewith we joy for your sakes before our God,

10 Night and day praying exceedingly that we might see your face, and might perfect that which is lacking in your faith ?

11 Now God himself, and our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ direct our way unto you.

12 And the Lord make you to increase and abound in love  
one

some of you from the true faith, and so defeat my labours in your conversion.

6. & 7. But Timothy, at his return gave me so comfortable an account of your steadiness, constancy, and good affection to me, as made me easy under the worst afflictions that can befall me.

8. For your constancy to Christianity is the great comfort of my life.

9. & 10. Nor can I sufficiently bless and praise God for the satisfaction I reap at your conversion, and the progress you have made in the true religion. And am ever wishing and praying for another opportunity to see you again, and perfect those instructions which I could not fully complete, by reason of my short \* stay amongst you.

11. And may God our supreme Creator and Father, and Jesus Christ, our Redeemer and Governor, so order it that I may soon visit you for that end.

12. In the mean time, may he graciously assist all your pious dispositions to the same perfect love  
to

---

\* Acts xvii. 1. 10. and chap. iv. 13. of this epistle.

one towards another, to each other, and charity toward A. D. 52  
and towards all men, all mankind, that I myself bear  
even as we *do* towards toward *you*.

13 To the end he may establish your hearts unblameable in holiness before God, even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, with all his saints.

13. And may he preserve and confirm you in all holy and acceptable conversation, till the great and solemn appearance of our Lord Jesus Christ to reward you and all good Christians.

#### CHAP. IV.

*He warns the Gentile Converts of their Church against the Vices they had been most addicted to in their Heathenish Estate; particularly against Uncleannefs. An Encouragement to mutual Love and Charity, and to Industry in their Callings. A Consolation for the Death of their Christian Friends, from the Assurance of Christ's glorious Appearance, and our future Resurrection.*

1 FURTHERMORE then we beseech you, brethren, and exhort you by the Lord Jesus, that as ye have received of us how ye ought to walk, and to please God, so ye would abound more and more.

2 For ye know what commandments we gave you by the Lord Jesus.

3 For this is the will of God even your sancti-

1. & 2. THE sum of what I have now further to exhort you to is, carefully to follow and improve the directions for a holy and Christian life, as I gave you them from the doctrine and authority of Jesus Christ.

3. I must particularly remind you, *Gentile* converts, of that  
K 2 great

A. D. 52. sanctification, that ye should abstain from  
 || πορνεία. fornication : great duty of *purity* and *chastity*,  
 an abstinence from all kinds of  
 religion is especially designed to reform you *Gentile*  
 Christians from. *uncleanness* || ; which the gospel-

4 That every one of you should know how to possess his vessel in sanctification and honour :

5 Not in the lust of concupiscence, even as the Gentiles which know not God :

true God, would ever indulge themselves.

6 That *no man* go beyond and defraud his brother \* in *any* matter, because that the Lord is the avenger of all such : as we also have forewarned you, and testified.

common vices of the countries † you live in.

7. For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness.

8. He therefore that despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also given unto ‡ us his holy Spirit.

9 But

4. & 5. How indispensibly obliged you all now are to preserve your bodies in temperate and sober habits, dedicated to the service of God, and free of those lusts and passions that are a dishonour to them ; and in which none but ignorant *heathens*, that have no sense and knowledge of the

6. That none of you presume to violate the rights of his neighbour's bed, or abuse human nature in such lusts as are contrary to it \* : Sins that God will most severely punish, as I have formerly, with great earnestness, forewarned you, as against the com-

7. For nothing is so opposite to the *Christian* religion, the very purpose whereof is, to cleanse and reform you from such impurities.

8. Whoever of you, therefore, neglects or contemns this advice I give them from the very inspiration of the Holy Spirit, despiseth God himself, by whose inspiration and authority I act.

9. As

\* [In any matter,] ἐν τῷ πράγματι. [In such a wicked act ;] πρᾶγμα, in a bad sense being the same with *facinus* in the *Latin*.

† All historians are full of the luxury and debaucheries of the Grecians.

‡ Ver. 8. [Unto us his Holy Spirit.] Note, all Henry Stephen's MSS. and several others, read it εἰς ὑμᾶς, unto you : And then the



9 But as touching brotherly love, ye need not that I write unto you: for ye yourselves are\*taught of God to love one another.

10 And indeed ye do it towards all the brethren, which are in all Macedonia: but we beseech you, brethren, that ye increase more and more:

11 And that ye study to be quiet, and to do your own business, and to work with your own hands (as we commanded you:)

12 That ye may walk honestly toward them that are without, and that ye may have lack of nothing.

an idle and useless people, or be beholden for your livelihood to men of a contrary religion.

9. As to the great duty of *love* A. D. 52. and *unity*, I need not repeat my exhortations to you now, who are so truly sensible, from my former apostolical precepts, and from the example of Christ himself, how essential a duty of Christianity this is\*.

10. And I am convinced, how carefully you exercise it toward all the Christians you live amongst. And all I have to do is, to encourage you still further to it.

11. And to advise you all to an industrious and peaceable temper, to mind the duties of your several callings, and not intermiddle unnecessarily in what does not concern you.

12. Thus approving and showing yourselves to be men of a decent and orderly conversation in the eyes of *infidels*; so as not to be branded with the character of

K 3

13. I must

the sense is this, "God hath given you his Holy Spirit, on purpose to cleanse you from impurity, and reduce you to holiness of life; so that to neglect and despise the advice I now give, is to despise God, whose Spirit it is". Indeed the sense will be the same, if by *us* in this verse is meant, not *us* the *apostles*, but *Christians* in general, as in the verse foregoing.

\* Ver 9. [Taught of God]; *Θεο διδαντοι* — A most *emphatical* word—Not only *taught* by the *precepts*, but by the *example* of God and Christ. Their former *heathen deities* could never be truly supposed to teach them universal benevolence: for those gods are said to have quarrelled *amongst one another*.

A. D. 52. 13 But I would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleep, that ye sorrow \* not even as others which have no hope.

|| See the Pref. § 4. *that has no hope or prospect at all of it* || : whereby they endeavour to discourage your hopes of the good condition of all your Christian friends that have died in the faith of Christ.

14 For if we believe that Jesus died, and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus, will God bring with him.

enough to you, that at his second coming to judge the world, God will raise up and fully reward all his true disciples and followers.

15 For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, That we which are alive, and remain unto the coming of the Lord, shall not † prevent them which are asleep.

our Lord's appearance, shall not receive their happy change, and glorious reward, till all those that died in his true faith, be raised from their graves, to receive it along with them †.

13. I must also particularly arm you against the proud suggestions and pretences of the *Jewish zealots*, who would fright you into a belief, *That no uncircumcised person, or any that forsake the Jewish religion, can partake of the future happiness, any more than a heathen*

14. But be not terrified with such impudent and groundless assertions; for the full assurance you have of the actual death and resurrection of Jesus, your head and Saviour, is demonstration

15. And, for your further confirmation in this great truth, let me assure you of the following circumstances of this future judgment and resurrection, as I received them from Christ himself; viz. That those good Christians that shall be alive upon earth, at

16. For

---

\* Ver. 13. [That ye sorrow not even as others that have no hope], viz. of a *resurrection*. The apostle means to dissuade the Christians from using those excessive signs of sorrow, those howlings and lamentations over their dead friends, which the *heathens* were known to make.

† Ver. 15. [We which are alive shall not prevent them which are asleep]. Note, I have mentioned the *Jewish zealots* as the persons against whose insinuations this passage, from

16 For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the \* dead in Christ shall rise first.

all good and sincere

17 Then we which are alive, and remain, shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.

18 Wherefore comfort one another † with these words. of your departed friends, and your own happy state after death.

16. For Christ himself shall then, <sup>A. D. 52.</sup> in the most solemn and glorious manner, with a vast retinue of the holy angels, his heralds and ministers, descend from heaven, to summon all mankind to a final judgment; and the first thing then to be done will be, to raise

Christians from death \*.

\* Rev. xx,

17. And then those faithful <sup>5. 6.</sup> Christians that are *alive* at the re- <sup>1 Cor. xv. 23.</sup> surrection, shall undergo their blessed *change*; and so all together shall be taken up into the clouds, to meet their Saviour, and be carried with him into a blessed and eternal abode.

18. With these considerations, therefore †, fully satisfy and comfort one another, as to the condi-

K 4

C H A P.

from verse 13. to the end of the chapter, seems to be levelled. Yet I must confess it seems, probably, to have been spoken against the misunderstandings of some [Thessalonian Christians], concerning the expected [coming of Christ, the day of the Lord], which they took to be [near at hand], 2. Thes. ii. 2, 3. in which they seem to have been of opinion, that those who were then *alive* should enjoy a long and great happiness, before the *resurrection* of such Christians as were *dead*. Against this imagination, the several *phrases* of this passage are indeed very much adopted, especially this of the 15th verse—*We which are alive shall not prevent, & μη φθάσωμεν*, i. e. *shall have no advantage above, or shall not get the start of them which sleep*: So far from that, says the apostle, That [the dead in Christ shall rise first], ver. 16.

\* Ver. 16. [The dead in Christ shall rise first]. See Rev. xx. 4, 5, 6. with my paraph. and notes there, and upon the rest of that chapter.

† With these words, ἐν τοῖς λόγοις τέτοις, with these things,

## C H A P. V.

*The Apostle makes it needless for Christians to know the fixed Time of Christ's Judgment. Only observes to them the Suddenness and Terror of it to wicked Men. Exhorts them to such Care, and Purity of Conversation, as will prepare them for it, and render it joyful to them. Admonisheth them to pay due Value and respect to their Spiritual Governors. To the Exercise of Unity, Charity, Patience and Forgiveness; to Prayer and Thanksgiving: To a just Regard to Prophetic and Spiritual Endowments; to Discretion in entertaining, and Constancy in upholding the Truth. His Prayers, Salutations and Conclusion.*

A. D. 52. **B**UT of the times and the seasons: brethren, you have no need that I write unto you.

|| Matth.  
xxiv. 26.

2 For yourselves know perfectly, that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night.

1. **B**UT as to the particular *time* either of God's judgment upon the *Jewish* nation\* in particular, or of Christ's appearance to the great and *general* judgment of the world, there is no occasion for you to know, nor for me, if I could, || to acquaint you with it.

2. What you know of it already, is sufficient for the state you are in at present; to excite and engage you to prepare for it, viz. That (come when it will) it will be very sudden and terrible.

3. It

---

\* χρόνων και καιρῶν, the *times* and the *seasons*, in the *plural* number; respecting *both* the judgments mentioned in the paraphrase. The *one* was plainly hinted at chap. ii. and the other in the latter part of the foregoing chapter. See the Pref. § 4.

3 For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travel upon a woman with child: and they shall not escape.

3. It will be exceeding dreadful, A. D. 52. and surprising to all wicked and irreclaimable men; who, at a time when they are going on thoughtless, and secure in their unrepented impieties, shall find themselves unexpectedly seized upon by the most dismal and inevitable destruction.

4 But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief.

at, and unprepared for, that great day.

4. But *you*, dear brethren, being reclaimed from your former state of sin, and ignorance; unless by your own wilful neglect, are in no danger of being terrified

5 Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day; we are not of the night nor of darkness.

5. For by your admission into the *Christian* covenant, you have all the means of happiness, and salvation, which neither the obstinate Jew, nor infidel Heathen can enjoy.

6 Therefore let us not sleep as do others: but let us watch and be sober.

be active, temperate, sober, and vigilant in all instances of Christian duty; so as to be prepared for that appearance of our great Judge.

6. You must remember, therefore, how highly it concerns you to live a life quite different from either of those stupid people; to

7 For they that sleep, sleep in the night, and they that be drunken, are drunken in the night.

the best that can be expected in a state of ignorance, blindness and prejudice; but in a better and more enlightened condition, we are obliged to better and wiser courses.

7. For as night is the season wherein drunkards usually exercise their debaucheries, and sleep and inactivity possesseth us all; so a loose and unthoughtful life is the

8 But let us who are of the day, be sober, putting on the breast-plate of faith, and

8. Which is your case now, after your conversion to the *gospel*-religion. You must therefore now be watchful and industrious in all

A. D. 42. **and love, and for an** all holy living. Your faith in  
 { helmet, the hope of God, and his promises, your love  
 salvation. to him, and to all mankind, must  
 guard you, as the breast-plate does the soldier; and your  
 ardent and firm hopes of eternal happiness must, as the  
 helmet is to his head, be a security against the violent  
 assaults of the devil and wicked men.

9 For God hath  
 not appointed us to  
 wrath: but to obtain  
 salvation by our  
 LORD Jesus Christ.

9. Thus attending therefore to the  
 duties required of you, you may be  
 secure: this day of judgment will  
 be no day of terror, but of sal-  
 vation to *you*, by Jesus Christ.

10. Who died for  
 us, that whether we  
 wake or sleep, we  
 should live together  
 with him.

10. By virtue of whose death  
 and sufferings, all faithful and sin-  
 cere Christians are certain to live  
 eternally with him; let him come  
 at what time soever he will\*.

\* Matth.  
 xxiv 42.  
 Luke xii.  
 38.

11 Wherefore com-  
 fort yourselves toge-  
 ther, and edify one  
 another, even as also  
 ye do.

11. Go on therefore in con-  
 firming yourselves, and support-  
 ing one another, in your Christian  
 profession, by this comfortable as-  
 surance.

12 And we beseech  
 you brethren to know  
 them which labour a-  
 mong you, and are  
 over you in the Lord,  
 and admonish you;

12. & 13. And let me particu-  
 larly exhort you to pay all just  
 respect to the admonitions and  
 instructions of your spiritual go-  
 vernors: esteem them in propor-  
 tion to the dignity of their office,  
 and the exemplariness of their  
 lives; and live in unity and cha-  
 rity with one another.

13 And to esteem  
 them very highly in  
 love for their works  
 sake. *And* be at peace  
 among yourselves.

14 Now we exhort  
 you, brethren, warn  
 them that are unruly,  
 comfort the feeble-  
 minded, support the  
 weak, be patient to-  
 ward all men.

14. In order to which, be sure  
 to warn and advise all such as are  
 refractory to theirs and my orders.  
 Relieve and comfort such as are  
 hard pressed with afflictions and  
 persecutions; confirm and restore  
 such as labour under any doubts  
 and

and prejudices against our holy religion; and bear the infirmities of all sorts of men with an even and patient carriage. A. D. 52.

15 See that none render evil for evil unto any man; but ever follow that which is good, both among yourselves, and to all men.

15. Seek no revenge against such as have injured you; but be kind and forgiving to your fellow Christians, and even to your very persecutors.

16 Rejoice evermore, have in Christ, and in the blessings of his religion, be your inward joy and satisfaction.

16. In all conditions and circumstances, let the hopes you have in Christ, and in the blessings of his religion, be your inward joy and satisfaction.

17 Pray without ceasing.

17. Be diligent and constant in observing all proper seasons of devotion and prayer.

18 In every thing give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you.

18. For whatever mercies you receive, or whatever afflictions befall you, look up with a thankful heart to God, by whose good providence everything will be turned to your blessing and advantage.

19 Quench not the spirit. improve them in yourselves with diligence, modesty and prudence; and duly respect others that are qualified with them\*.

19. Have a just regard to all spiritual gifts and endowments, improve them in yourselves with diligence, modesty and prudence; and duly respect others that are qualified with them\*.

20 Despise not prophesyings.

20. 21. & 22. Though there are too many that vent their false

21 Prove all things: hold fast that which is good.

doctrines, under pretence of prophetic inspiration, yet remember,

22 Abstain from all appearance of evil.

that God has furnished his church with persons truly inspired. Do

not therefore neglect the one for the sake of the other; but examine and try them all, by the rule and standard of the Christian doctrine; keeping close to what you find, by that rule, to be sound and good; and renouncing every thing that upon due examination appears to be false and ill-designed.

\* 1 Cor. iii.

i, 3.

1 Cor. xiv.

1 Tim. iv.

14

† 1 John

iv. i.

A. D. 52. 23 And the very  
 { God of peace sanctify  
 you wholly: And I  
 pray God your whole  
 spirit and soul and  
 body be preserved  
 blameless unto the  
 coming of our Lord  
 Jesus Christ.

24 Faithful is he  
 that calleth you, who  
 also will do it.

gospel religion, will never fail to do *his* part, for your  
 attaining the final and eternal blessings of it.

\* Col. iv. 4. 25 Brethren, pray  
 for us.

26 Greet all the  
 brethren with an ho-  
 ly kiss.

27 I charge you  
 by the Lord, that this  
 epistle be read unto  
 all the holy brethren.

28 The grace of our  
 Lord Jesus Christ be  
 with you. Amen.

23. And may the God of peace  
 and comfort so prosper your en-  
 deavours, as to render you true  
 and perfect Christians, in the ex-  
 ercise of all the faculties and powers  
 both of mind and body; that so  
 you may be accepted of him as his  
 true and faithful servants, at the  
 great day of Christ's appearance.

24. Be fully assured that God,  
 who has been so gracious as to  
 call you into the privileges of the  
 gospel religion, will never fail to do *his* part, for your  
 attaining the final and eternal blessings of it.

25. Let *me*, dear brethren, your  
 special \* *apostle*, have a share in  
 Christian prayers.

26. Salute all the Christians in  
 your parts with your usual kiss of  
 charity, for my sake.

27. I charge you by the autho-  
 rity of Christ, to communicate  
 this epistle to your whole church.

28. The love and favour of  
 our Lord Jesus Christ be with  
 you all. Amen.



---

A

P A R A P H R A S E

ON THE

SECOND EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL

TO THE

T H E S S A L O N I A N S.

---

*See the Preface to the First Epistle.*

---

*The Persecutions of the Jewish Zealots against this Church still continuing and increasfing, and the Apostle being, beyond his Expectation, detained from paying them the Visit he had promised (1 Theff. ii. 17, 18. iii. 10, 11.) fends his Second Epistle to revive and back the Encouragements he had given them. He here expreffeth his Thankfulnefs to God for their inviolable Patience and steady Progreff in the Christian Faith. Strengthens their Courage and Hopes, from the Consideration of the happy Ends and Effects of their present Sufferings, the Vengeance that would light on their persecutors, and the glorious Reward they would reap at the great Day of God's Judgment, and Christ's solemn Appearance, to recompense all true Believers, and to vindicate the Honour of his holy Religion.*

1 PAUL and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of the Thessalonians, in

1. & 2. PAUL the apostle sendeth this second epistle to the church of Thessalonica, which, under all pressures and per-

Written A. D. 52. the latter end of the year.

perfe- }

**A. D. 52.** in God our Father,  
and the Lord Jesus  
Christ:

2 Grace unto you  
and peace from God  
our Father, and the  
Lord Jesus Christ.

3 We are bound to  
thank God always for  
you, brethren, as it  
is meet, because that  
your faith groweth  
exceedingly, and the  
charity of every one  
of you all toward each  
other aboundeth:

\* ὑπεραυξάνει.

4 So that we our-  
selves glory in you in  
the churches of God,  
for your patience and  
faith in all your per-  
secutions and tribula-  
tions that ye endure.

5 *Which* is a mani-  
fest token of the righ-  
teous judgment of  
God, that ye may be  
counted worthy of the  
kingdom of God, for  
which ye also suffer.

6 Seeing it is a  
righteous thing with  
God to recompense  
tribulation to them  
that trouble you:

persecutions that befall them, re-  
main still firm to the true religion  
of God the Father, and Jesus  
Christ our Lord and Governor:  
wishing you all divine favours  
and blessings from them; as do  
also \* Timothy and Silvanus (or  
Silas) who are now with me.

3. Expressing (as in duty and  
gratitude I am bound) my con-  
stant praises to God for the great,  
and even \* unexpected progress  
you have made in the Christian  
faith, under all the difficulties at-  
tending it, and for your enlarged  
charity and unanimity with each  
other.

4. Of which remarkable degree  
of faith producing such patience  
and courage, under what you suf-  
fer for your profession, I take no-  
tice, and triumphantly boast of,  
to all the Christian churches in  
these parts.

5. & 6. Such religious patience,  
whereby God has enabled you so  
perfectly to bear such hardships  
for his sake, and qualified you for  
the future glories of his kingdom,  
does at once fully vindicate the  
divine wisdom and justice, in call-  
ing you to these sufferings, and  
gives you a complete assurance  
how justly and fully he will, one  
day take vengeance on those that  
now so unjustly oppress you.

7, 8. & 9.

---

\* See note on Phil. i. 3.

7 And to you who are troubled, rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels,

8 In flaming fire, taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ.

9 Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction, from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power.

10 When he shall come to be glorified \* in his saints, and to be admired in all them that believe (because our testimony among you was believed) in that day.

adherence to my doctrine, shall have a particular and happy share.

11 Wherefore also we pray always for you, that our God would count you worthy of this calling, and fulfil all the good pleasure of *his* goodness, and the work of faith with power.

12 That

7. 8. & 9. It should highly satisfy you, I say, what a complete happiness *you* shall then share in with *us* the apostles and ministers of Christ; and how terrible shall be *their* punishment at the dreadful and amazing appearance of the Lord Jesus from heaven, who by his glorious and powerful presence, will strike all infidel and obstinate men into everlasting misery and destruction. A. D. 52.

10. Then will be the time when the divine wisdom, justice, and mercy, in the gospel dispensation, shall be fully displayed to, and admired by all good creatures, angels and \* men; especially by all true Christians. among whom *you*, for this firm and generous

adherence to my doctrine, shall have a particular and happy share.

11. To which purpose, I continually beg of God, so powerfully to assist you in all Christian faith and practice, as may render you truly qualified for those blessed ends of your conversion to his holy religion.

12. That

---

\* [In his saints.] Ἐν ταῖς ἀγίοις αὐτοῦ, *in, with, or by his saints.* It not being clear whether *saints* be the same with *believers*, or signifies the *heavenly spirits*, I have expressed both acceptations.

A. D. 52. 12 That the name of our Lord Jesus Christ may be glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of our God, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

12. That so Christ may be honoured and glorified by you, and you made happy in him, according to the wise and gracious design of his gospel.

## CHAP. II.

*He forewarns them from concluding, either from the confident Assertions of their Adversaries, or from any thing he had himself written or spoken to them, That the Time of Christ's Appearance to Judgment was near at hand. The divine Judgment upon Jerusalem and the Jewish Nation, was not to be fulfilled, till that obstinate People had by their last and utmost Malice against the Christian Religion, and their turbulent Rebellion against the Roman Government, ripened themselves for a final Destruction. Nor is the universal Judgment of the World to come, till after many and great Corruptions be brought into the Christian Church, by the arbitrary Impositions of temporal Power among its own Professors. This latter Event is the Great Apostacy \* or falling away. These powerful Corrupters of Christianity are the Man of Sin, in the most eminent Sense of that Phrase. The Apostle bleisseth God for the safe Condition the Thessalonians were in, by embracing the true Christian Faith; exhorting them to, and praying for their final Perseverance in it.*

\* See Pref.  
to 1 Epist.  
§ 4.

1 NOW we beseech you, brethren,  
by

1. & 2. THUS have I endeavour-  
ed to comfort and sup-  
port you under your afflictions,  
from

\* by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by † our gathering together unto him.

2 That ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter, as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand.

judgment must needs be just at hand; for such a false persuasion, when you see the expected event not to answer, would tend to shake you in your Christian principles, and tempt you to mistrust the truth of the whole gospel religion.

3 Let no man deceive you by any means: for *that day shall not come*, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition:

people by their last malice against Christianity, and their sedition against the Romans, be ripe for destruction. And before the *universal* judgment there will be introduced great corruptions of the Christian faith, in several ages of the church; a *great apostacy* from the pure truth, and practice, and worship of Christianity, by the

VOL. II.

L

arbitrary

from the consideration of the great day of *Christ's judgment* \*. But as you value the blessings you are to enjoy at his † glorious appearance, take heed that no confident assertions, nor pretended inspirations of the *Jewish zealots*, nor the misinterpretation of any thing I myself may have said or written ‡ to you upon that head, make you conclude the time of this

3. And, to prevent you from being so imposed upon, I now plainly tell you, that *Christ's judgment*, neither upon the *Jewish* nation in particular, nor upon the *whole world* in general, is yet near at hand. Jerusalem is not to be destroyed, till that wicked

A. D. 52.

\* Ver. 1. [By the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.] ὑπὲρ —[Concerning the coming, or as to the coming.] So Rom. ix. 27. Isaiah crieth ὑπὲρ τοῦ Ἰσραὴλ, [concerning Israel.] And 2 Cor. i. 6. [Our hope concerning you.] ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν. So in Philip. i. 7.

† Ver. 1. Ἡπισυναγωγῆς, [Our gathering together unto him] may signify either our being received by him at the last judgment, or our embracing of his religion and worship, as in Heb. x. 25. The former sense is most natural in this place.

‡ Chap. iv. 15. and ver. 2. of the First Epist.

A. D. 52. arbitrary and violent use of *temporal* power, even among its own pretended professors\*.

4 Who opposeth and exalteth himself above † all that is called God, or that is worshipped: so that he as god sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself that he is god.

4. Thus will the Christian religion be dealt by, from a set of haughty and impious men, pretending themselves to be the only true church and people of God; despising all other religious † principles beside their own, trampling upon all human government and authority, and setting up their own inventions and traditions against the plain word of God. Such will be the practice of the obstinate Jews and the heretical Christians, their followers, in *these* times: but much greater and wider will be these corruptions under the *grand apostacy* in the *Christian church* in after ages, by the violence of temporal power in religious matters, under its own pretended heads and governors. [Which *apostacy* in the *latter times* of the Christian church is so plainly foretold by the prophet Daniel.—Dan. xi. and xii. chapters.]

5. You

\* [That man of sin.] Some copies read τῆς ἀνομίας, [The man of rebellion, or the lawless man. So the Jews and those heretical Christians that were tainted with their notions, might truly be styled, both upon account of their impiety towards God, and their incurable proneness to resist their *temporal* powers that Providence had subjected them to. But most *eminently* such is that *Christian church* which takes upon her to excommunicate all Christian *princes*, and absolve their subjects from all allegiance to them that submit not to *her* arbitrary dictates and usurpations. See ver. 4.]

† [Against all that is called God, or σεβασμα, worship.] Respecting either all other different *religions*, or perhaps the *Roman Emperor* that affected to be *deified*, and was styled σεβαστος (*august*) or lastly, *magistrates* in general, who are called *gods* in scripture. It is not very easy to determine the particular sense, and therefore I have expressed them all. See also Le Clerc upon this place, and the learned Dr. Hen. More's *Mystery of Iniquity*, Book II. Chap. 17, 18. See my *Paraph.* and *Note* on Revel. xvii. 12, &c.

5 Remember ye not, that when I was yet with you, I told you these things?

5. You cannot but remember, <sup>A. D. 52.</sup> while I was preaching amongst you, I gave you some notices of this matter, though you now seem to have forgot it.

6 And now ye know what withholdeth, that he might be revealed in his time.

7 For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth, *will let*, until he be taken out of the way.

his strict eye over them, awes them as yet from openly attempting it, till after *his* death; when the troubles and disturbances of the *empire* will prompt them to it †. In like manner, while the government of all countries continues in the hands of none but *heathen* princes, there is no room for the grand *Christian apostacy* which is to come in after the emperors themselves turn Christians, and is to be carried on by the arbitrary use of *temporal* power in religious concerns, by *Christian* governors.

6. & 7. And you cannot but see a plain reason why this *apostacy* cannot break out *immediately*. The Jews indeed, for their part, begin already to show great inclinations to persecute the Christians, and rebel against the Romans; but that the many favours conferred on them by the present emperor \*; and, at the same time, \* Claudius.

† Josephus  
De Bel. Jud.  
Lib. VI.

8 And then shall that wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming:

ful and amazing will be the final punishment of those lawful *Christian* governors and corrupters of the true faith; *whom God will blast with the breath of his mouth*, according to the prophet's expression, Isaiah xi. 4. Compare Revelat. xvii. 12, 13, 14, with my Paraph. there.

8. When these things are past, *then* will be the time of God's severe judgment upon the wicked opposers and corrupters of his true religion. The Jews, their temple and city, shall, with a swift destruction, perish by the *Roman* army. But infinitely more dread-

A. D. 52. *9 Even him* whose coming is after the working of Satan, with all power and signs, and lying wonders,

*10* And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that

\* Josephus  
and Matth.  
xxiv. 24.  
and see  
Pref. to  
1 John,  
§ 4.

*11* And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie.

*12* That they all might be damned, who believe not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

destruction of a people, lost to all sense of truth and goodness, and devoted to falsehood and impiety †.

*13* But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren, beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation, through sanctification of the spirit, and belief of the truth.

*9. & 10.* Most exquisite and terrible will be the divine vengeance upon those people, that will give themselves up to diabolical arts, forged miracles, and lying prophecies; abandoned to the pernicious methods of fraud, violence and injustice; and averse to all the clearest evidences of true and saving religion\*.

*11. & 12.* For which irreclaimable corruptions, God, in just judgment will let them loose to the prevalent delusions of false prophets and pretenders, so that they will embrace the most absurd and foolish things, and run headlong into such desperate courses as must naturally end in the utter condemnation and destruction of a people, lost to all sense of truth and goodness, and devoted to falsehood and impiety †.

*13. & 14.* And, while I am thus representing to you the wretched fate of all such obstinate people, I cannot forbear to express my thankfulness to God, for *your* happy condition, dear brethren, who by your firm adherence to the gospel-religion, from the time it was first proposed to you, are now become the true church and people

---

† See all these predictions exactly fulfilled, with respect to the Jews, in Josephus of the *Jewish* wars. And they that would see the fullest and most accurate account of the *apostacy* spoken of here, and in other parts of scripture, may read Mr. Mede, Dr. Hen. More, and Sir Isaac Newton. From the works of which learned and great men any honest mind will see to *whom* all these characters principally belong. See my Paraph. on Revelat.



14 Whereunto he called you by our gospel to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.

15 Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and hold the traditions which ye have been taught, whether by word, or our epistle.

16 Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God even our Father, which hath loved us, and hath given us everlasting consolation, and good hope through grace,

17 Comfort your hearts, and stablish you in every good word and work.

ple of God, and are assured of all its glorious blessings and privileges, by the gifts and graces of the Holy Spirit; agreeably to the gracious purposes of God to mankind, by Jesus Christ. A. D. 52.

15. Continue therefore stedfast to the doctrines \* I have delivered to you, whether by word of mouth, or by these my letters. \* παρα-  
δόσεις.

16. & 17. And may God the Father, who out of his infinite love, has bestowed these gracious conditions, and sure hopes of eternal happiness, by the *gospel*-religion; and may Jesus Christ, who hath thus redeemed us, and purchased them for us, support you under all your persecution, and keep you stedfast to all the principles and practices of your holy profession.

### C H A P. III.

*He desires them to pray for his Deliverance from the Malice of the Jews, as he had prayed for them. Renews his Prayer for their Constancy and Patience. Exhorts them, by his own Example, to Industry in their worldly Employments, and to avoid Idleness. Not to suffer any Christians to live a lazy Life, but to censure them, and avoid their Conversation, in order to reclaim them from it. The Salutation and Conclusion.*

1 Finally, brethren, pray for us, that the word of the Lord may

1. **A**ND now, to conclude my exhortations to you; pray for me, brethren, as I have done  
L 3 for

A. D. 52. may have *free* course, and be glorified even as *it is* with you.

for *you*, beseeching God to give the same happy success to my Christian ministry, among other *Gentile* nations, that it has had in your church.

2 And that we may be delivered from unreasonable and wicked men: for all men have not faith.

2. Entreat God to prevent the malice, and blast the designs of those obstinate and unreasonable Jews, that thus oppose his gospel; of whom, God knows, there are too great a number.

3 But the Lord is faithful, who shall establish you, and keep you from evil.

3. & 4. But be their infidelity what it will, and their opposition never so strong. God will not be wanting to support you against all the bad effects of it: and I fully persuade myself that your own endeavours will be such as cannot fail, through his assistance, to keep you firm to the principles and practices I have taught you.

4 And we have confidence in the Lord touching you, that ye both do and will do the things which we command you.

5 And the Lord direct your hearts into the love of God, and into the \* patient waiting for Christ.

5. And may Christ so guide and confirm you in the love of God and the true religion, as to render you truly patient under your sufferings, after his great exam-

ple\*, and in hopes of his glorious appearance to deliver you from, and reward you for them.

6 Now we command you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye withdraw your

6. I must not forget to warn you, and that by the authority of Jesus Christ himself, not to suffer any Christian amongst you to live

---

\* [To the patient waiting for Christ,] *ἡς ὑπομονὴν τῆς Χρυσῆς*, *i. e.* Either to the same kind of *patience* wherewith Christ himself suffered; or else, [With the patient expectation of Christ's coming. I have expressed both senses.]

yourselfes from every brother that waketh disorderly, and not after the tradition which he received of us.

7 For yourselfes know how ye ought to follow us: for we behaved not ourselfes disorderly among you.

8 Neither did we eat any mans bread for nought: but wrought with labour and travail night and day, that we might not be chargeable unto any of you.

9 Not because we have no power, but to make ourselfes an ensample unto you to follow us.

10 For even when we were with you, this we commanded you, that if any would not work, neither should he eat.

11 For we hear that there are some which walk among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busy bodies.

12 Now them that are such we command, and exhort by our Lord Jesus Christ, that with quietness they work, and eat their own bread.

13 But

live an idle and slothful life, contrary to the expresse advices I gave you ||.

A. D. 52.  
|| Chap. iv.  
11 of 1st.  
Epist.

7. & 8. And to the example you know I myself set you, while I was preaching among you: earning my own living by constant and unwearied labour, at my trade; and taking nothing of any of your church toward my maintenance.

9. Not that I could not have claimed it as the privilege of my office, to be maintained by them I preach to, but I did it on purpose to encourage you all to a diligent and laborious life.

10. You remember also, I then gave a particular charge, that no Christian, that was able to work for his livelihood, should be maintained from the public charity.

11. And I repeat this to you, because I understand there are some of your church, that continue still guilty of this miscarriage, intruding themselves into matters that do not belong to them, instead of minding the proper business of their callings.

12. Wherefore, I now again expressly command all such persons, by the authority of our Lord Jesus Christ, to leave off that idle course, and live upon their own employments.

L 4

13. And

**A. D. 52.** 13 But ye brethren, be not weary in well doing.

\* Καλο-  
ποιῶντες.

14 And if any man obey not our word by this epistle, note that man, and have no company with him, that he may be ashamed.

15. Yet count him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother.

verities and discouragements, give them brotherly admonition and reproof,

16 Now the Lord of peace himself give you peace always, by all means. The Lord be with you all.

17 The salutation of Paul with mine own hand, which is the token in every epistle: so I write.

|| See Rom. xvi. 26.  
1 Cor. xvi. 31.

18 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

13. And do you all, dear brethren, go on in that commendable way of industry and diligence.

14. And whoever of those idle persons will not reform, and take warning by what I now say, set a mark upon them, shun their conversation, and make them ashamed of it.

15. I would not, however, have you utterly reject them like infidels, from your Christian society; but, along with your severities and discouragements, give them brotherly admonition and reproof, in order to reclaim them.

16. Now may God, the Author of our pardon, peace, and happiness, give you all the means of comfort and happiness, by his continual presence with you, and his providence over you.

17. I here salute you with my own || hand-writing, as a certain sign of the genuineness of my epistles, to all that know my hand.

18. The love and favour of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

---

A  
P A R A P H R A S E

ON THE  
FIRST AND SECOND EPISTLES OF  
ST. PAUL

TO  
T I M O T H Y.

---

THE PREFACE.

§ 1. **T**HOUGH the *place* whence the *first* of these Epistles was written, nor indeed the *time* be universally agreed on; yet one may most probably conclude the *latter*, with Bishop Pearson and Dr. Mill, to have been Anno Domini 65. about two years after St. Paul's *first* imprisonment and discharge at Rome. The chief design of them *both*, pursuant to his placing Timothy over the church of *Ephesus*, and those of the neighbouring *provinces*, appears plainly from the characters and false notions of the persons he describes; to suppress whose malicious corruptions, the directions here given are intended. St. Paul's Epistle to this very church of *Ephesus*, three years before, shows the *Jewish* zealots to have been the principle authors of the irregularities and disputes there. And, upon comparing *that* with *these*, to the bishop, either now actually *resident*, or at least in *commission* there, it seems natural to conclude, that this faction, which had got but little \* ground at the date of *that* Epistle, had, by this time, \* See Pref.  
made to the Ep.  
§ 2.

made such a progress, as to call for a vigorous and timely suppression: which the attentive reader will, I think, be confirmed in, by observing how exactly those characters here given, 1 Tim. iv. 6, 7. chap. iv. and 2 Tim. chap. iii. do agree to zealots for the *Mosaical ceremonies* and traditions; and how justly the several directions in these Epistles are levelled at the prejudices of a *Jewish* doctor, or a *Christian* still tainted with *Jewish* prejudices. Thus, *prayer for all men*, and *in every place* (1 Tim. ii.) are clearly opposed, the *one* to their contemptuous opinion of all other nations, and even *magistrates*, that were of a different extraction from themselves; the *other* to that fond notion, *That the public worship of the true God was absolutely confined to the Jewish temple and synagogues*. The same is to be said of the nice distinction of *meats and drinks* (1 Tim. iv.) and of the obligation of *servants or slaves*, || to heathen as well as *Christian masters*, (1 Tim. vi). To omit several others.

¶ Pref. to  
the Ephes.

§ 4.

§ 2. These are the people, and these the errors the reader will find to have been the occasion, not only of *these*, but indeed of most (not to say all) of the *epistolary* writings. And whatever of the earliest heretics, *viz. Nicolaitans, Carpocratians, Corinthians, Ebionites, &c.* (For Dr. Hammond's Gnostics were not yet formed into a distinct sect, at least not so numerous as to infect *every church*) may be affirmed by the ancients, or supposed by the moderns, to have been here, or in other Epistles referred to; it will be sufficient to answer, that even *their* heresies were made up of a *Jewish* medley, and the *heretics* themselves were, either of *Jewish* extraction, or set up upon pretence of zeal for *Jewish ceremonies and traditions*.

§ 3. As to the *second* of these Epistles, it need only to be observed, that the most accurate chronologers place it two years after the former, and from several expressions in it, agree it to have been dated from *Rome*, during the apostle's *second* confinement under *Nero*, and not long before his martyrdom there. The substance of it is clearly of a piece with the *first*; the prevailing errors, above-mentioned, calling yet for fresh advices, and encouragements to *Timothy*, who was sent to suppress them.

C H A P.

## CHAP. I.

*The Title and Salutation. He reminds Timothy of the good End for which he left him at Ephesus; viz. To reduce those Converts, who, by the insinuations of the Jewish Zealots, were intermixing Jewish Doctrines and Traditions with the Christian Faith; and raising warm Disputes about Insignificant Matters. Moral Commands of it still perfectly consistent with it, and promotive of it. The Apostle's humble and grateful Sense of the Mercy of his Conversion, and the Honour of his Christian Ministry. His Conversion, a great and Encouraging Example of Divine Favour to all true Penitent Believers, whether Gentiles or Jews. Reminds Timothy of his Call to the Ministry, and exhorts him to the conscientious discharge of it: Warning him, by the Instances of such as he had severely chastised, for their Insolence and Immoralities.*

**1** PAUL an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the commandment of \* God our Saviour, and Lord Jesus Christ, which is our hope;

2 Unto Timothy my own son in the faith: grace, mercy and peace from God our Father, and Jesus Christ our Lord.

3 As

**1. & 2.** PAUL an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the express || revelation of God our Saviour \*, and of Jesus Christ our Lord and Governor, the Author of all our hopes of glory and happiness, sendeth this epistle to Timothy, whom I converted, and begat to Christianity; wishing him all divine favour and happiness from God our Supreme Father, and Jesus Christ our Lord.

Written  
A. D. 65.  
|| Acts ix.

3. & 4. To

\* [God our Saviour]; some good copies read *ναὶ σωτῆρα ἡμῶν Ἰ. ὁ Χρῆστος*. [And Jesus Christ our Saviour].

**A. D. 65.** 3 As I besought thee to abide still at Ephesus, when I went into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge some that they teach no other doctrine;

4 Neither give head to fables, and endless genealogies which minister questions, rather than \* edifying, which is in faith: *so do.*

5 Now the end of the † commandment is charity, out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned.

*neighbour*; from a principle of pure conscience, and a firm belief of its *moral* doctrines and precepts.

6 From which some having swerved, have turned aside unto vain jangling.

6. And it is the neglect of this main thing that has turned the heads of them and their *Jewish* teachers to these frivolous disputes, about *traditions* and *pedigrees*; things that are full of uncertainties, and void of all advantage to true religion.

3. & 4. To remind you of the end and design for which I left you at *Ephesus*, viz. To correct and reform several of the *Jewish* converts in that city and the neighbouring parts; to bring them off from mixing their *Jewish* notions with the \* *Christian* faith; from the value they set upon their groundless *traditions*, and their frivolous and endless disputes about their *pedigrees* and descent from the *patriarchs*; to the great neglect of their *Christian* faith and practice.

5. For true religion, especially that of the *gospel*, consists in none of these impertinent matters: The grand design of it, and of our † preaching it, being to bring men to the true love of God and their

7. They

---

\* Ver. 4. [Rather than edifying]. It should be rendered, *μᾶλλον ἢ οἰκονομίαν θεῶν τὴν ἐν πίστει*. [Which teach men questions, but not the true dispensation of the *gospel*]. For all MSS. read it *οἰκονομίαν*, not *οἰκοδομίαν*. See Dr. Mill.

† Ver. 5. [The end of the commandment]—Or *τῆς παραγγελίας*, [of our preaching]. I have expressed *both* senses. But perhaps the strict meaning of this word is to be taken from Ver. 3. where St. Paul says. [I besought thee still to abide at Ephesus, *ὅνα παραγγείλῃς*, that thou mightest charge or warn some, &c.]—Now he says, *the end of this παραγγελίας*, charge or caution, is charity, &c.



7 Desiring to be teachers of the law, understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm. have any certainty of talk of.

8 But we know that the law is good, if a man use it lawfully.

9 Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly, and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers, and murderers of mothers, for manslayers,

10 For whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankind, for men-stealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine,

11. And

7. They set up for doctors, and expounders of the *Jewish* law; but understand little of the true scope, and ultimate design of the law they are so zealous for; nor the traditions they so confidently

A. D. 65.

8. 9. & 10. And whereas they represent us as contemners of the *Mosaic* law in general; it is an ignorant and false suggestion. For we *Christians* allow that religion to have been a wise and good dispensation; even the *ceremonials* of it to have had their good purposes; viz. To be figurative representations of Christ, and his more perfect religion, and then to cease; and not to be of essential and perpetual obligation\*, as they vainly imagine, contrary to the very design of such kind of institutions. And as to the more substantial part of it, viz the *moral* law, that we hold to be perfect and good, and still to remain so: But then, we affirm, that law does in no instance condemn a good Christian (as they would per-

δικαιος  
νομισται.

\* [If a man use it lawfully,] νομιμως, i. e. according to the nature and design of the *Jewish* ceremonial law, viz. not esteeming that to be of the same necessity and eternal obligation with *moral*; and condemning all people as apostates from the one, because they do not think the same of the other, as those *Judaizing Christians* do.

A. D. 65.

11 According to the glorious gospel of the blessed God, which was committed to my trust,

office with which God has been pleased to intrust me.

12 And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, who hath enabled me, for that he counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry;

13 Who was before a blasphemer, and a persecutor, and injurious. But I obtained mercy, because I did it ignorantly in unbelief.

it, not against the *known* dictates of my conscience, but from the fury of misguided zeal and prejudice †.

† See Acts xxvi. 9, 3.  
17, 13, 27.

14 And the grace of our Lord was exceeding abundant, with faith, and love which is in Christ Jesus.

15 This is a faithful \* saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners, of whom I am chief.

† Ver. 4.  
6, 7.

Christ's incarnation and sufferings for the salvation of sinful

11. And, you know, I have always represented the pure and glorious dispensation of the gospel, as destructive of all vice and wickedness: agreeable to the ministerial

12. And I bless and magnify God, for the great favour of esteeming me worthy of it, and qualifying me for a faithful and sufficient discharge of it by his gifts and graces bestowed on me.

13. On *me*, I say, who, for my former rage and blasphemy expressed against Christ and all his professors, did least deserve such a favour. But God had compassion on me, as knowing I did

it, not against the *known* dictates of my conscience, but from the fury of misguided zeal and prejudice †.

14. Which eminent degree of divine favour, I have endeavoured, to improve into a perfect faith in Jesus Christ, and a zealous love for the promotion of his true religion.

15. While, therefore, the *Jewish* disputes †, about *traditions* and pedigrees, are built upon nothing but vanity and uncertainty; our *Christian* religion is founded in this undoubted *truth*\*, this great and comfortable *fact*, of Jesus

\* Ver. 15. [A faithful saying,] πιστός ὁ λόγος, [a true thing:] For λόγος is the same דבר in the Hebrew, signifying *things* or *facts* as well as *words*. And πιστός *faithful*, signifies being truly or faithfully *represented*, agreeably to the πίστις, the faith or religion of the *gospel*. So *to be found faithful*, is to preach the *gospel truly and faithfully*, in opposition to the *errors* and *misrepresentations* of others.

sinful mankind, whereof I myself am a most signal ex-<sup>A. D. 65.</sup> ample. And if the pardoning mercy of the *gospel* be extended to so remarkable an offender, to so notorious a persecutor of the truth as *I* have been; why should it be thought to be denied to the repenting *Gentiles*?

16 Howbeit, for this cause I obtained mercy, that in me first Jesus Christ might show forth all long-suffering, for a pattern to them which should hereafter believe on him to life everlasting.

17 Now unto the \*king eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen.

18 This charge I commit unto thee, son Timothy, according to the prophecies which went before on thee, that thou by them mightest war a good warfare.

very high trust indeed! take care, therefore, to answer those prophetic characters given of you, by a due and conscientious discharge of it.

19 Holding faith and a good conscience, which some having put away, concerning faith have made shipwreck.

16. And certainly God has been pleased, by this great instance of his mercy toward *me*, to show all true penitent believers, of *every* nation, how ready and graciously willing he is to accept and reward them with eternal life, upon their sincere profession of Christ's religion.

17. For which, may all honour and glory be for ever ascribed to God the eternal, invisible, and all-wise Governor of the world, and all the several dispensations \* of it.

18. Of this excellent and admirable religion, my dear convert Timothy, have I ordained you a *minister*, and now constituted you *bishop* over the churches I left you in, as a person marked out by the predictions of the Holy Spirit for that office. A

19. By studying, and firmly adhering to the *Christian* faith, and adorning and confirming that faith by a conscientious practice, considering how much a disagreeable and impure life will endanger and corrupt the best principles.

20. As

---

\* The King Eternal, or βασιλεὶ τῶν αἰώνων, the ruler of the ages, or dispensations.

A. D. 65.  
 || 2 Tim.  
 ii. 17. iv.  
 14.

20 Of whom is Hymeneus and Alexander, whom I have delivered unto Satan, that they may learn not to blaspheme.

† 1 Cor. v.  
 5.

20. As may be seen in the particular instance of Hymeneus || and Alexander, whom for venting their notorious errors, and opposing the doctrine I preach, I have now excommunicated from the Christian church, and delivered up to Satan; till by a sufficient punishment, both of mind and † body, they be brought to repentance and reformation.

## C H A P. II.

*Directions to Timothy for the Management of his Church. Prayers to be made for Heathen Governors, and Gentile People, as well as Christian; it being the gracious Design of God to give them all the Offers of the Gospel Covenant and Privileges, without distinction. Christ the Saviour, and God the Creator and Governor both of Jew and Gentile. The Apostle declares himself a Preacher to both. Public Prayer and Worship to be no longer confined to the Jewish Temple and Synagogue, but to be performed in the Christian Assemblies of every Nation, with Reverence and Regularity, Charity and Faith. Women enjoined to appear at the Public Assemblies in a decent Garb, with Modesty, Silence, and Subjection, according to the Original Laws of the Creation, and the Circumstances of the first Transgression. Marriage and Child-bearing no way impure and inconsistent with true and saving Religion, as some of the Jewish Zealots pretended. Chastity and sobriety the special Duty of Christian Women.*

1 I Exhort, therefore, that first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks be made for all men:

1. TO come now to the particular directions I am to give you, for the due discharge of your office. And first, let the public devotions of *Christians* be, not like those of *Jewish zealots*, put

put up only for *themselves*, and those of their *own* nation and religion; but let all *mankind* have a share in each part of your prayers; *viz.* In your *deprecations* for averting divine judgments; in your *petitions* for spiritual and temporal blessings; in your *intercessions* for the pardon and salvation of others; and in your *thanksgivings* for mercies already received. A. D. 65.

2 For kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty.

2. And, as temporal governors and magistrates, whether they be of the true \* religion, or no, are \* See Rom. still the ministers of God, for the good of the communities they govern, let the *emperor*, and all officers under him be the special subject of your prayers, beseeching God for a blessing upon their administration, and to incline their minds to give you a quiet and peaceable enjoyment of your *Christian* profession.

3 For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour:

3. For, whatever prejudices those *zealots* have against *heathen* governors; the *Christian* religion makes no alteration in *civil* constitutions, but obliges us to pray for their prosperity, and obey their just laws.

4 Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.

4. Thus extensive ought our *Christian* prayers to be; since God never intended to exclude any part of mankind from his providence and protection; but especially not from the mercies of the *Christian* covenant; but is desirous to have *all* nations enjoy them, upon their acceptance of the faith, and obedience to the precepts of the *gospel*.

5 For *there is* one God, and one Mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus:

6 Who gave himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time.

5. & 6. For, as God is equally the Creator and Governor † both of Gentiles and Jews, so has he given his Son Jesus Christ as a Saviour and intercessor for them *all*, without distinction. And Christ has, now in the gospel-dispensation, as freely offered up, and demonstrated himself a sacrifice and expiation for the sins of all mankind. † Rom. ii. 29, 30.

7 Where-

VOL. II.

M

7. Of

A. D. 65. 7 Wherunto I am  
 { ordained a preacher  
 and an apostle, (I  
 speak the truth in  
 Christ, *and* lie not) a  
 teacher of the Gen-  
 tiles in faith and ve-  
 rity\*.

8 And I will there-  
 fore that men pray  
 every where, lifting  
 up holy hands, with-  
 out wrath and doubt-  
 ing:

† διαλο- I order, therefore, that *every*  
 γισμῶ. congregation of *Christian* people, whether *Gentile* or  
*Jewish*, in what country, or place soever, perform their  
 public worship of God, through Christ; assuring them,  
 it will not fail of acceptance, if it be done with true  
 reverence and piety towards God, with charity and for-  
 giveness toward mankind, and without animosities † and  
 contentions among themselves. See Mal. i. 2. John iv.  
 21—24.

9 In like manner  
 also, that women adorn  
 themselves in modest  
 apparel, with shame-  
 facedness and sobriety:  
 not with broidered  
 hair, or gold, or pearls,

10 But (which be-  
 cometh women pro-  
 fessing godliness) with  
 good works.

11 Let the women  
 learn in silence with  
 all subjection.

12 But I suffer not  
 a woman to teach, nor  
 to

7. Of which merciful dispen-  
 sation *I* am appointed a preacher,  
 expressly commissioned to declare  
 and offer it to the *Gentile* world;  
 which, whatever those *Jewish*  
 zealots may think of it, is as cer-  
 tainly true \* as the *Christian* re-  
 ligion itself is.

8. Wherefore, though the pub-  
 lic worship of the true God has  
 hitherto, for a long time, been  
 truly performed only in the *Jew-  
 ish* temple and synagogues; yet  
 was it not intended to be *absolutely*

confined to those places. I order, therefore, that *every*  
 congregation of *Christian* people, whether *Gentile* or  
*Jewish*, in what country, or place soever, perform their  
 public worship of God, through Christ; assuring them,  
 it will not fail of acceptance, if it be done with true  
 reverence and piety towards God, with charity and for-  
 giveness toward mankind, and without animosities † and  
 contentions among themselves. See Mal. i. 2. John iv.  
 21—24.

9. Let all *Christian women* ap-  
 pear in the congregation, in a de-  
 cent and modest dress; and not set  
 themselves out in a gaudy, costly,  
 and captivating manner.

10. But let them esteem *virtue*  
 and *modesty* to be the proper or-  
 naments of *Christian* women.

11. & 12. And let them be sure  
 to be grave and silent in the church  
 assemblies: For I cannot permit a  
*woman* to be a public *preacher*;  
*that* being the proper office of the  
 superior

\* I speak the truth in Christ, ἀληθειῶν ἐν Χριστῷ, *Christian*  
 truth. See Rom. ix. 1. *Ibid.* In faith and verity ἐν πίστει  
 καὶ ἀληθείᾳ, in the true faith.

to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence.

superior † sex, and for *them* to do it, is to usurp upon the laws of the creation. (Gen. iii. 16.) A. D. 65.  
† 1 Cor. xiv. 34.

13 For Adam was first formed, then Eve. him, and being made as a help and assistant to him, bespeaks her duty of modesty and subjection §.

13. For the *man* being first created, and the *woman* taken out of him, and being made as a help and assistant to him, bespeaks her duty of modesty and subjection §.

§ 1 Cor. xi.

14. And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived, was in the transgression.

14. And beside, Eve being first deceived by the tempter, and drawing her husband into a transgression of the divine law, she and all her female posterity were

expressly and justly sentenced to an obedience and subjection to *mankind*; as a wise punishment for the ill use of her influence over Adam.

15 Notwithstanding she shall be saved in child bearing, if they continue in faith and charity, and holiness with sobriety.

15. But whereas some of the *new teachers* endeavour to decry the state of matrimony and child-bearing, as an impure thing\*, inconsistent with true religion; let not that frighten the most virtuous

women from it. Marriage and child-bearing are perfectly consistent with the gospel terms of salvation, and no breach of Christian purity. All that I require of Christian women is, to keep close to their Christian profession, and to remember, that *chastity* and *temperance*, and a freedom from all *unlawful* desires and pleasures are the special duties of their *sex*.

M 2

CHAP.

---

\* [She shall be saved in child-bearing.] Διὰ τῆς τεκνογονίας, in the *state of marriage* and *child-bearing*, as well as in that of *virginity*. Τεκνογονία, the same as παιδοποιία and παιδοποίησις in the *classics*. By comparing the verse with chap. iv. 3.—v. 10. 14. Heb. xiii. 4. I take the paraphrase to contain the true meaning of it, without any respect either to the *education* of children, or the *pains* of bringing them forth. Each of which senses are attended with difficulties that I humbly conceive are taken off by this interpretation, which I submit to better judgments.

## CHAP. III.

*The Characters and Properties of a good Bishop. Of Deacons and Deaconesses. He gives Timothy these short Rules, till he sees him, and furnishes him with more particular directions. The Truth and Excellency of the Christian Religion. ●*

A. D 65. **THIS** is a true saying, If a man desire the office of a bishop, \* he desireth a good work.

can aspire after ; and to remember those dispositions and qualifications that are required to render him worthy of that honour.

2 A bishop then must be blameless, the † husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach :

humourfome reasons, as is too customary among the *Jews* ; but one that has had but one wife at a time, and kept constant to her. He must be vigilant in his studies and function, temperate in his passions and pleasures, decent and grave in his habit, words and gestures ; ready to entertain strangers, able to teach the true gospel-doctrines, and free in communicating his knowledge, for the instruction of others.

3. He

---

\* [He desireth a good work,] καλὸν ἔργον, [An honourable office.]

† [The husband of one wife.] Note, The interpreting this passage as a prohibition of *second marriages*, is supported by such slender reasons, that I thought them not worth an annotation. The reader may see them collected together, and fully answered by the learned paraphraiser, in Mr. Locke's manner, on this *verse* : who agrees with me in the sense here given.



3 Not given to wine, no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre, but patient, not a brawler, not covetous ;

clamorous and abusive in conversation ; nor enslaved to the love of riches.

4 One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity :

5 (For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God ?

governor, which is a much higher province, and requires greater skill and pains in its management).

6 Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride, he fall into the condemnation of the || devil.

the same condemnation, as that pride once did the fallen *angels* ; a just condemnation upon one that gives occasion to the enemies, who are always watching for the faults of *Christians*, by which to slander and reproach them.

7 Moreover, he must have a good report of them which are without ; lest he fall into reproach, and the snare of the \* devil.

3. He must be given to no excess in drinking, nor to violent returns upon any provocation, nor to any fordid and mean courses for worldly gains. One that is mild and modest, - and no way

4. One that keeps his children under due discipline, and his whole family in a decent order, by exercising a prudent authority over them.

5. (For no one, that is not a good master of a *family*, where his authority is more immediate, direct and clear, can ever be supposed qualified for a church-go-

6. He must not be a new convert, a raw and imperfect Christian ; but for fear his advancement should puff him up into the same pride, and draw him into ||

τῶ διαβολῇ, The

slanderer.

7. Moreover, he must be a man of good character among the \* unbelieving *Jews* or *Gentiles*, with whom he formerly conversed : lest, by reproaching him with his former life, or present immoralities, they

M 3

shame

\* Ver. 6 & 7. [Condemnation of the devil, reproach and snare of the devil, or of the slanderer] : And perhaps the sense may be, [Lest he give occasion to the adversaries, and calumniators of our religion, to condemn and reproach it, and him]. See Ephes. iv. 27. John vi. 70. and ver. 11. of this chapter.

A. D. 65. shame him out of his Christian principles, and tempt him to *apostacy*.

8 Likewise *must* the deacons *be* grave, not double-tongued, not given to much wine, not greedy of filthy lucre.

and expressions; not given to any intemperance in drinking, nor any base and sordid methods of gain.

9 Holding the\* mystery of the faith in a pure conscience.

of it by a suitable and conscientious practice.

10 And let these also first be proved; then let them use the office of a deacon, being *found* blameless.

deacon's office, till it be clearly removed.

11 Even so *must* *Γυναικας*. their wives *be* grave, not slanderers; sober, faithful in all things.

*Πιστες ἐν ᾧ*

modesty; no way loose and slanderous in their words: sober and temperate in their conversation; steady in all Christian principles, and true to any trust committed to them.

12 Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their chil-

8. And, as *bishops* and superior officers of the church, so *deacons*, and all inferior ones ought to be persons of approved gravity and sobriety; no way fraudulent, deceitful, or inconstant in their words

and expressions; not given to any intemperance in drinking, nor any base and sordid methods of gain.

9. They must be orthodox in the Christian *faith*, and careful to defend and maintain the honour of it by a suitable and conscientious practice.

10. In both which points they ought to be thoroughly examined into, and if in either there be found any exception against them, they are not to be admitted to the

deacon's office, till it be clearly removed.

11. In like manner, all women that are admitted into any church, † office, must be such as are remarkable for their gravity and

modesty; no way loose and slanderous in their words: sober and temperate in their conversation; steady in all Christian principles, and true to any trust committed to them.

12. Be sure to let none be a *deacon*, that keeps several wives at once, or divorceth his wife upon

---

\* Ver. 9. [Holding the mystery of the faith.] Very probably the apostle means that *particular* divine discovery of the *Gentiles* being partakers of the *gospel*-blessings. Concerning *this* doctrine, they ought not to be *double-tongued*, talking sometimes *for* it, sometimes *against* it, to please the *Judaizers*.

† [Viz. Deaconesses,] that were employed in the baptism of *women*, &c. The manner of baptism, in those times, being to plunge the whole naked body in water,

children, and their own houses well.

13 For they that have used the office of a deacon well, purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldness in the faith which is in Christ Jesus.

tual influence and authority, when he is raised to a post, in which he is both to teach and *govern*.

14 These things write I unto thee, hoping to come unto thee shortly ;

15 But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God \*, the pillar and ground of the truth.

and superstition, as the *heathen* religions and temples were, but contains a society of men dedicated to the honour and worship of the *true* God, and instructed in all the great and admirable truths of Christ's religion. Behave yourself therefore like a true \* *defender* and *supporter* of such important truths.

on needles || occasions ; or, that A. D. 65. keeps not good discipline in his family. || See ver. 2.

13. For though the *deacon's* office be but an inferior one, yet it is a step to a higher ; the more honourable offices of the church being generally chosen out of the best of the lower ones. And therefore, he that has been a good *deacon*, will have the more effec-

14. I thus give you these general and short rules, in hopes to see you soon, and furnish you with more particular instructions.

15. And if I should be detained from you longer than I expect, these will serve, in the mean time, for the due management of yourself, as the governor of a *Christian* church ; which is not like the *Jewish* temple, famed and magnified for its *outward* fabric ; nor is the nursery of *ignorance*

M 4

16. For

---

\* [The pillar and ground of truth]. Στήλης ἢ ἰδρυαίωμα. [As a pillar and support, or buttress]. It is most natural (I think) to refer these words neither to ἐκκλησία, the church, as the *Romanists* vainly imagine, nor to μυστήριον in the following verse, as *Episcopus* and others do, but to the person of Timothy, to whom the *apostle* was speaking : [How thou mightest behave thyself,—like a pillar of the truth]. Thus James and John are styled *pillars*, Gal. ii. 9. See Rev. iii. 12.

A. D. 65. 16 And without controversy, great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.

16. For, indeed, what religion could ever consist of more noble, comfortable and important articles than these, viz. That the Son of God has taken upon him our human nature, in order to instruct us by his heavenly doctrine, and redeem us by his death: By the wonderful works he wrought by the Holy Spirit, was declared and demonstrated, against all the malice and calumny of the *Jews*, to be the true *Messiah*, and Saviour of mankind: That, at his entrance into the world, the *good* angels did worship him, and attend upon him, while the *wicked* spirits were conquered and dispossessed by him: That, upon the most undoubted evidences, his religion was, against the most furious opposition, received by a considerable part of both the *Jewish* and *Gentile* world; being intended as the gracious means of *universal* salvation. Finally, that this Saviour having conquered sin and death, by suffering for us, was raised again, and, in the most open and solemn manner, exalted into heaven; there to remain a powerful advocate, and intercessor with God the Father, for all that truly repent, and embrace his religion?

---

#### CHAP. IV.

*None ought to be surprised at the great Number of Apostates from the true Christian Faith, since the Holy Spirit had plainly foretold, there would be such a Set of Men. Such were especially the Jewish Zealots of these Times: A Character of them, and their False Doctrines. Timothy warned against them; advised to slight their vain Traditions, and build his Faith on the Scriptures, and to be diligent in the Discharge of his Office.*

I NOW \* the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some † shall depart from the faith, giving heed to ‡ seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils :

*Spirit*, both by the old *prophets*, Jesus Christ \*, and his inspired *apostles*, has plainly and expressly foretold, it would be so in the *latter* times of the *Christian* church.

2 Speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their conscience seared with a hot iron ;

3 Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth.

4 For every creature of God is good, and

1. YET, notwithstanding these A. D. 65. undoubted evidences † of our religion, we must not be surprised to see a set of men pretending to embrace it, seduced from it to quite contrary doctrines, by the influence of wicked spirits, or false teachers ; seeing the *Holy*

our religion, we must not be surprised to see a set of men pretending to embrace it, seduced from it to quite contrary doctrines, by the influence of wicked spirits, or false teachers ; seeing the *Holy*

*Spirit*, both by the old *prophets*, Jesus Christ \*, and his inspired *apostles*, has plainly and expressly foretold, it would be so in the *latter* times of the *Christian* church.

2. That there would be false doctrines broached by hypocritical and designing people, men of loose and profligate consciences.

3. & 4. Such are now those converts that are influenced by the zealots of the *Jewish* faction ; who, contrary to the clear design of *Christianity*, and out of pretended purity, would persuade us, that marriage || is an impure and unlawful thing, especially to some ranks and *orders* of men ; and put the main stress of true religion

---

\* [The Spirit speaketh expressly,] which some refer to that of Dan. xi. 36, &c. But others more probably to that of our Saviour, Matth. xxiv. 11, 12. and of the apostles, 2 Thess. ii. 3, 9. Jude xvii. 18, 19. and elsewhere.

† Ver. 1. [Some shall depart—] Not only *some* now in *these* times, but even the *generality* in the times of the *grand apostacy*. So the word *These* is often used. See 1 Cor. x. 7. compared with Exod. xxxii. 3. So chap. vi. 10. [Such were some of you, *i. e.* all.]

‡ Ver. 1. [Seducing spirits.] This phrase may not signify wicked (invisible) *spirits*, but wicked *men*, pretending to the inspirations of the *true* divine *Spirit*, and thereby seducing others into the belief and worship of *demons*, or *evil spirits*, as *false* and *imaginary deities*. So St. John's [trying of spirits,] is to be understood, 1 John iv. 1, 2. [Of trying and examining into men pretending to inspiration.]

**A. D. 65.** and nothing to be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving: such and such *meats*, formerly forbidden by the *Jewish* law: Whereas, the original intent of God's creating all sorts of creatures, was for the use of man; and no *Christian*, that truly understands his religion, can be ignorant of the liberty he has of eating them, without distinction, in a dutiful and thankful manner.

5 For it is sanctified by the word of God, and prayer.

\* *ἀγιάζοντες*.ing them *all* equally requires nothing of us, but to beg God's blessing upon, and return him thanks for our refreshment from them.

6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished up in the words of faith, and of good doctrine, whereunto thou hast attained.

7 But refuse profane and old wives fables, and exercise thyself rather unto godliness.

See chap. i. 4, 6.  
Titus i. 15.  
iii. 19.

8 For bodily exercise profiteth little: but godliness is profitable unto all things, having promise of the life that now is, and of that which is to come.

5. For, the Christian religion has taken off all difference between clean and unclean meats; render-

\* lawful to us to feed upon; and requires nothing of us, but to beg God's blessing upon, and return him thanks for our refreshment from them.

6. It is your duty then, as a faithful minister of Christ, pursuant to the true doctrines of his religion, you so well understand, to warn all Christians of these things, these corruptions already begun, and that are the forerunners of the *great apostacy* that will be hereafter.

7. And be specially careful to dash and discountenance the senseless and fabulous || *traditions* of these *Jewish* teachers; and make the substantial duties of *Christianity* your chief business.

8. For those external observances, they pretend to be so strict in, are of no moment in true religion: But the practice of *Christian* virtues and graces, has all possible advantage; having the express promise of divine blessing and protection in this life, and of a certain reward in the next.

9. This

9 This is a faithful \* saying, and worthy of all acceptance.

10 For therefore we both labour, and suffer reproach, because we trust in the living God, who is the Saviour of all men, especially of those that believe.

and *preach* up that substantial and spiritual religion of Jesus Christ, which God, who cannot but be thought to intend the salvation of all men, has now graciously offered to *all* mankind, without distinction; and the blessings whereof all true believers, of what nation soever, will most certainly enjoy.

11 These things command and teach:

12 Let no man despise thy youth, but be thou an example of the believers, in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity.

a steadiness in the true faith, and in charity and purity of practice, to be so exemplary to all people, that none may take occasion to despise your *authority* upon account of your *youth*.

13 † Till I come, give attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine.

9. This is the \* certain and most important article you should endeavour to possess *Christian* people with. A. D. 65.

10. And for this it is that those malicious Jews do thus despise and persecute us; viz. that we forsake their external and *ceremonial* observances, that were intended only for a while, to keep up a distinction between their *nation* and the *rest* of the world;

11. Whatever opposition *they* make, therefore, let it be *your* constant business to inculcate it, and oblige all Christians to the belief of this important doctrine.

12. And as you are yet but a young man, be careful, by the soundness of your doctrine, the gravity of your conversation, your charity to all persons, your prudent and industrious improvement of the gifts of the Holy Spirit, by

13. Let reading the holy scriptures of the Old Testament be your constant study†; and, out of them build wholesome instructions and persuasions to your people.

14. Be

\* Ver. 9. [A faithful saying.] See the note on chap. i. 15.

† Ver. 13. [Till I come.] See note on Rom. vi. 13.

[Till I come.] *ὡς ἔρχομαι*. See 2 Sam. vi. 23, 1 Sam. xv. 25. in the Septuagint.

A. D. 65. 14 Neglect not the  
 gift that is in thee,  
 \* 1 Tim. i. 18. which was given thee  
 by prophecy, with the  
 laying on of the hands  
 of the presbytery.

14. Be no way negligent in the  
 sacred office, the Holy Spirit pro-  
 phesied you should have \*, and  
 which you were consecrated to  
 by the imposition of my hands,  
 and of other church-officers with  
 me. (2 Tim. i. 6.)

† Ver. 11, 12. 15 Meditate upon  
 these things; give thy-  
 self wholly to them,  
 that thy profiting may  
 appear to all.

15. Consider well and frequent-  
 ly on what you read † and teach  
 to others; that you may show  
 what a proficient you are in the  
 Christian doctrine, by a ready and  
 exact way of instruction.

16 Take heed unto  
 thyself, and unto thy  
 doctrine; continue in  
 them: for in doing  
 this, thou shalt both  
 save thyself, and them  
 that hear thee.

16. In fine, be every way care-  
 ful both of your life and doctrine.  
 Be constant in what I have re-  
 commended to you; and, by such  
 a discharge of your office, you  
 will not fail of your own salva-  
 tion, nor of the best method to  
 secure that of your people too, by the influence of so  
 good an example.

---

## C H A P. V.

*Directions for Censuring and Reproving an Elder or Presbyter,  
 and for his Behaviour toward aged, or young Women. For  
 the public Charity to Widows; which of them are fit, and  
 which not, to receive it. Good Ministers to be liberally  
 maintained. No Accusation against a Presbyter to be pro-  
 ceeded upon, without due Caution. and full Evidence: but  
 such as are notoriously guilty, to be severely and openly re-  
 proved. Timothy strictly charged to be impartial in his Go-  
 vernment, and to be tenderly cautious who he ordains to the  
 Ministry. Private Advice relating to his Health.*



1 **R**Ebuke not an elder, but entreat *him* as a father, and the younger men as brethren ;

byters of the church, unless they be very notorious and scandalous ; but, as you are a young man, though a governor and bishop, endeavour to persuade them with due respect to their *age* and *office* : and treat all younger persons, particularly such as are in any church-office, with brotherly kindness, and a friendly temper.

2 The elder women as mothers, the younger as sisters, with all purity.

as with Christian relations ; but with such gravity and decency, as may be sure to cut off all suspicion of any impure thoughts or behaviour.

3 Honour widows that are widows indeed.

tained out of the public charities of the church.

4 But if any widow have children or nephews, let them learn first to show piety at home, and to requite their parents ; for that is good and acceptable before God.

5 Now she that is a widow indeed, and desolate, trusteth in God, and continueth in supplications and prayers night and day.

is remarkable for the steadiness of her *Christian* principles, and the constancy of her devotions.

1. **T**O come now to some other particular directions. Be

not hasty and extreme in censuring the miscarriages of any elderly person, especially such as are pres-

byters of the church, unless they be very notorious and scandalous ; but, as you are a young man, though a governor and bishop, endeavour to persuade them with due respect to their *age* and *office* : and treat all younger persons, particularly such as are in any church-office, with brotherly kindness, and a friendly temper.

2. Treat the *deaconesses*\*, or any other *elderly women*, with just

regard to their years also ; and converse with the younger women,

as with Christian relations ; but with such gravity and decency, as may be sure to cut off all suspicion of any impure thoughts or behaviour.

3. Let such widows as are destitute of all friends to relieve them, be liberally and respectfully main-

4. But where any widows have children or grandchildren, that are in a capacity to maintain them ; let those children know, it is but a just return, and one of their prime and special duties, to provide for their parents ; and that God will indispensibly require it at their hands.

5. Now, a widow ought to have these two qualifications, to render her a proper object of the churches charity ; viz. she must be one entirely destitute of relations to relieve her ; and one that

6. For

A. D. 65. 6 But she that liveth in pleasure, is dead while she liveth. *Christian* church; and so its charity.

7 And these things give in charge, that they may be blameless.

8 But if any provide not for his own, and especially for those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel.

duties of Christianity, and is guilty of a crime, that even a heathen would be ashamed of.

9 Let not a widow be taken into the number, under threescore years old, having been the wife of one man.

divorced from one husband, and married another.

10 Well reported of for good works; if she have brought up children, if she have lodged strangers, if she have washed the saints feet, if she have relieved the afflicted, if she have diligently followed every good work.

11 But the younger widows refuse: for when they have begun

6. For a loose and voluptuous widow is to be looked on as a member lost and dead to the *Christian* church; and so incapable of being maintained by its charity.

7. Be sure, therefore to divulge and execute their orders carefully, that none but truly good women may be chosen in to partake of the churches maintenance.

8. And none but such as are really destitute. For whatever Christian, that is able to do it, neglects to provide for his nearest relations (especially his parents and children) acts in direct contradiction to one of the essential

duties of Christianity, and is guilty of a crime, that even a heathen would be ashamed of.

9. Let none be chosen into the number of these church-widows, under the age of sixty; nor any that has, upon needless and humourfome occasions, procured a divorce, or for good reasons been divorced from one husband, and married another.

10. Nor any, but what are known to have discharged their duties of life well; such as the care of their families; the pious education of their children; to have been hospitable to strangers, charitable to the poor and afflicted, and ready to do the meanest of good offices to any Christian brethren.

11. & 12. And be sure to take in none that are very young, for such women are too apt to grow weary

gun to wax wanton against Christ, they will marry :

12 Having damnation, because they have cast off their first faith.

15 And withal they learn *to be* idle, wandering about from house to house ; and not only idle, but tattlers also, and busybodies, speaking things which they ought not.

14 I will therefore that the younger women marry, bear children, guide the house, give none occasion to the adversary to speak reproachfully.

so no occasion be given to the adversaries of our religion, to reflect upon it, from their indiscretions and miscarriages.

15 For some are already turned aside after Satan.

widows have actually pronounced their Christian profession.

16 If any man or woman that believeth, have widows, let them relieve them, and let not the church be charged ; that it may relieve them that are widows indeed.

17 Let the elders that rule well, be counted worthy of double honour, especially

weary of the grave and retired life of church-widows ; and be tempted to marry into *heathen* \* *γασμῆν.* <sup>A. D. 65.</sup> <sup>See ver. 15.</sup> families, and renounce their Christianity ; and so be lost, at last, to the great scandal of the church.

13. At least, it is very hazardous ; but such young persons, instead of the sobriety and retiredness that become them, will run into idleness, impertinence, and indecency in their words and actions.

14. Instead, therefore, of being objects of the public charity, let such young widows marry again, and be duly and honestly employed in breeding and well educating children, and in a discreet management of their families ; that

15. And this caution is but too necessary at this time : for, you know, some of these young

done as † I say, and even re-† Ver. 11, 12.

16. I charge, again‡, that every § Ver. 8, 9. Christian, that has wherewithal to do it, maintain the widows that belong to his own family, and not throw them upon the churches charity ; that so a large provision may be made for such as are really destitute of other relief.

17. Take care, that great respect, and very liberal maintenance be given to all our superior officers in the church, especially to such as labour

A. D. 65. cially they who labour in the word and doctrine.

labour hard in the conversion of others to the faith, or in instructing and edifying such as have already received it.

18 For the scripture faith, Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn: and, the labourer is worthy of his reward.

\* See 1 Cor. ix. 9, 12. 13.

18. This is but just, according to the rule of the very *Mosaical* law \*, that forbids *even an ox to be debarred from feeding upon the corn, while he is labouring to tread it out from the straw.* And what you are obliged to from our Saviour's own words, *the labourer is worthy of his hire.* (Matth. x. 10. Luke x. 7).

19 Against an elder receive not an accusation, but before two or three witnesses.

† Ver. 1.

19. But to return to the case of censuring a presbyter † of the church. Entertain no complaint against such officers, so far as to determine and give sentence upon it, but upon the utmost caution, and full evidence of two or three witnesses, at least.

20 Them that sin, rebuke before all, that others also may fear. let him be publicly

20. But, if the evidence given against him plainly prove him to be guilty of any considerable crime, censured, for a warning and restraint to others.

21 I charge thee, before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that thou observe these things, without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality.

† See 1 Cor. xi. 10. Heb. i. 4. and Rev. i. 4. with my Paraph. there.

21. And I adjure you by God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, whose minister you are; and by the good *angels*, that are inspectors over, and ministering † spirits to the Christian church to govern the church committed to you, agreeably to the rules I have given you, without the least prejudice

or partiality to any person whatever. -

22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partakers of other mens sins: keep thyself pure.

22. Use strict care and examination, before you admit any person into holy orders, or receive any notorious offender into the com-

\* communion of the church again. For by granting A. D. <sup>65</sup>. either of these admissions to unworthy people, you entail a share of their guilt upon yourself: and therefore keep yourself clear.

23 Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomach's sake, and thine often infirmities.

23. Thou your sacred office obliges you to great temperance in the use of *wine*; yet remember, *wine* was given us for necessary refreshment; and, as you have a weak stomach, and are of an infirm constitution, I advise you to use it as a cordial, and not confine yourself wholly to water.

24 Some mens sins are open beforehand, going before to judgment; and some *men* they follow after.

25 Likewise also the good works of *some* are manifest beforehand; and they that are otherwise, cannot be hid †.

24. & 25. As to the caution I gave you (ver. 22.), you need not understand it of persons whose principles or practices are plain and notorious. Some are so openly scandalous, that there need no witnesses to come in against them; while others are of so good and clear a reputation, that little or no examination will serve to their admission, either into the church

as *penitents*, or into holy *orders*. But some there are, that have the art to conceal and varnish over their crimes for the present, and appear fair. But due time and care, will discover and prevent them from imposing themselves upon you; at least, you will have done your part, and discharged your own conscience †.

\* Which was usually done with [laying on of hands.]

† [And they that are otherwise cannot be hid]: Not, [they cannot be hid at all], but they cannot be hid *long* and *always*.

Ibid. [They that are otherwise]. Perhaps this may refer, not to the *sins of bad men*, in the foregoing verse, but to the *good works of others in this verse*. So the apostle's similitude is complete and elegant; viz. That neither the secret *vices* of some, nor the hidden *virtues* of others, shall be [long and always concealed]. So the excellent Dr. Clarke's Serm. vol. I. p. 254.

## C H A P. VI.

*Christianity exempts none of its Professors from their Natural and Civil Obligations: Not Servants or Slaves from paying due Service and Fidelity even to Heathen Masters, much less to Christian ones. The Reasonableness of being contented in every Condition, where a Competency is to be had; and the Danger of an immoderate Love of Riches. Rich Men obliged to Courtesy and Charity. The Charge to Timothy renewed.*

A. D. 65. 1 **L**ET as many servants as are under the yoke, count their own masters worthy of all honour: that the name of God, and his doctrine be not blasphemed.

\* See Pref. to the Eph. § 4.

2 And they that have believing masters, let them not despise *them*, because they are brethren: but rather do *them* service, because they are faithful and beloved, partakers of the benefit. These things teach and exhort.

1. **L**ET all Christians, that are servants (or *slaves*) to *heathen* \* masters, respect and serve them diligently; and not, by their disobedience to them, bring a scandal upon the Christian religion; as if it dissolved any man from his *natural* or *civil* obligations.

2. And, as the privilege of *Christianity* exempts none from discharging their duties to *heathen*, much less do it to *Christian* masters: But is a still stronger argument to such *slaves*, not to withdraw their services from *them*, upon account of their being upon the level with them in *religion*, but to serve them the more cheerfully; as considering, they labour for those who are partners with them in the same divine favours, and common hopes of salvation.

3, 4. & 5.

3 If any man teach otherwise, and \* consent not to wholesome words, *even* the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness;

4 He is proud, knowing nothing, but doting about questions and strifes of words, whereof cometh envy strife, railings, evil surmisings,

5 Perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds, and destitute of the truth, supposing that gain is godliness: from such withdraw thyself.

6 But godliness with contentment is great gain.

world is, to be contented and industrious in the condition that Providence has allotted to us in *this*.

7 For we brought nothing into *this* world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out.

affluence we have here, must be left behind, and the greatest plenty must die with us.

8 And having food and raiment, let us be therewith content.

9 But they that will be rich, fall into temptation, and a snare,

3, 4. & 5. Be sure, therefore, <sup>A. D. 65.</sup> to inculcate this upon all Christian *Slaves*. And if any of the *Jewish* converts †, contrary to the plain † Matth. <sup>xx. 27.</sup> design of the Christian religion, <sup>Mark x. 44.</sup> set up \*, and plead for an unjust <sup>Pref. to</sup> liberty; look on them as a proud <sup>Ephef. § 4.</sup> and prejudiced people, led away by a perverse fondness for their vain *traditions*, that tend to nothing but mischievous quarrels and disputes: And avoid their conversation, as persons that make religion nothing but a *trade* || for || <sup>πορισμὸν.</sup> worldly profit and advantage.


6. For, one of the surest methods of rendering religion truly advantageous to us in the *next* world is, to be contented and industrious in the condition that Providence has allotted to us in *this*.

7. And good reason we have to be so: For, as we came naked into the world, and are supplied with the necessities of it, by divine Providence; so, whatever

8. A bare competency, therefore, of the present enjoyments ought to be enough to satisfy any *Christian*.

9. And for men to thirst after more, and be bent upon growing rich, by any means whatever, is  
N 2 only

\* Ver. 3. [And consent not to wholesome words—*μὴ προσέχεται*. See Dr. Bentley's remarks on Freethinking, Part I. pag. 72, 73. *μὴ προσέχεται*, attends not to.

A. D. 65.  snare, and *into* many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition.

10 For the love of money is the root of all evil, which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.

selves into the most

11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things: and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness.

*ness*, that renders us contented with what we have; that *faith* in God and Christ, that makes us rely upon his good Providence in all estates; that *love* and charity, that obliges us to distribute freely, when we are in plenty; that *patience* that supports us under adversity; and that *meekness* that keeps us kind and forgiving to such as injure and defraud us.

12 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

† Chap. v. 21. 13 I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickneth all things, and *before* Christ

only to pamper their foolish lusts and passions; which will destroy their virtuous principles here, and themselves hereafter.

10. For the immoderate love of temporal riches and grandeur, is the inlet to all mischievous principles and practices; as is too plain from the examples of some people, who have already renounced their very *Christianity* for the sake of them, and brought themselves into the most miserable condition.

11. But you, Timothy, as a minister of God, must be perfectly averse to such a temper; and endeavour to become master of that *justice* that will suffer us to defraud no man; that *godli-*

12. 'Thus are you, like a good racer \*, to run and stretch forward, with your eye fixed upon that prize of eternal life, that God has set before you, in the Christian religion: As indeed you have hitherto done and testified your courage in the many sufferings you have publicly undergone for it.

13. & 14. And I, again, † adjure you, by that God, who will raise up all from the dead, that suffer for his sake; and by Jesus Christ,



Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession.

14 That thou keep this commandment without spot, unbuckable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ.

15 Which in his times he shall show, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords :

16 Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto, whom no man hath seen, nor can see : to whom be honour and power everlasting. *Amen.*

17 Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not high minded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy.

18 That they do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, willing to communicate.

19 Laying up in store for themselves a good

Christ, who openly professed what he was, before Pilate, and sealed and confirmed the truth of his religion, even by his death ; that you discharge your office, agreeably to the directions I have given you, and so approve yourself a faithful servant of our great Master, at the great and solemn day of his appearance to judgment. A. D. 65.

15. & 16. A day fixed in God's due time, who is the blessed, and only Supreme Lord and Governor over all things. *He* that is immortal in himself, and has the sole power of giving life to others; dwelling in glory inaccessible, invisible, and unbearable by every mortal eye ; to whom be eternally ascribed all honour and power. *Amen.*

17. Upon this consideration, warn and dissuade all rich men from proudly over-valuing themselves upon their present transitory enjoyments, and placing their happiness in them. Let God, the eternal Author of all true felicity, be the Supreme object of their hope and confidence.

18. & 19. Convince them, that a free and cheerful distribution to the needy, is the best improvement of the charitable course of actions, which is the surest foundation \* and security of our

N 3

future

\* Ομιλίον.  
See 2 Tim.  
ii. 19. and  
the Note  
there.

A. D. 65. good \* foundation against the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternal life. future happiness, will be their truest riches.

20 O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane and vain babblings, and oppositions of science, falsely so called :

† Chap. i.  
4.

21 Which some professing, have erred concerning the faith. Grace be with thee. Amen.

20. & 21. And thus, dear Timothy, be diligent in the trust committed to you, with respect to all sorts of men: Avoiding and despising the frivolous disputes, and pretended learning of Jewish traditions † and genealogies ; which some of those zealous converts are so earnest upon, that they have neglected the substantial of Christianity, and lost its true principles. The Divine favour and love be with thee. Amen.

\* Ver. 19. [A good foundation] ; θεμέλιον——The word here is certainly not to be rendered *foundation*, but either a (writing of) *security*, or rather a *treasure* ; the same as θέμα in Tobit iv. 9. where this expression is used : The same as Κεμήλιον in Homer.

Πολλὰ δ' ἐναφνειῷ πατρὶ Κεῖμηλια κεῖται ;

Χαλκός τε, χρυσός τε —— Iliad Z. 1. 46.

See on 2 Tim. ii. 10.

---

A

P A R A P H R A S E

ON THE  
SECOND EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL

TO  
T I M O T H Y.

---

*See the Preface to the First Epistle.*

---

C H A P. I.

*The Title and Salutation. His great Affection to Timothy, with fresh Encouragements to the diligent and courageous Discharge of his Office. Gentiles as well as Jews to be received into the Christian Covenant. The Apostle specially commissioned to preach to the Former, for which he is again persecuted and imprisoned by the Malice of the Latter. He reminds Timothy, how the Asian Christians generally forsook him and his Cause, during his Imprisonment, except Onesiphorus and his Family, whom he mentions, and prays for, with great Respect.*

1 PAUL an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, according to the promise of life, which is in Christ Jesus.

2 To

1. & 2. PAUL an apostle of Jesus Christ, especially commissioned by the express \* revelation of God, to declare the gospel-privileges and promises of eternal life, both to Gentiles and Jews;

Written  
A. D. 67.  
\* Acts ix.

A. D. 67. 2 To Timothy, *my* dearly beloved son: grace, mercy, *and* peace from God the Father, and Christ Jesus our Lord.

3 I thank God, whom I serve from *my* forefathers with pure conscience, that without ceasing I have remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day:

passions), that I have such happy occasions to remember you in the constant returns of my devotion to him.

4 Greatly desiring to see thee: being mindful of thy tears, that I may be filled with joy.

5 When I call to remembrance the unfeigned faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and thy mother Eunice; and I am persuaded that in thee also.

6 Wherefore I put thee in remembrance that thou stir up the gift of God which is in thee, by the putting on of my hands.

graces, which, along with it, were conferred on you, by the imposition of mine and other\* hands at your ordination.

7 For God hath not given us the spirit of fear, but of power,

6

er,

Jews; writeth this epistle to Timothy, my dear convert to Christianity; wishing him all divine favours and blessings from God the Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ.

3. Expressing my hearty thanks to God, whose religion I have zealously adhered to, as I received it from my forefathers (doing nothing against the *plain* and known dictates of my *conscience*, though I acknowledge it to have been misled by ungoverned prejudices and

passions), that I have such happy occasions to remember you in the constant returns of my devotion to him.

4. The tears you shed at our last parting, make me very desirous to see you again, that the pleasure of another meeting may recompence for the affectionate concern we were then under.

5. Be satisfied, in the meantime, that I have a true and thankful sense of your steadiness and sincerity in the Christian faith; not doubting but those principles will continue as firm in you, as were those of your grandmother and mother before you.

6. To which end, I now write again to you, to renew the exhortations I formerly gave you, toward a diligent and vigorous discharge of your office, and the due improvement of the gifts and graces, which, along with it, were conferred on you, by the imposition of mine and other\* hands at your ordination.

7. And you have no reason to be discouraged from the most violent oppositions you meet withal; for

\* 1 Tim. iv. 14.

er, of love, and of a sound mind. for the spiritual powers and endowments God bestows on the gospel ministers, are sufficient to set us above all slavish fear and cowardice, and to fix us in an immoveable love to him and his true religion, and in a prudent and discreet \* exercise of our ministry. A. D. 67.

8 Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner, but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel according to the power of \* God :

9 Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus, before the world began.

of the *ceremonial* law ; but is the pure effect of divine bounty and compassion, originally † intended towards *all* mankind, by and for the sake of Jesus Christ.

10 But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and im-

8. Go on, therefore, cheerfully, in a religion so well attested ; own and adhere to *me*, though now a prisoner for preaching it, especially to the Gentiles. Suffer along with me, for this good cause, agreeably to the great \* abilities God has given you, as a *gospel* minister, to support you under it.


9. Who may justly expect we should be ready to suffer for him, that has bestowed eternal happiness upon us, by calling us into the gracious covenant of the gospel. A mercy that neither the Gentiles could merit by any performances of theirs, nor the Jews lay the least claim to, by the nicest observance

10. It was not, indeed, heretofore expressly revealed to the *Gentile* nations, but reserved to the appearance of Christ and his religion ; who, now, by dying for our sins, has rescued all true believers from the final power of death ;

---

\* Ver. 8. [According to the power of God.] I think these words ought to be connected to *εὐαγγελίῳ*. [Be partaker of the affliction, *or* suffer thou, *τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ κατὰ δύναμιν Θεοῦ*—For the gospel that is attended with the power of God, Rom. i. 16. See the like phrase in Rom. i. 4. The note there.

† Ver. 9. [Before the world began, *πρὸ χρόνων αἰωνίων*. Before any ages or dispensations.]

A. D. 67, mortality to light, death; and by his life and doctrine, through the gospel:  has freed them of all the uncertainties they laboured under concerning the future state; and given them a full assurance of an eternal and happy life, upon their repentance and sincere obedience to his commands.

11 Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and an apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles.

12 For the which cause I also suffer these things: nevertheless I am not ashamed, for I know whom I have believed, and I am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him against that day.

13 Hold fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me, in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus.

mankind, especially toward Christians, without any distinction between *Jewish* and *Gentile* ones.

14 That good thing which was committed unto thee, keep by the Holy Ghost, which dwelleth in us.

how much you are enabled so to do by the special assistance of the Holy Spirit conferred upon the ministers of Christ.

11. Of this comfortable doctrine am *I* a preacher, and an apostle; with full commission to declare it to the *Gentile* world, and bring them into the faith and privileges of it.

12. For which it is that I am again become a sufferer, by the pride and malice of the *Jewish* people. But not at all discouraged; as well knowing it is the truth of God I suffer for, who, I am certain, will maintain his own cause, and preserve that life, I commit into his hands, for a glorious recompence at the great and solemn day of Christ's judgment.

13. Do you then join with me in this resolution, by keeping steady to that rule of Christianity I taught; consisting in an entire belief of Christ's doctrine, and an universal love and charity toward

14. Remember how much obliged you are by the ministerial \* office you are intrusted with, to maintain and defend the true principles of our holy religion; and

15. I con-

---

\* Παράκαταθήκην, may refer either to his *office*, or to the *form of sound words* in verse 13.

15 This thou knowest, that all they which are in Asia be turned away from me, of whom are Phygellus, and Hermogenes.

16 The Lord give mercy unto the house of Onesiphorus, for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain.

17 But when he was in Rome, he sought me out very diligently, and found me.

18 The Lord grant unto him that he may find mercy of the Lord in that day; and in how many things he ministered unto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

15. I conclude, you cannot but <sup>A. D. 67.</sup> have heard how most of the *Asian* Christians forsook me in my distress here, particularly Phygellus and Hermogenes.

16. But Onesiphorus the *Ephesian*, and his family have always stood close to me, owned me in my worst condition, and refreshed me with his presence and relief.

17. Particularly, now at Rome, when I was under such close confinement that it was no easy matter to come at me, he made his way to me by indefatigable pains and industry.

18. And you know how kind and serviceable he was to me while I preached at Ephesus: for all which, may God give him a proportionable recompence at the great day of Christ's judgment.

## CHAP. II.

*Timothy still encouraged by the Apostle's own Example of Faith, Hope and Patience. The good Effects of a Christian's Sufferings, and the Danger of denying Christ in Times of Persecution. Warnings against the immoderate Zeal, the frivolous and violent Disputes of the Jewish Zealots, about their Traditions. The meek and gentle Dispositions of a good Christian Bishop, or Church Governor.*

1 THOU therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus.

1. WHEREFORE, my dear convert, follow the example of such \* as adhere to me, making \* <sup>Chap. i.</sup> a continual improvement in the 16, 17, 18. use

A. D. 67 use of those gifts and graces that were given you, for the due discharge of your Christian ministry\*.

† χάρις.

2 And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.

3 Thou therefore endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ.

4 No man that warreth entangleth himself with the affairs of *this* life; that he may please him who hath chosen him to be a soldier.

5 And if a man also strive for masteries, yet he is not crowned, except he strive lawfully.

6 The husbandman that laboureth †, must be first partaker of the fruits.

7 Con-

2. And, as you have received from me a complete scheme of the Christian doctrine and discipline, be sure to make choice of able and faithful persons for the ministry, to deliver it down to others pure and unmixed, as I gave it you, and had it myself so clearly and fully confirmed.

3. Look upon yourself as a *soldier* of Christ; and approve your valour by enduring all the hardships of his service.

4. Now, you know, the Roman laws require every one that lists into the army, to disengage himself of all his former employments, and perfectly to attend the service of his prince, and the commands of his *general*.

5. And in the *Olympic* games, no *combatant* wins the prize, unless he fights or runs agreeably to the stated rules of those games.

6. You know too, the *husbandman* labours in tilling, sowing, or planting his ground a considerable time †, before he can expect to reap the crop.

7. Thus

---

\* Ver. 1. [In the grace that is in Christ Jesus—*ἐν τῇ χάριτι τῇ ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ*. It may be thus rendered; [Be strong (in asserting and propagating) that favour which is (shown by God both to Jews and Gentiles) in Jesus Christ.] For *this* appears to have been constantly in the apostle's eye.

† [Must be first partaker—*κοπιῶντα δὲ πρῶτον*—must first labour.] If this be the construction, as several critics take it to be, the word *πρῶτον* is misplaced by a metathesis, pretty common



7 Consider what I say, and the Lord give thee understanding in all things.

As a *combatant*, you must throw off every thing that may give the adversary any hold of you. As a *husbandman*, you must labour in planting and promoting the gospel, and wait patiently for your reward. Consider this, and may God give you a just sense of every branch of your duty.

8 Remember that Jesus Christ, of the seed of David, was raised from the dead, according to my gospel.

the scriptures foretold, was no *temporal monarch*, as the *Jews* vainly dreamed he was to be, but a *suffering Saviour*; and, after those sufferings, was raised from the dead, and exalted to heavenly glory, according to the true gospel-doctrine, as preached and demonstrated by me.

9 Wherein I suffer trouble as an evil-doer, *even* unto bonds; but the word of God is not bound.

am confined, the *gospel-doctrine* is, by my means, spread far and wide, especially in this city†.

10 Therefore I endure all things for the elect's sake, that they may also obtain the salvation which is

7. Thus it was with *you*, as a Christian *bishop*; like a true *soldier*, you must be disengaged of all the unnecessary cares of life and

8. And, for the greater encouragement of yourself and others, remember yourself, and them, that our Saviour Jesus Christ himself, the true *Messiah*, born of the family of David, as

9. This is the great truth, for which I am thus, as a malefactor, prosecuted by the *Jewish* people, and am now again a prisoner: But my comfort is, that while I

10. This makes me undergo all my sufferings with the utmost freedom and cheerfulness; that I may thereby become an instrument to bring other Christians, of

A. D. 67.

† See Phil. i.

12, 13, 14.

---

common in the New Testament. See an instance of it in the word *ὁ παρειαρχης*, Heb. vii. 4. or else *πρωτον* may be taken *adjectively*, and the sense be thus: The labouring husbandman is to have *πρωτον των καρπων*, The first and best of the fruits. But the former seems most natural.

A. D. 67. is in Christ Jesus, with eternal glory. of what nation soever, to the glory and happiness promised by Jesus Christ; by encouraging them to suffer, after my example.

11 *It is* a \* faithful saying, For if we be dead with *him*, we shall also live with *him*:

12 If we suffer, we shall also reign with *him*: if we deny him, he also will deny us:

as he suffered for our sins, we shall not fail of a glorious reward for it, along with him. But, on the contrary, if we relinquish his profession, for fear of present dangers, he will no longer own us for his disciples, nor reward us as such.

13 If we believe not *yet* he abideth faithful, he cannot deny himself.

he has made, and execute the threats he has denounced.

11. & 12. For \* this is the comfortable and undoubted truth of the gospel-religion. For, as we figuratively resemble the death of Christ, by being baptized into the death of sin, we shall actually rise with him, to an immortal and happy life. And, upon our readiness to suffer for his religion,

13. And whether we continue steady to his religion, or no, it is certain God is still the same, and cannot but perform the promises he has made, and execute the threats he has denounced.

14 Of these things put *them* in remembrance, charging *them* before the Lord, that they strive not about words, to no profit, *but* to the subverting of the hearers.

disputes about *traditions*, that tend to nothing, but to pervert men from the true faith.

14. Inculcate this to all Christians, as the indispensable condition of their profession. And particularly charge the *Jewish* converts, in the name of Christ, to make it their great concern, and not any longer to employ their time in frivolous and eager disputes

15. & 16. En-

---

\* Ver. 11. (It is a faithful saying;) *i. e.* In thus suffering for my endeavours to bring men of *all nations* into the Christian faith and privileges, I act *faithfully*, or agreeably to the design of the *gospel*. See the note on 1 Tim. 15.

15 Study to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.

16 But shun profane and vain babblings, for they will increase unto more ungodliness.

17 And their word will eat as doth a canker: of whom is Hymeneus and Philetus:

18 Who concerning the truth have erred, saying, That the resurrection is past already: and overthrow the faith of some.

allegorical notions, as to give out, That the resurrection of good men is already past, and nothing further to be expected; and so have drawn several Christians from the sound belief of that capital article.

19 Nevertheless, the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, the Lord know-

15. & 16. Endeavour to approve yourself a skilful and unexceptionable minister of Christianity. And, as it was the constant and careful service of the *Jewish* priests, in the temple, to divide the sacrifices, separating the parts that were, from such as were not to be offered upon the altar; so let it be your earnest business to cut off all impertinent disputes, and deliver out nothing but the plain and important doctrines of our religion.

17. & 18. For that turbulent and disputing temper is of the same dangerous consequence to the Christian church, as a gangrene is to the body; infecting and eating out all good principles, as you see in the instances of Hymeneus \* and Philetus, who have so corrupted those passages of scripture relating to the resurrection, with their traditional and

19. But, notwithstanding the surmises of such men, this truth of our future resurrection stands firm, as the main † foundation of all

---

\* See 1 Tim. i. 19, 20.

† (The foundation of God.) Θεμέλιος signifies either a foundation of a building, or an indenture writing: And because the latter is more agreeable to the seal in this verse, and the former to the verse immediately following, I have therefore expressed both senses: But I leave it as conjecture, whether the true reading might not be Κεῖμελιον. See the note on 1 Tim. vi. 19. Indeed, as the word is there used for treasure, so here it may most properly signify, not the foundation, but the precious things, or utensils of a house; treasures laid up and sealed with the seal or mark of the owner. But let the reader judge.

A. D. 67. knoweth \* them that are his. And let every one that nameth the name of Christ, depart from iniquity. *his part*, to own and reward all true Christian disciples; and with this condition, on *our* part, that we reform our lives, and live agreeable to the precepts of the gospel.

20 But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold, and of silver, but also of wood, and of earth: and some to honour, and some to dishonour.

20. Nor ought it to surprise and disturb us, to find such factious and unorthodox members in the Christian church. For, as in great mens houses, there is variety and degrees of good and bad, rich, and less costly furniture; so in such a wide society as the church is, it cannot be expected, but some members will prove more ungovernable and degenerate than others.

21 If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel unto honour, sanctified and meet for the master's use, and prepared unto every good work.

21. As therefore, the better, and more sumptuous part of the house's furniture is usually appropriated to the use of the owner and master of the family; in like manner, the only way for any Christian to render himself truly useful and acceptable to Christ, the great Lord of his church, is, To keep himself untainted from the false notions, and impure practices of those deceitful teachers.

22 Flee also youthful lusts: but follow righteousness, faith, charity,

22. & 23. Accordingly, therefore, be you specially careful to avoid all those passions and irregularities, to which

---

\* Ver. 19. (The Lord knoweth them that are his)—— These words are a most emphatical allusion to those of Moses, Numb. xvi. 5. [according to the LXX.] (To-morrow will the Lord show who are his, and who is holy.) A proper application of the case of Korah and his company to that of these *false teachers* before mentioned. *Ibid.*—(depart from iniquity ἀπὸ δικίας, from falsehood), in opposition to ἀλήθειαν before mentioned. See John vii. 18. Rom. xi. 8. 1 Cor. xiii. 9. 2 Thess. xi. 12. As Moses said, [Depart from the tents of these wicked men.]

charity, peace with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart.

23 But foolish and \* unlearned questions avoid, knowing that they do gender strifes.

per towards all sincere *Christians*.

24 And the servant of the Lord must not strive: but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient:

25 In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves, if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth.

26 And that they may † recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will.

the knowledge and obedience of God, and of true religion.

which their frivolous and violent A. D. 67<sup>1</sup> disputes may hazard to draw such a young || person as you are; And<sup>12.</sup> I Tim. iv. 12. keep close to the substantial duties of true faith towards God, of perfect justice in your words and behaviour towards all men, and of a charitable and peaceful temper

24. 25. & 26. For it does no way become any *Christian*, much less a † *minister* of the gospel, to † δῆλον<sup>12.</sup> strive to gain men over to his religion, by violent disputation, and ill usage; but only by fair and strong reasons proposed to them, and urged upon them, in a candid, free and peaceable manner; endeavouring to win upon their adversaries, by the meekness and sweetness of their temper, as well as by the strength of their arguments; this being the most likely means to rescue them from that state of ignorance and vice, to which the devil has hitherto enslaved them; and bring them to

VOL. II.

O

C H A P.

\* Ver. 23. [Unlearned questions,] ἀπαιδευτες ζητήσεις, questions that belong not to *Christianity*, the παιδεία, the *Christian institutions* or *instruction*. *Questions* about things never taught by Christ, never required of any Christian to believe at his baptism.

† Ver. 26. [And that they may recover, &c.] Note, The learned author of the *Paraphrase and Notes after Mr. Locke's manner*, has translated this verse in a very new, and (I think) a very judicious manner—but very agreeably to your sense of my paraphrase; viz. Thus: "That when they are taken (or saved) alive out of the snare of the devil by him" (viz. the faithful servant of the Lord) they may be awake "and active to do his (i. e. God's) will."

## C H A P. III.

*He again reminds Timothy of the dangerous Times, and wicked People, foretold to be under the Church of the Messiah. A Description of those Men, and their Principles. Encourages Timothy against them, from his own Example, and from the Advantages of his Acquaintance with the Ancient Scriptures.*

A. D. 67. I. **T**HIS know also  
that in the last  
\* 1 Tim. iv. days, perilous times  
I. shall come.

arise in times of the *Christian* church; the better to arm you against being surprised, and moved at them.

2 For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy,

3 Without natural affection, truce-breakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good.

4 Traitors, heady, high minded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God;

5 Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.

the noble purposes and designs of it.

I. **L**ET me again \* remind you of those predictions of our Saviour and his apostles, concerning the persecutions that would arise in times of the *Christian* church; the better to arm you against being surprised, and moved at them.

2. 3. & 4. Those predictions are now in some measure fulfilled in the *Jewish* zealots, that selfish, worldly-minded, proud, and abusive set of men that are arrived to that degree of ingratitude and impiety, as to break through the most natural and essential obligations, and violate all truth and faith with such as are not of their party; minding nothing but their own ambitious purposes and pleasures, in defiance of the express laws of God.

5. Having nothing to do, therefore, with a people that value themselves upon the mere outward name and privileges of religion; and, in their lives, contradict all

6. & 7.

6 For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts.

7 Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.

8 Now as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt minds, reprobate concerning the faith.

9 But they shall proceed no further: for their folly shall be manifest unto all *men*, as theirs also was.

10 But thou hast fully known my doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, long-suffering, charity, patience,

11 Persecutions, afflictions which came unto me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra; what persecutions I endured; but out of them all the Lord delivered me.

12 Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus, shall suffer persecution.

13 But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving

6. & 7. These are the men so <sup>A. D. 67.</sup> fond of making profelytes to their own opinions, as to insinuate themselves into all families, and gain upon women, and the weaker sort, that are prepared to their hand, by sinful affections and prejudices; that run after every new teacher, and so are kept in perpetual distraction and ignorance of sound religion.

8. These people oppose the true doctrines of *Christianity*, with the same obstinate and incurable prejudices, that the magicians of Egypt did the miracles of Moses; against the most evident and convincing demonstrations.

9. And they are soon like to come to the same wretched end, and show their opposition to be the effect of nothing but woful blindness and malice,

10. & 11. Be not you, therefore, terrified at their malicious endeavours; but make my doctrine your rule; let my life and conversation, my steady faith, charity, and patience under all my sufferings, particularly those at Antioch, &c. be your example, to encourage you to trust in God for the same powerful deliverances that I had from them all.

12. And, indeed, all that will be sincere *Christians*, must now expect, and be prepared for their share of sufferings.

13. For the successors of these deceitful impostors, instead of reforming, will in the *after times* of Christianity,

A. D. 67. ceiving, and being de-  
ceived.

Christianity, still improve in their wicked designs, running into deeper ignorance, drawing others into their errors, and persecuting all that oppose them.

14 But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned, and hast been assured of, knowing of whom thou hast learned them :

14. To avoid them, therefore, continue steady to the doctrines I have taught you ; and remember you learned them of one, who neither can nor will deceive you.

15 And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation, through faith which is in Christ Jesus.

15. And beside what I have particularly instructed you in, the knowledge you have attained from your constant perusal of the scriptures of the Old Testament, from your very infancy, will be of great advantage to you, to show you the truths of Christ's religion,

and keep you firm to the faith of it ; which will procure your eternal salvation.

16 All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness :

16. & 17. For \* those inspired writings are of great use to discover to us the truth and certainty of our *Christianity*, by showing us the *prophecies* that are now fulfilled, the *types* and *figures* that are now exactly answered in Christ and his religion ; and abounding, beside, in most wholesome precepts and prohibitions. By understanding of all which, the Christian minister is completely enabled to cor-

17 That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.

rect the errors and misunderstandings of these seducing *teachers*, concerning the nature of Christ's kingdom ; and to set forth all the true and saving doctrines of his holy religion.

CHAP.

---

\* Ver. 16. [All scripture is given by inspiration of God, *πάντα γραφὴ θεοπνεύματος, &c.* All writings that are of divine inspiration are profitable, *&c.*]—One old *MS.* with the Vulgar Arab. and Syr. Versions, as also some *fathers* in their quotations of this passage, leave out the *ἔν*. I make no question, but that *the scriptures by inspiration of God*, have a particular reference to the *prophecies* concerning Christ and his *kingdom*, and the *apostacy* from it.



## CHAP. IV.

*The Charge to Timothy solemnly renewed. The Jewish Obstinacy and Malice will grow Worse and Worse. The Apostle foretells his own Martyrdom, in full Assurance of his Reward as a Faithful Apostle. Tells him how the Christians deserted him: Appoints Timothy to hasten to him. Warns him against Alexander. The Salutations and Conclusion.*

**I** Charge thee, therefore, before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing, and his kingdom :

2 Preach the word, be instant in season, and out of season ; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long-suffering and doctrine. people ; correcting their errors and immoralities, and endeavouring with the utmost patience and constancy, to reduce them to a sense of true religion.

3 For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine ; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears.

4 And they shall turn away *their* ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.

**1. & 2.** **T**O conclude, then ; seeing you are encompassed with such || adversaries, and have such abilities bestowed on <sup>A. D. 67.</sup> <sup>|| Chap. iii.</sup> <sup>13, 14.</sup>

you to withstand them, I now again, most solemnly adjure you by God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ, the judge of all mankind at the great and solemn day of his appearance, to take all opportunities of refuting those false *teachers*, of urging and pressing the truths of *Christianity* upon all

3. & 4. My earnest repetition of this charge upon you is but too needful. For, as I \* before observed, those ignorant *zealots* are like <sup>\* Chap. iii.</sup> <sup>13.</sup> to be so far from a speedy reformation, that you will find them grow perfectly impatient of the true doctrines of our religion ; still more passionately fond of their new *teachers* that sooth them up in their lusts and vices ; and run wholly from the *gospel* principles to *Jewish* fables and traditions.

A. D. 67.

5 But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry.

6 For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand.

7 I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept \* the faith. and, as a racer, am have been faithful to

8 Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord the righteous judge shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing.

9 Do thy diligence to come shortly unto me:

10 For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica: Crescens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia.

11 Only

5. But however irreclaimable and vexatious they may prove, go you on in the work of your *gospel* ministry, and suffer patiently for the conscientious discharge of it.

6. I am also *now* the more warm in my exhortations to you, because I expect shortly to be taken from you, and become a sacrifice to their malice and obstinacy.

7. Nor am I at all discouraged at that prospect: For I have fought and suffered for the *Christian* cause like a hardy soldier; at the end of my course: For I

8. So that I have now nothing to do, but to wait for that glorious recompence and reward, which the great and righteous Judge of the world will not fail to bestow on me, and on all such who are conscious of having so sincerely performed their duty, as to wish for that happy day of Christ's final judgment.

9. & 10. Come to Rome to me as soon as possibly you can; for I am left almost quite alone; Demas having preferred the safety of his life before me and my cause, and is retired to Thessalonica; and I have sent away Crescens and Titus upon particular business.

11. & 12.

---

\* Ver. 7. [I have kept the faith.] *Τὴν πίστιν τηρέσας*, I have preserved my fidelity.

11 Only Luke is with me. Take Mark and bring him with thee; for he is profitable to me for the ministry.

12 And Tychicus have I sent to Ephesus.

13 The \* cloak that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest, bring *with thee*, and the books, *but* especially the parchments.

14. Alexander the copper smith did me much evil: the † Lord reward him according to his works.

15 Of whom be thou ware also; for he hath greatly withstood our words.

16 At my first answer no man stood with me, but all men forsook me: *I pray God* that it may not be laid to their charge.

17 Notwithstanding the Lord stood with me, and strengthened me; that by me the

11. & 12. I have also sent Ty- A. D. 67.  
chicus to *Ephesus*, so that I have now no body with me but Luke. When you come, therefore, bring Mark with you; for he will be very serviceable to me in assisting me to promote the gospel.

13. When I was last at *Troas*, I left a parchment \* roll, and some books there; bring them with you, but especially the *roll*.

14. & 15. Alexander the copper smith has been a great enemy to me: And I † leave him to God, to be recompenced as he deserves. Take heed of him, for he is a bitter adversary against the *Christian* cause.

16. When I was brought upon my first trial, almost ‡ all my Christian acquaintance at *Rome* forsook me: Pray God pity and forgive their cowardice.

17. But, while they relinquished me, I was divinely assisted to defend myself; and God was pleased to make me the instrument of  
O 4 spreading

\* *The cloak*, *φελονν*, a parchment roll, the same with *μεμει-  
εργα*—the parchments. The *Syriac* reads it [a chest of books].

† Ver. 14. [The Lord reward him]—This is not to be understood as an *imprecation*, but as a *prophet's* expression: As in like manner, is that dying speech of *Zachariah*, [The Lord look upon it, and requite it, 2 Chron. xxiv. 22. which is in the *future* tense, [God will look upon it].—

‡ [All men forsook me]. Omnibus, id est à maxima parte desertum se esse conqueritur. *Jerom.*

A. D. 67. the preaching might be fully known, and *that* all the Gentiles might hear: and I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion.

18 And the Lord shall deliver me† from every evil work, and will preserve *me* unto his heavenly kingdom: to whom *be* glory for ever and ever. Amen.

19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus.

20 Erastus abode at Corinth: but Trophimus have I left at Miletum sick.

¶ See Pearson, op. Post.

Trophimus falling sick at *Miletus*, in *Crete*, I was forced to leave him in that island.

21 Do thy diligence to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.

22 The Lord Jesus Christ *be* with thy spirit. Grace *be* with you. Amen.

spreading the gospel doctrine to the *Gentiles* of these parts, by delivering me from the sentence of the cruel \* *Emperor* for that time.

18. And, though I am *now* likely to be unjustly condemned, and suffer by him; yet, am I sure, God will still preserve me from doing † or saying any thing unbecoming my religion, or my ministerial office; and carry me through death into the happiness

of his heavenly kingdom: To whom therefore I ascribe all honour and glory for ever and ever. *Amen.*

19. My hearty Christian love to Aquila and Priscilla, with Onesiphorus and his family.

20. If you would know what is become of Erastus, I can only tell you, I left him at *Corinth* in my last || travels thither; and

in my last || travels thither; and

21. Come to me before winter, if you can. Eubulus, Pudens, Linus, Claudia, and all the Christians here salute you.

22. May the Lord Jesus Christ be your director and guide. His love and favour be ever with thee. *Amen.*

---

\* Nero or else his deputy Helius Cæsarianus.

† [And the Lord shall deliver me]. Et liberabit me, inquit (non à vinculis sed) ab omni opere malo. Pearson op. Post. pag. 25,

---

A  
P A R A P H R A S E  
ON THE  
EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL  
TO  
*T I T U S.*

---

THE PREFACE.

§ 1. **T**HE *time* of St. Paul's being in the island of *Crete*, and leaving Titus as bishop there, is placed, by some, in the year 55. viz. in his travels mentioned Acts xx. But our more accurate Bishop Pearson has shown good reasons against that ; and, much more probably, stated it in the interval between St. Paul's first and second confinement at *Rome*, viz. Anno Domini 63. dating this epistle the year following ; with which account Dr. Mill differs but in one single year.

§ 2. The occasion on which it was written is so perfectly the same with those to Timothy, that the substance and style of it may well be, as it appears, of the same strain. A church was indeed planted here, but wanted watering, cultivation, and due order. The natives of the island were an idle, false and luxurious people,

ple, say the ancient historians and geographers, agreeable to St. Paul's descriptions of them here, chap. i. but might have made more tractable *Christians*, had not their ill qualities and dispositions been fomented by the *Jewish* zealots, abounding in that place. Against whose ignorant and malicious prejudices the apostle most clearly levels all the characters he gives of a good bishop or church governor; and the several directions for the conduct of people of both *sexes*, in their respective ages, stations, and degrees, conformably to the two foregoing epistles, and to the general current of the other epistolary writings relating to those matters.

## C H A P. I.

*The Title and Salutation. The Design of St. Paul's leaving Titus Bishop in Crete, and of this Epistle to him; viz. To ordain Church Ministers, and reduce that Church to a regularity in Opinion and Practice; especially the Judaizing Part of them, that were more zealous about Jewish Traditions and Ceremonies than the Substantial matters of Christianity. The good Qualifications of a Church Governor. A bad Character of the Cretians, particularly the Jewish Inhabitants of that Island.*

Written  
A. D. 61

**1** PAUL, a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, according to the faith of God's elect, and the acknowledging of the truth, which is after godliness,

2 In hopes of eternal life, which God, that cannot lie, promised before the world began:

3 But hath in due time manifested his word

**1.** PAUL, a worshipper of the true God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, specially commissioned to preach his religion in its truth and purity, and convert men of *all nations* to the true faith of it.

2. & 3. A religion that gives all true believers, whether *Jews* or *Gentiles*, a full and sure hope of enjoying that great promise of eternal happiness, made by the God of *truth* himself, at first to Adam in

word through preaching, which is committed unto me, according to the commandment of God our Saviour:

wilful iniquities; yet is now again revived and declared to them *all*, under the *gospel dispensation* (the proper season made choice of by Divine Wisdom for that purpose): and *I* am appointed to publish it for the salvation of all the world.

4 To Titus, mine own son after the common faith, grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour.

5 For this cause left I thee in Crete, that \* thou shouldst set in order the things that are wanting, and ordain elders in every city, as I had appointed thee.

several cities of that island, to put them in due and constant execution.

6 If any be blameless, the husband of one wife, having faithful children, not accused of riot, or unruly.

7 For a bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God: not self-willed, not soon angry, not given to wine; no striker, nor given to filthy lucre;

the beginning of the world, and to Abraham and the *patriarchs* afterward: which, though lost and forgotten by the far greater part of the *Gentile* nations, through their manifold corruptions, and

4. I Paul send this epistle to Titus, my dear convert to Christianity; wishing him all divine favour and happiness from God the Father, and Jesus Christ our Saviour and Governor.

5. To remind you of the good end for which I consecrated and left you bishop of the church of Crete, viz. to perfect the conversion I had there begun, to give such rules of doctrine and discipline as were wanting, and to ordain other church-ministers in the

6. & 7. Now a *bishop* and governor of a Christian church, as a steward over God's family, ought in general, to be a person of an unexceptionable character; and, in particular, ought not to be one that has been guilty either of the polygamy of the heathens, or of divorcing his wife for humour-some reasons, and marrying others, according to the corrupt usages of the Jews. He must be one that has

\* Ver. 5. [That thou shouldst set in order the things that are wanting. Or, *ἵνα τὰ λείποντα διορθώσῃ*, to rectify disorders].

A. D. 64. has educated his family in the Christian faith; that no body can accuse of the least debauchery or disorderly life; not stubborn or passionate in his words, or violent in his behaviour; addicted neither to drunkenness, nor any sordid practices for worldly gains.

8 But a lover of hospitality, a lover of good men, sober, just, holy, temperate,

8. But, on the contrary, must be a person hospitable and charitable, grave in his carriage, just in his dealings, devoted to the service of God, and temperate in his pleasures.

9 Holding fast the faithful word, as he hath been taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine both to exhort and to convince the gainsayers.

9. In fine, he must be steady to the true Christian doctrine, by the truth and strength whereof, he may be able to comfort and support the orthodox, and to confute and reprove the erroneous and obstinate.

10 For there are many unruly and vain talkers and deceivers, especially they of the circumcision:

10. Of which latter you have abundance in Crete, whose business is to talk and dispute, and seduce the minds of men; but especially the Jewish zealots, and

such Christian converts as they have corrupted with their notions.

11 Whose mouths must be stopped, who subvert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, for filthy lucre's sake.

11. These men, however false and vain their arguments be, must yet be answered and confuted; for they gain upon whole families by their unreasonable suggestions, which they spread about,

only for present profit and applause.

12 One of themselves, even a prophet of their own, said, The Cretians are always liars, evil beasts, slow bellies\*.

12. & 13. When the poet *Epimenides*, a native of their own, described the Cretians, as a false, mischievous, and luxurious people, he said what was as true of these Jewish inhabitants, as it could be

13 This

of

---

\* Ver. 12. *Slow bellies*, *μαστίτες ἀργαί*, not *slow* but *swift*, *eager bellies*, like that of *κατὰ θηρία*, *evil wild beasts*. So in *Homer*, *κύνες ἀργαί* are *swift dogs*.



13 This witness is true : wherefore \* rebuke them sharply, that they may be found in the faith ; the original *natives* of the place : A. D. 64. and therefore you must keep them under a strict censure and discipline ; especially such of either of them as are *Christian* converts, to reduce them again to true Christian principles.

14 Not giving heed to Jewish fables, and commandments of men, that turn from the truth. 14. For they are now addicted to hardly any thing but the study of *Jewish* fables and traditions ; that tend to nothing but to corrupt the Christian faith.

15 Unto the pure all things are pure : but unto them that are defiled and † unbelieving is nothing pure ; but even their mind and conscience is defiled. 15. Their *Jewish* teachers persuade them to put the stress of religion upon nice distinctions of *meats* and *drinks*, clean and unclean things : whereas, alas ! a *Gentile* convert, that lives up to the faith and precepts of *Christianity*, is clean and pure in the

sight of God, let him *eat* or *touch* what he will ; while *they*, by their obstinate infidelity and immoralities, can perform no acceptable service to God ; and their nicest ceremonies signify just nothing ‡.

16 They profess that they know God ; but in works they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every goodworkreprobate†. 16. They boast themselves to be the only people in covenant with God, and acquainted with true religion : but their practices are a contradiction to all such pretences, and their stubborn disobedience to the plainest laws of

God, has now rendered them odious to him, whose church and people they once were.

C H A P.

\* Ver. 13. [Rebuke them sharply, ἀποτόμως, Cut them, as it were, to the quick.

† Ver. 15. [And unbelieving. Ἀπίστοις, unfaithful, treacherous, though they were pretended believers.

‡ Ver. 16. [Unto every good work reprobate. Πρὸς πᾶν ἔργον ἀγαθὸν ἀδοκιμοί, stupid and injudicious as to every good work. See note on Rom. i. 28.

## C H A P. II.

*Titus's Charge to a prudent and courageous Behaviour against the forementioned Persons and their Principles. Advices concerning elderly Men and Women; particularly such as were in any Church-office. Concerning Servants or Slaves. The Christian Religion equally concerns all Ranks and Degrees of People.*

A. D. 64. **BUT** speak thou the things which become sound doctrine. **1. BEING**, therefore compassed with such a number of false teachers, and misled converts, make it your more earnest business to preach, and press the true doctrine of Christianity, upon all persons, in their several stations and degrees.

**2** That the aged men be sober, grave, temperate, sound in faith, in charity, in patience: **2. Viz.** Urge it as the great duty of the *elder* sort of men, particularly such as are *presbyters* of the church, to be grave, serious, and temperate in their conversation, sound in Christian principles, charitable to all, and patient under the sufferings that befall them.

**3** The aged women likewise, that *they be* in behaviour as becometh holiness; not false accusers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things; **3.** And that all elderly women, particularly such as are employed by the church\*, in the baptism of women, and in other offices of like nature, use such habit, gesture and behaviour as become Christians; no way addicted to slander or drunkenness, but to be exemplary in all the virtues that adorn their *sex*.

\* Deaconesses.  
See 1 Tim. iii. 11.

**4** That they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children, **4. & 5.** That, by their good example, the younger women may be influenced to a sober, modest, discreet and chaste behaviour; to mind the business of their families,  
5 To

5 To be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own \* husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed.

6 Young men likewise exhort to be sober-minded.

7 In all things showing thyself a pattern of good works: in doctrine *showing* uncorruptness, gravity, sincerity,

8 Sound speech that cannot be condemned; that he that is of the contrary part may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you.

9 Exhort servants to be obedient unto their own masters, and to please *them* well in all things: not answering again;

10 Not purloining, but showing all good fidelity; that they may adorn the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things.

thing, diligently and faithfully, without rudely contradicting their commands, or defrauding them by the least neglect or injustice: by which they will become a credit to their profession, even in the low station wherein Providence has placed them.

11 For the grace of God, that bringeth salvation, hath appeared unto all men.

12 Teach-

lies, to respect their husbands, and take due care of their children; and so, on their part, cut off all occasions from any to think or speak reproachfully of our holy religion. A. D. 64.

6. In like manner, exhort all young *men* to a due and careful government of their passions.

7. & 8. And thus, in relation to all ranks of people, do your utmost to become truly exemplary in the purity and simplicity of your *doctrine*, and the sincerity of your *practice*; that so neither *Jewish* nor *Gentile* adversary may find any reasonable objection against you.

9. & 10. And, whereas the *Jewish* zealots would persuade *men*, that their religious privileges exempt them even from *civil* and *natural* † obligations to men of different and false religions; be the more earnest to warn all such Christians, as are servants or *slaves* (though it be to *heathen* masters) against so false a principle. Exhort them to serve their respective masters, in every lawful

thing, diligently and faithfully, without rudely contradicting their commands, or defrauding them by the least neglect or injustice: by which they will become a credit to their profession, even in the low station wherein Providence has placed them.

11. & 12. For the gracious religion of the gospel lays the same excellent duties of piety, justice, and sobriety, upon the lowest *slave*,

\* See Pref. to the Ephesians, § 4.

† See Pref. to the Ephesians, § 4.

A. D. 64.

12 Teaching us, as much as upon the highest *master*, equally respecting all ranks and degrees of mankind. that denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present world;

13 Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ:

Saviour Jesus, to judge the world.

14 Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

15 These things speak and exhort, and rebuke with all authority. Let no man despise thee.

such as openly contradict them, that they may not slight and undervalue your authority.

13. And as *all* have the same *duties* and conditions, so have they the same comfortable *hope* and expectation of a glorious reward for their obedience, at the appearance of the Great God, and our

14. Even of that Saviour, who gave his life a sacrifice for the redemption of *all* mankind, to procure the pardon of their sins, and restore and oblige all to that sincere practice of piety and virtue, which makes us the true and beloved members of his church.

15. These are the truths you ought to declare and urge upon men, in the most authoritative manner: and, with so prudent a severity, to censure and punish

CHAP. III.

*Of Duty to Magistrates, against Railing, and Evil speaking. The Gospel-religion intended for the Reformation and Happiness of both Gentile and Jew. Pardon and Salvation not to be attained by the nicest Observation of the Ceremonial Law, but is the Effect of the pure Mercy of God, on Condition of our sincere Obedience to the Gospel Commands. Against Jewish Traditions and Genealogies. A Heretic not to be excommunicated, till after just and due Admonition. Charitableness recommended. The Salutations and Conclusion.*

**I** PUT them in mind to be subject to principalities and powers, to obey magistrates to be ready to every good work.

their nation and religion. Remind them often, that Christianity alters no civil rights; and that they ought to pay all just submission to the emperor, and all due † and cheerful respect to all their superiors.

2 To speak evil of no man, to be no brawlers, *but* gentle, showing all meekness unto all men.

3 For we \* ourselves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, VOL. II. deceived,

**1.** **A** Nother prejudice you must A. D. 64. carefully warn the *Jewish* zealots against, is, *that no heathen governors have any obedience due to them from God's people; † nor* any magistrates that are not of


their nation and religion. Remind them often, that Christianity alters no civil rights; and that they ought to pay all just submission to the emperor, and all due † and cheerful respect to all their superiors.

2. Warn them also against that prevailing temper of reviling, and furiously contending with all that are not of the same religious sentiments with themselves.

3. All Christians, both *Gentile* and *Jewish*, ought to be the more patient and condescending in their behaviour

† πᾶν ἑργον ἀγαθόν.

\* Ver. 3. [We ourselves.] St Paul either mixes himself with the *Gentile* Christians (as in several other passages) or, perhaps, speaks of *himself strictly*, denoting what temper he was of before his conversion.

A. D. 64.  deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful *and* hating one another.

they all lately were,

4 But after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour toward man appeared,

5 Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy, he saved us by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost ;

6 Which he shed on us abundantly, through Jesus Christ our Saviour :

7 That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

the Jews lay any claim to, by the most exact observance of their *ceremonial* law.

8 *This is a* \* faithful saying, and these things I will that thou affirm constantly, that they which have believed in God, might be careful† to maintain good works : these things are good and profitable unto men.

9 But

behaviour toward their adversaries, when they consider this turbulent, selfish, and quarrellsome disposition favours too much of that unregenerate state, wherein before their conversion.

4. 5. 6. & 7. And that it was the design of this great mercy of God in the gospel revelation, and in receiving them into the happy privileges of the Christian covenant by baptism, and the gracious influences of the Holy Spirit attending their admission into it, to reform them from such a temper : and to prevent all further disputes about the necessity of their *external* matters of religion ; they ought to remember they were *all* thus redeemed, and put into a capacity of eternal life and happiness, by the pure and sole mercy of God through Christ ; a mercy which neither the Gentiles could in the least merit, by virtue of any thing they did, or could have done ; nor

8. These are the \* certain and most substantial points of *Christianity* ; and it is of infinite importance to *you* and *them*, to persuade them to be chiefly bent upon possessing themselves of so gentle and charitable a temper, and upon such practices as are the indispensable conditions of these mighty blessings and privileges.

9. Where\_

\* Ver. 8. [A faithful saying.] See the notes on 1 Tim. xv. 2 Tim. ii. 11.

† Ver. 8. [Might be careful to maintain good works.] Καλῶν ἔργων προίκανός, to prefer, to excel in, good works.

9 But avoid foolish \* questions, and genealogies, and contentions, and strivings, about the law; for they are unprofitable and vain.

10 A man that is an heretic, after the first and second admonition, † reject:

11 Knowing that he that is such, is subverted, and sinneth, being condemned of himself.

temper, to set himself up as *head* of a *party*, ready to join with any *sect* whatever, for promoting some *worldly* end and purpose; let him † be expelled from the Christian church, as one that acts against the plain dictates of his own conscience; and is to be looked on as a lost and profligate person, and his conversation avoided.

12 When I shall send Artemas unto thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come unto me to Nicopolis: for I have determined there to winter.

13 Bring Zenas the lawyer, and Apollos on their journey diligently, that nothing be wanting unto them.

14 And let ours also learn ‡ to maintain good works for necessary

9. Wherefore reject and dis- A. D. 64.  
countenance all the frivolous and contentious disputes about *Jewish* traditions, pedigrees, and ceremonies; as being of no manner of advantage, but the greatest obstacles to the Christian profession.

10. & 11. Whatever pretended Christian is obstinately and incurably bent upon maintaining such doctrines, or practices, as are directly contradictory to the known rules of our religion\*; and such \* *αἰρετικὸς* as, upon sufficient admonition, he *ὁς ἀνθρώπου* cannot but, *himself*, know to be *πῶς*.

so; and all this out of a *faction*

so; and all this out of a *faction* temper, to set himself up as *head* of a *party*, ready to join with any *sect* whatever, for promoting some *worldly* end and purpose; let him † be expelled from the Christian church, as one that acts against the plain dictates of his own conscience; and is to be looked on as a lost and profligate person, and his conversation avoided.

12. As soon as I send either Artemas, or Tychicus, to supply your place, make it your business to meet me at Nicopolis, for I intend to stay there the winter season.

13. Supply Zenas and Apollos with all necessaries for their voyage to me.

14. And be careful to exhort all Christians, but especially the *Jewish* ‡ converts (who most want ‡ *ἡμετέροις* the

P 2

\* Ver. 9. [Foolish questions.] See 2 Tim. ii. 23.

† Ver. 10, [An heretic—reject, *παραιτῶ*, avoid him, have nothing to do with him.]

‡ Ver. 14. [Let ours learn.] Some learned persons think that by *ours*, he means the *Gentile* converts. Let the reader judge.

A. D. 64. necessary uses, that they the advice) to the exercise of cha-  
 be not unfruitful. rity and \* beneficence, wherever  
 \* καλῶν there is occasion for it, without distinction, upon any  
 ἐργων. account of different sentiments and opinions.

15 All that are with  
 me salute thee. Greet  
 them that love us in  
 the faith. Grace be  
 with you all. Amen.

15. All the Christians with me  
 send their hearty love to you. Do  
 the same from us to all that bear  
 us any Christian respect. The  
 Divine love and favour be with  
 you all. Amen.

A P A R A-



---

A

P A R A P H R A S E

ON THE

EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL

TO

P H I L E M O N.

---

THE PREFACE.

ONESIMUS was servant (or *slave*) to Philemon the *Colossian*, one of St. Paul's converts. He had robbed, and ran away from his master. The better to lie undiscovered, he gets to Rome, where the *apostle* then lay, under his *first* (see ver. 22.) confinement. St. Paul providentially happens upon this man; converts him to the Christian faith; and now sends him back to his *master*, with this epistle of reconciliation: wherein are so many lively strokes of generous humanity and Christian compassion to a reformed *sinner*; of such *justice*, mixed with so much *sweetness* and *condescension*, along with the *authority* of an *apostle*, toward one that was both a *friend* and a *disciple*, as may render it a just wonder, to find some people of opinion, that *this* epistle contained so little in it, as to be unworthy to be ranked among St. Paul's writings. For more particular moral reflections from this letter, the curious reader may be referred to the excellent preface of St. Chrysostome.

## PHILEMON.

Written  
A. D. 62.



† Theodo-  
ret.

|| See Philip.  
i. i.

1 PAUL a prisoner of Jesus Christ, and Timothy *our* brother, unto Philemon our dearly beloved, and fellow-labourer,

2 And to *our* beloved Apphia, and Archippus, our fellow-foldier, and to the church in thy house :

3 Grace to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I thank my God, making mention of thee always in my prayers,

5 Hearing of thy love and faith which thou hast toward the Lord Jesus, and toward all saints ;

6 That the communication † of thy faith may become effectual by the acknowledged-

1. 2. & 3. I Paul, that am now a prisoner at Rome for the sake of Jesus Christ, and his religion, send this epistle to my dear convert, and fellow-labourer Philemon, and to my dear friend Apphia † his wife, not forgetting Archippus, my brother minister, and all your Christian family : wishing you all divine favours and blessings from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ. As doth || Timothy also, who is now with me.

4. & 5. Expressing my hearty thanks to God (which indeed I never omit to do whenever \* I mention you in my prayers (for your steadiness to the Christian religion, and your charity to all its professors, which I hear to be so exemplary and remarkable.

6. & 7. For it cannot but be a matter of the deepest satisfaction to me, to have such ample testimonies of your Christian sincerity in your

\* [Making mention of thee alway in my prayers.] Or thus, *ευχαριστῶ τῷ θεῷ πάντοτε, μνησὼν σε ποιούμενος.* [I always thank God when I mention you in my prayers.

† Ver. 6. [The communication of thy faith—*ἡ κοινωνία τῆς πίστεως σε*, your sharing or partaking of the (Christian) faith.

Ibid. [By the acknowledging of every good thing—*ἐν ἀποκρίσει*, By your manifesting every good thing to be in you.

ledging of every good thing which is in you in Christ Jesus.

your generous relief of the indigent and suffering members of that holy profession. A. D. 62.

7 For we have great joy and consolation in thy love, because the bowels of the saints are refreshed by thee, brother.

8 Wherefore, tho' I might be much bold in Christ, to enjoin thee that which is convenient,

9 Yet for love sake I rather beseech thee, being such a one as Paul the \* aged, and now also a prisoner of Jesus Christ.

the faith you so much esteem and value.

10 I beseech thee for my son Onesimus, whom I have begotten in my bonds:

11 Which in time past was to † thee unprofitable: but now profitable to thee and to me:

ful service for the future, and become a profitable servant to *you*, and a credit to *me*.

12 Whom I have sent again: thou therefore receive him that is mine own bowels.

13 Whom

8. & 9. Wherefore, with a person of a good and generous disposition, I shall have no occasion to insist upon the respect and reverence he owes me, as his *apostle* and first converter; but hope, it may be sufficient for gaining your compliance with a request I am now going to make to you, to apply myself to you as a *friend*, as an *aged* friend, and a *prisoner* for

10. & 11. My suit is not in my *own* behalf, but of the bearer, your servant Onesimus; who, though once so treacherous, † as to rob and run away from you; yet, now that I have converted him to the *Christian* religion, will, I doubt not, make you the utmost amends, by a diligent and faithful

12. In full assurance of which, I now send him back to you, and beg you would entertain him again; if not for his *own*, yet for *my* sake,

P 4

as

\* Ver. 9. Paul *the aged*—Or perhaps Παῦλος πρεσβύτης, Paul *the ambassador*, agreeably to 2 Cor. v. 20, Eph. vi. 20. Indeed it does not appear that St. Paul was a very *aged* man when this epistle was written; though it may well be allowed, that the many *fatigues* and *hardships* he had undergone, might bring an *earlier* old age upon him than upon the generality of mankind.

† [To thee unprofitable, ἀχρηστον, injurious]. See Rom. i. 28. Eph. v. 11. Thus inutilis among the Latins is injurious.

A. D. 62. as a person now exceeding dear to me: For remember, I had the pleasure to make him a convert in my *bonds*, and the son of my *old age*.

13 Whom I would have retained with me, that in thy stead he might have ministered unto me in the bonds of the gospel.

14 But without thy mind would I do nothing, that thy benefit should not be as it

15 For perhaps he therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldest \* receive him for ever:

16. Not now as a servant, but above a servant, a brother beloved, specially to me, but how much more unto thee, both in the flesh, and in the Lord?

17 If thou count me therefore a partner, receive him as myself.

18 If he hath wronged thee, or oweth thee *ought*, put that on mine account.

18 I Paul have written it † with mine own hand, I will repay it: albeit I do not say to thee, how thou owest unto me even thine own self besides.

13. & 14. Indeed I could willingly have kept him here, to do me those good offices, in my confinement, which I know yourself would gladly perform, if you could: But, as you have a right to him, I would reap the benefit of no one's servant, without his master's leave. were of necessity, but willingly.

15. And I think, you may well look on it as an act of *Providence*, that his leaving you, for a while, should prove so happy an occasion of improving him into a faithful

19. Entertain him, therefore, now, not only in the character of a good *servant*, but also of a Christian *brother*. Consider how dear he is to *me* in that relation; and look upon him not only as your *domestic*, but as a fellow member of the same Christian *church* with us both.

17. And show the respect you bear to *me*, by the generous reception you give *him*.

18 & 19. As to any damage he has done you, though I could balance that account, by remembering you owe your very salvation to *me*, as the instrument of your conversion; yet I waive that at present, and here give you, under my own hand-writing, † to make good whatever you have lost by him.

20. Do

\* [Receive him again forever]. *αἰώνιον*—[A servant for life].  
† [With my own hand]. See Rom. xvi. 26. 1 Cor. xvi. 21. 2 Thess. iii. 17.

20 Yea, brother, let me have joy of thee in the Lord : refresh my bowels in the Lord.

21 Having confidence in thy obedience, I wrote unto thee, knowing that thou wilt also do more than I say.

12 But withal, prepare me also a lodging, for I trust that through your prayers I shall be given unto you.

23 There salute thee Epaphras, my fellow prisoner in Christ Jesus.

24 Marcus Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas, my fellow labourers.

25 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

20. Do not, therefore, dear brother, deny the Christian pleasure and comfort you will do me, by your forgiveness and compassion to one so near and dear to me. A. D. 62.

21. The great opinion I have of your dutiful respect toward me, suffers me not to doubt of a compliance from you, even beyond what I have requested.

22. I must desire lodgings at your house, intending to visit you when my *trial* is over ; in which I doubt not but to be cleared, by the concurrence of yours, and other good Christians prayers.

23. & 24. Epaphras, my fellow prisoner for the same cause of Christ, as also Mark, Aristarchus, Demas and Luke, that labour with me in promoting the gospel in these parts, send their hearty Christian love to you.

25. The love and favour of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you, and direct your mind. *Amen.*

---

A  
P A R A P H R A S E  
ON  
THE EPISTLE  
TO THE  
H E B R E W S.

---

THE PREFACE.

THE testimony of all ancient copies and translations, with the concurrent suffrage of the best writers, both ancient and modern, give such evidence for St. Paul's \* being the author of this excellent epistle, that the objections, or rather scruples, brought to the contrary are of no weight. His mentioning himself as lately a prisoner, chap. x. 34. and in *Italy*, chap. xiii. 24. with Timothy's enlargement, and a promise to visit the *Hebrews* along with *him*, chap. xiii. 23. do sufficiently clear the *time* of its *date* to have been just after his deliverance from his first *trial* at *Rome*, viz. Anno Domini 63. as both Bishop Pearson and Dr. Mill have adjusted it. All, therefore, that will be further needful to let the reader into the main spirit of this writing is, to observe something concerning the *persons* to whom, and the *occasion* upon which it was written.

§ I. I

---

\* See Dr. Mill's Prolegom. § 83, &c. and Mr. Hallet's Introduction to his Supplem. to Mr. Pierce on the Hebrews.

§ 1. I have formerly observed the *Hebrews* to signify <sup>Hebrews</sup> the native inhabitants of the *Jewish land*, as distinguish-<sup>who?</sup> ed from the *foreign Jews* dispersed in other countries ; who went under the name of *Hellenists*, or *Greeks*; though, most properly, the *converts* or *profelytes* to the *Jewish* religion were called by this name. (See *Acts* x. 2. and vi. 1). With these *believing Jews* of *Palestine*, St. Paul held a constant intimacy and correspondence, had a free access to them in his writings and arguments, from the obligations he had laid them under, by the charitable collections he had made, and the constant care he took for their poor, *Acts* xxiv. 17. 1 *Cor.* xvi. 2 *Cor.* viii. and ix. So that though it be no question but that this epistle was intended for the conviction of the *Jews* of *all* nations, and the confirmation of the *Jewish converts*, wherever dispersed, yet it was thus prudently directed to them of the *Holy Land*: to *them* first who were the immediate and constant attendants on those religious ordinances and ceremonies, the insufficiency and abolishment whereof was the chief argument of this letter, and to that place that was the centre of the *circumcision*, from whence his epistle might, the sooner and better, be communicated to the whole circumference of their *dispersion*. (See Sir Isaac Newton's *Observations on the Apocalypse*, chap. 1).

§ 2. St. Paul in his second epistle to the \* *Thessalonians* \* The occasion of it, had foretold a great *apostacy*, which, so far as is related to the *Jewish* people, may be interpreted, either of the <sup>chap. ii. 3.</sup> general revolt of their nation from the *Roman* government, or of their *Christian converts* from the religion of Christ, agreeably to our Saviour's prediction, *Mat.* xxiv. 12. In the latter of these senses, it began now to be fulfilled by a too general desertion of the *Jewish Christians*, frightened from their profession by the furious persecution of the infidel *Jews*. To arm some, and to recover others from this *apostacy*, was the purpose of this epistle: The substance whereof, may, I think, be reduced to the following arguments.

*First*, The superlative excellency of Christ's person, not only above that of Moses, but above the very *angels* too, by the ministration of whom the *Jewish* law was delivered. This is the argument of the two first chapters.

*Secondly*, The dignity and perfect efficacy of Christ's *priesthood*, and the insufficiency of the *Levitical* one, together with the wisdom and advantage of his being not a *temporal monarch*, but a *suffering Messiah*, make up the discourse from the *third* to the *ninth* chapter.

*Thirdly*, The mere figurative nature, and utter insufficiency of the legal *ceremonies* and *sacrifices*, and the perfect sufficiency of Christ's *death*, for the redemption and pardon of mankind, is the purpose of the *ninth* and *tenth* chapters.

And *Fourthly*, To obviate that prejudice and bold assertion of the *Jews*, that to forsake the *Mosaical religion* was to *apostatize from God*, the *eleventh* chapter is spent in showing, the faith of *Christians* to be the exercise of the same virtuous *principle*, whereby all holy men of old rendered themselves acceptable to God, and stand upon record as his true and eminent servants.

These are severally intermixed with their proper inferences and exhortations, all tending to show the *Jewish Christians* the unreasonableness, folly, and danger of falling off again from the *Christian* faith to the *Jewish* religion; and to support and spirit them under the persecution that tended to draw them from it.

§ 3. It is of no great moment to know the true reason, why the apostle thought not fit to prefix his *name* to this epistle: The most probable one seems to be, that he might give the less offence to the *infidel Jews* of that country, who were enraged at him as a preacher to the *Gentiles*; or that, having owned himself the *apostle* of the *circumcision*, he concealed his *name*, to give the less disgust to such *Jewish Christians* as were not fully weaned from their prejudices in that matter. (See Dr. Mill's *Prolegom.* § 99, 100.)

I say nothing concerning the original *language* in which this epistle was written by St. Paul. I rest myself contented in the opinion of those who, upon the support of the best of ancient tradition, conclude it to have been written in the *Syriac* (commonly, at that time, called the *Hebrew*) language; and translated into *Greek* by St. Luke. In confirmation of which sentiment, I cannot do better than refer my reader to the ingenuous and learned Mr. Hallet's Introduction to his *Supplement to Mr. Pierce on the Hebrews*.



## CHAP. I.

*The Apostle's first Argument for dissuading the Jewish Christians from Apostizing from Christianity to the Jewish Religion; viz. The Truth and Certainty of Christ's Religion, and the superlative Dignity of his Person, not only above Moses, but even those very Angels by whom the Jewish Law was delivered.*

1 **G**OD, who at sundry \* times, and in divers manners, spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets,

2 Hath in these last days spoken unto us by *his* Son, whom he has appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds.

adam, Abraham, Moses, and all the *Jewish prophets*, to this day; wherein he has made the *last* and complete discovery of his divine will to us and all mankind, by Jesus Christ, the promised *Messiah*: A person of most superlative dignity and excellence, being that *Word* † and *Son of God*, by whom the Father created the whole world, ‡ and governs all the dispensations of it, and has constituted him the Lord and Governor over all created beings.

3 Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things

1. & 2. **T**O preserve you, dear brethren, from that general apostacy from the Christian faith, to which the false doctrines, and furious persecutions of the *Jews*, are now so prevalent to draw the believers of that nation: Let me request you seriously to consider, that your Christian religion is a revelation from the same God, who, in several times, manners, and degrees, revealed his will to your forefathers, down from A-

dam, Abraham, Moses, and all the *Jewish prophets*, to this day; wherein he has made the *last* and complete discovery of his divine will to us and all mankind, by Jesus Christ, the promised *Messiah*: A person of most superlative dignity and excellence, being that *Word* † and *Son of God*, by whom the Father created the whole world, ‡ and governs all the dispensations of it, and has constituted him the Lord and Governor over all created beings.

3. Whose origination is not like that of other prophets and law-givers, of mere human and mortal extraction, nor produced into being by the agency of any subordinate

Written  
A. D. 63.

† John i.  
1, &c.  
‡ τὸ ἄνω-  
γεῖν. The  
ages or dis-  
pensations.

\* Ver. 1. At sundry times. *πολυμερῆς*, or in sundry parts, or parcels.

A. D. 63. things by the word of  
 his power, when he  
 § ἀπ' αὐ- had by himself purged  
 γασμα. our sins, sat down on  
 the right hand of the  
 majesty on high :

the Father made and preserves all things. Nor did he, after the great sacrifice of himself in the flesh, for the perfect redemption of mankind, die and leave us, like other *priests* ; but was exalted to the highest degree of heavenly glory and majesty, to become a most powerful and constant *intercessor* with the *Father* for all true believers.

4 Being made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they.

clearly be seen from all those scripture passages that describe the person, office, and authority of the *Messiah*.

5 For unto which  
 || Acts xiii. of the angels said he  
 33. at any time, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son?

David or Solomon (though the most famous princes) so neither were such distinguished characters ever given to the highest *angel* or *archangel* whatever ; but must be meant of Christ, of whom David was a *type* and *figure*.

6 † And again, when he bringeth in the first-begotten

4. Thus is Christ, in dignity of nature and character, far superior, not only to all mankind, but even to the very *angels*, by whose ministry the *Mosaical* law was delivered to your nation. As may most

5. Thus (in *Psal.* ii.) He is styled, the || *Son*, the peculiarly begotten Son of God. And (in 2. *Sam.* vii. 14. 1 *Chron.* xxii. 10.) God declares himself his Father, by way of special eminence. Which expressions, as they could no way be applicable \* to the persons of

6. Again, The scripture, in other passages, speaking † of the triumphant

\* See the learned Dr. Pierce's note upon this *verse*.

† [And again, when he bringeth in]—εἰσαγάγειν may refer either to the *scripture*, or to God the *Father*. [The bringing him again into the world,] may signify either the *scriptures* speaking again of Christ's coming into the world, or the *Father's* bringing Christ into the world again at his *resurrection*, say some, or at the last day of *judgment*, as others. I have expressed it as agreeably as I could to each of these acceptations.

begotten into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him.

commanding *all angels to*

7 And of the angels he saith, Who maketh his angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire.

ness and efficacy in their office, to *winds and flames*, (Psal. cxiii. 20, 21.)

8 But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever, a sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of thy kingdom:

9 Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God, *even* thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows.

10 And, thou, Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundations of the earth: and the heavens are the works of thine hands.

11 They shall perish, but thou remainest: and they all shall wax old as doth a garment.

12 And as a vesture shalt thou fold them up, and they shall be changed; but thou art the same, and thy years shall not fail.

13 But to which of the angels said he at any

phant resurrection of Christ, and his being made the Saviour, Lord, and Judge of the whole world, representing God the Father as commanding *him*, (Psal. xcvi. 7. \*)

7. Whereas the loftiest titles the scriptures ever give to the *angels*, are no higher than those of *messengers* and *ministers* of God; comparing them, for their swiftness in their office, to *winds* and *flames*,

8. 9. 10. 11. & 12. But, in a quite different strain, does David represent the *Messiah*, viz. As the *only Son of God, the Creator, Lord and Governor of the whole world; as a perfectly wise, just, and righteous Governor over all created beings; and not, like them of a created, finite and temporary existence, at least of a finite and temporary authority, but of a nature and dominion truly divine, eternal and immutable.*

13. So also, when the Psalmist (Psal. cx. 1.) introduceth God the Father

---

\* Deut. xxxii. 43. according to the *LXX*; and to that passage, in all probability (as some think) the apostle refers; that of Psal. xcvi. 7, being, not as it is here, *all the angels of God*, but *all ye gods*. But, as *angels* are often styled *gods* in scripture, there is no weight in that argument. See Mr. Pierce upon this place.

A. D. 63. any time, Sit on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool? *Father speaking to Christ his Son, to take possession of his utmost height of heavenly glory and majesty, and get the entire conquest over sin, Satan, death, and all the enemies of his kingdom:* It is in such expressions as are infinitely too great to be meant of the most exalted *angel* or created spirit.

14 Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who should be heirs of salvation? 14. In fine, the highest of *angels* are but *ministers* and *messengers* of God; they were but *ministers* in delivering the *law* the *Jews* so much boast of; and they are still the same to the *Christian* church; assisting and ministering to *us*, in such measures as God is pleased to appoint: But Christ is the Lord and *Head* over both *us* and *them*\*.

## CHAP. II.

*An Inference from the foregoing Argument: viz. That Christians are obliged to the utmost Care and Constancy in their Religion, as being delivered by a Person of greater Dignity than the very Angels that conveyed the Mosaic Law. The Excellency of Christ's Person further illustrated. His being a Suffering Saviour no Objection; but the utmost Testimony of the Wisdom and Goodness of the Christian Dispensation, for the Benefit of sinful Mankind.*

1. **T**HEREFORE we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should let them slip.

2 For

1. **T**HE superlative dignity then of the *person* of Jesus Christ, ought to render you the more regardful of the religion, and the more resolute to adhere to the doctrines he has revealed to us; so as never to be drawn, or tempted from them.

2. 3. & 4. For

\* *Note*, For a more complete understanding of the force of the apostle's argument in these passages, I can do nothing better than to refer the reader to the learned *notes* of Mr. Pierce.

2 For if the word spoken by angels was stedfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompence of reward :

3 How shall we escape if we neglect so great salvation, which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, *and* was confirmed unto us by them that heard *him* ;

4 God also bearing them witness, both with signs and wonders, and with divers miracles, and gifts of the Holy Ghost, according to his own will ?

5 For unto the angels hath he not put in subjection the world to come, whereof we speak.

6 But one in a certain place testified, saying, What is man that thou art mindful of him : or the son of man that thou visitest him ?

7 Thou madest him a little lower than the angels, thou crownedst him with glory and honour, and didst set him over the works of thy hands.

8 Thou hast put all things in subjection under his feet. For in that he put all in subjection under him, he left nothing that is not put under him. But now we see not yet all things put under him.

VOL. II.

2. 3. & 4. For if God did in so <sup>A. D. 63.</sup> exact and severe a manner, vindicate the honour of the *Jewish law* ; that was conveyed to that people by the ministry of *angels* only ; insomuch that every contemptuous violation of it was punished with immediate death †, and had † <sup>Chap. v. 2.</sup> no sacrifices to atone for it: How much more dreadful must be the punishment of such as wilfully neglect and forsake the mercies of the *Christian* religion, that were revealed and brought down to us from heaven by the very *Son* of God himself ; the truth whereof was, in such ample manner, demonstrated to us his *apostles*, by the powers of the Holy Ghost ; and by us to the rest of mankind?

5. Remember, I say, that your religion was conveyed to mankind by one that is superior to all *angels* ; and that the *Christian* church has the happiness to be under the immediate conduct and government of the *Son of God* himself.

6. 7 & 8. Of whom those words of the Psalmist (Psalm viii. 4. &c.) [tho' we should suppose they were] primarily spoken of Adam, and his posterity in general ; yet, in their *full and complete* sense, could not be true of *them* ; because they expressly represent *a person as perfect Lord and Governor over all created beings ; a complete Conqueror over all the enemies of God's kingdom* ; which can never be said of Adam, or of any branch of human race.

Q

9. Whereas

A. D. 63. 9 But we see Jesus, who was made a little \* lower than the angels, for the sufferings of death, crowned with glory and honour, that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man.

that *human* nature of his now exalted to the highest degree of heavenly glory and majesty; and this *God-man* become the Lord, and Governor, and Saviour of all men.

10 For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to † make the Captain of their salvation perfect thro' sufferings.

† See 2 Cor. i. 18. 23, 24, 25. and chap. ii. 2.

to bestow on his disciples, was not *temporal*, but *spiritual* and heavenly: And, for the encouragement and support of such as were to go through a world of sufferings and temptations, as the condition of that happiness; this (among others) was one instance of the Divine Wisdom, that he that was to be both our *Saviour* and *example*, should work our salvation by, and be himself crowned and rewarded for, his *sufferings*.

11 For both he that sanctifieth, and they who are sanctified, are all

9. Whereas they exactly answer to Jesus our Messiah, the second Adam, who though in his human state\*, while by the wise and merciful dispensation of God, he was to suffer death, for the redemption of *mankind*. He was indeed in a state inferior to that of *angels*; yet in reward of those sufferings, is

his now exalted to the highest degree of heavenly glory and majesty; and this *God-man* become the Lord, and Governor, and Saviour of all men.

10. The generality of the *Jews*, indeed, expected Christ under the character of a *temporal* monarch, and a conqueror for their particular nation. And think it a great objection against our Jesus, that he was a suffering † *Messiah*: But the Divine Wisdom saw further and better. The happiness he was

to bestow on his disciples, was not *temporal*, but *spiritual* and heavenly: And, for the encouragement and support of such as were to go through a world of sufferings and temptations, as the condition of that happiness; this (among others) was one instance of the Divine Wisdom, that he that was to be both our *Saviour* and *example*, should work our salvation by, and be himself crowned and rewarded for, his *sufferings*.

11. 12. & 13. Thus it pleased God, that the Redeemer of mankind should condescend to take on him the

---

\* Ver. 9. [Made a little lower than the angels]—  
 ὡς ἑλάττω, [for a little while lower than the angels].

† [Make the Captain—perfect through suffering]. *τελειωσαι*, in a *sacrificial* sense, is either to *consecrate*, or to *purgo perfectly* from *sin*. In an *agonistical* sense, it is to *crown* and *reward*. I shall distinguish them as clearly as I can, by the connection of the several passages in which it occurs in this epistle.

all of one : for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren.

12. Saying, I will declare thy name unto my brethren, in the midst of the church will I sing praise unto thee.

13. And again, I will put my trust in him : and again, behold, I, and the children which God hath given me.

14. Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood : he also himself likewise took part of the same, that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is the devil :

15. And deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage.

16. For verily he took not on him *the nature of* angels : but he took on *him* the \* seed of Abraham.

17. Wherefore in all things it behoved him to be made like unto his

the same nature with those he was A. D. 63. to redeem ; according to those prophetic expressions of scripture, concerning the *Messiah* ; wherein " He vouchsafes to own us for his brethren," as in Psal. xxii. 22. and is represented as " paying the same humble duties to God the Father" with the rest of the holy and truly religious part of mankind ; and in another place calling us *his children*, as in Isaiah viii. 17, 18. " I will wait upon the Lord—Behold I and the children which God hath given me, are for signs, and for wonders in Israel, from the Lord of hosts."—

14. & 15 Thus it seemed good to the Divine Wisdom to reconcile and make us his children, by the sufferings of Christ in that very nature that had transgressed ; as the most proper way of conquering that prevailing power of the devil, that had tempted us to sin, and drawn us into death ; and, by this means, to give to all mankind (especially the *Gentile* world, that were enslaved with the sense of guilt, and the fear of death, without any prospect of a recovery from it) ; the certain hope of a future and happy life.

16. & 17. For Christ is to be considered, not as a redeemer of *angels* and fallen *spirits*, but of *mankind* ; \* of all those, who like true children of Abraham, are subject to temptations and sufferings, and are to be advanced to pardon and happiness

Q<sub>2</sub>

\* Ver. 16. [But the seed of Abraham], according to the great promise, [in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed.]

A. D. 63. his brethren, that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest, in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people:

happiness by imitating him, in a patient submission to that Divine Will which they had transgressed. Upon which account, it was highly expedient for Christ, our great priest and sacrifice, to live and suffer in our nature, as the most perfect method both to atone for our sins, and to support and encourage us under *our* present sufferings for *his* religion; whom we know to have had a fellow-feeling with us, and so to bear a compassionate regard towards us.

18. For in that he himself hath suffered, being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.

as well as with a full

18. For nothing is such an immediate comfort to a *Christian*, as to know he suffers for the sake of a *Saviour*, who is touched with the experience of what he undergoes, power to relieve and support him.

### CHAP. III.

*The Second Branch of the Apostle's first Argument for their Steadiness to the Christian Profession; viz. The Dignity of Christ, as a Lawgiver, above Moses. A Warning from thence against Infidelity and Apostacy. As also from the Instance of the Obstinate Israelites, that were denied Entrance into the Land of Canaan, for the same Miscarriage.*

\* Chap. ii 1. **W**herefore holy brethren, partakers of <sup>\*</sup>the heavenly calling, consider <sup>†</sup> *μειροχολοι* the Apostle and High Priest of our profession Christ Jesus.

1. **W**herefore, dear <sup>\*</sup> brethren, *brethren* of Christ, and children of Abraham, members of the holy church of God (tho' you only *partake* <sup>†</sup> of it with *other* people) consider well the exceeding great dignity of Christ's *person*, who as a *prophet*



*prophet* has given you the most complete rules of life ; A. D. 63. as a *high priest*, by suffering in your own nature, has procured the perfect pardon of your sins ; and by his religion, obtained such spiritual and heavenly blessings for you, as far surpasses those of the *Jewish law*.

2. Who was faithful to him that appointed him, as also Moses was faithful in all his house.

2. Remember that God the Father has appointed and established him the Lord and only High Priest over his church : And that he has as perfectly performed every part of his great\* office for the *Christian* church, as you can\* πιστόν ὄντα. imagine, or the scripture declare Moses to have done toward the *Jewish* one, when it styles him *Faithful in all his house*, i. e. the church of God. (Numb. xii. 7.)

3. For *this* man was counted worthy of more glory than Moses, in as much as he who hath builded the house, hath more honour than the house.

4. For every house is builded by some man, but he that built all things is God.

*Jewish* and *Christian* or householder over all is God the *Father*.§

3. & 4. But you must consider too, that as a substitute and deputy † governor, who is himself but a † κατασκευάζου. member of the house or society he governs, is inferior to the lord † that appoints him ; so much is Moses inferior to Christ ; For Moses acted in the *Jewish* church only as a *servant* of God ; whereas Christ, as the *Son of God*, is Lord and Governor both of the

5. & 6. Moses indeed had a commission to manage that church, and faithfully|| discharged it ; but still || πιστός. it was in the capacity of a *servant* and

Q 3

---

† κατασκευάζω—signifies either to *build* or to *order* and *govern*. The *former* sense is most commonly received, but the *latter* seems, in this place, to be most natural. Moreover, οἶκος the house, here seems clearly to signify not the *material* house, but the *inhabitants* or *family* dwelling in it.

§ Compare 1 Cor. xi. 3. 12.

A. D. 63. things which were \*  
to be spoken after.

6 But Christ as a son over his † own house, whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence, and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end.

shall not fail to enjoy the final fruits of so great a privilege, on condition of our steady adherence to his religion, under all our pressures and persecutions.

7 Wherefore as the Holy Ghost saith, To day, if ye will hear his voice ;

8 Harden not your hearts, as in the provocation, in the day of temptation in the wilderness :

9 When your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my works forty years.

*wrath of God, for forty years together.*

10 Wherefore I was grieved with that generation, and said, They do always err in their hearts, and they have

and *deputy*, employed to deliver a dispensation that plainly pointed out *another* more perfect one, that was to succeed it. But we *Christians* are now under the immediate government of Christ himself, † the Lord over all churches and divine dispensations, as the *Son of God*; And

7. 8. & 9. Let therefore that inspired lesson of the Psalmist (Psalm xcv.) be heartily considered by you now : Wherein he exhorts the *Jewish* people, *To hearken to the divine command while opportunity was afforded them ; and not to harden their hearts and become incurable, by an obstinate and wilful disobedience, as their forefathers did in the wilderness ; where they distrusted the divine power and Providence, and provoked the*

10. & 11. The consequence of which habitual course of impiety, was, *That they became utterly unworthy of the continuance of the divine favour and protection, and caused*

\* Ver. 5. [For a testimony of those things that were to be spoken after] that is, the *religion* or *dispensation* of Christ, as appears most clearly from John v. 46. 47. Luke xxiv. 44. Acts xxvi. 22. and many like passages.

† Ver. 6. [Christ as a Son over his own house.] A very wrong translation. It is, *over his viz. God's house*; ἐπὶ τὸν οἶκον αὐτοῦ; the αὐτοῦ plainly is to be referred to οὗτος God, (ver. 4.) as it is in the 5th verse; Agreeably to 1 Tim. iii. 15. 1 Cor. 3. 9. *ye are God's building.*

have not known my ways.

11 So I swear in my wrath, They shall not enter into my rest.

*caused God to swear by himself, that A. D. 63. they should never enter into the promised land.*

12 Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God.

Remember, that by forsaking *Christianity*, you apostatize from the *same* God, who lives eternally to reward the faithful, and punish the disobedient.

12. Take heed then, that *their* case in respect of that *temporal* blessing of Canaan, be not yours; now, in respect to the eternal blessings of Christ's religion. Remember, that by forsaking *Chri-*

13 But exhort one another daily while it is called To-day, lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin.

tions, or most violent ries.

13. To prevent which, make it your immediate endeavour so to encourage one another to patience and perseverance, that none, if possible, may be drawn from their profession, by the subtle insinuations from their adver-

(14 For we are made partakers of Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence stedfast unto the end.) \*

[14. Remember, that the great privileges of Christianity are to be enjoyed only upon condition of a resolute perseverance in *that* religion, to which you have engaged yourselves.]

15 While it is said, To-day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts, as in the provocation.

15. Consider how much it concerns you to lay hold of the *present* time afforded for it; and the danger of neglecting it, as the Jews did in the wilderness.

Q 4

16. For

---

\* Ver. 14. Note, This verse being included in a *parenthesis* makes the clearest connection between the 13 and 15 verses; which, otherwise, is much interrupted.

A. D. 63. 16 \* For some when they had heard, did provoke : howbeit not all that came out of Egypt by Moses.

17 But with whom was he grieved forty years? *was it* not with them that had sinned, whose carcases fell in the wilderness.

18 And to whom sware he that they should not enter into his rest, but to them that believe not?

19 So we see that they could not enter in because of unbelief.

so will your renouncing the *Christian Profession*, for any persecutions whatever, forfeit you all the blessings of this *new* and gracious *covenant*.

16. 17. & 18. And let it move you the more, to observe how infectious and epidemical their dissatisfaction and disobedience was.

\* *That the whole congregation were drawn to murmur against Moses and Aaron, except Caleb and Joshua* (Numb. xiv.) Nor did their numbers prevent the certainty of that punishment God had sworn to inflict upon them; for they all, except these two, died in the wilderness.

19. As therefore infidelity and a revolt from the divine commands lost them the *promised* land;

---

\* [For some when they heard, &c. *τινὲς γὰρ ἀκούσαντες παρεπίκραναν; ἂν δὲ πάντες—*; Who did provoke? Did not all that came out of *Egypt*?] Interrogatively, as the two following verses are; or else the sense is this,—Though your apostacy from Christianity be now too general, as theirs was then—yet remember you have Caleb and Joshua for your example and encouragement; who were preserved for their singular obedience, while all the rest were destroyed.

C H A P. IV.

*The same Exhortation to Constancy and Patience continued. Christianity promises a future and better State of Happiness, than the Land of Canaan was. That there is such a State provided for good and faithful Men, proved from the ancient Scriptures of the Old Testament. Christ a severe and terrible Governor to the obstinate and disobedient. No concealing our Cowardice and Infidelity from Him. The Exhortation of Chap. ii. 10. renewed.*

1 **L**ET us therefore fear, lest a promise being left us of entering into his rest any of you should \* seem to come short of it.

2 For unto us was the gospel preached as well as unto them, but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it.

3 For we which have believed, do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, If they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.

4 For

1. **B**E exceedingly careful therefore, || I say, that by a revolt from the true religion, you lose \* not the celestial happiness of the gospel, as the murmuring Jews did that of the terrestrial Canaan. A. D. 63. || Chap. iii. 18, 19.

2. You have now the substantial religion and promises of Christ as fully declared and confirmed to you, as they had their law, and the promise of the land of Canaan; and may, through your own default, forfeit the blessings of it, as they did theirs.

3, 4, 5, & 6. For that there is such a future and eternal state of rest and happiness reserved for God's faithful servants, beside, and far exceeding that of the Jewish Canaan, is plain, by comparing the several passages of scripture where that phrase of *the rest of God* is mentioned. When God had finished the

---

\* [Seem to come short of it.] *Δοκῆναι* in the same sense as in Luke viii. 18.

A. D. 63. *4* For he spake in a certain place of the  
 \* Gen. ii. seventh day on this  
 wife, And God did  
 rest the seventh day  
 from all his works.

*5* And in this place  
 again, If they shall  
 enter my rest.

*6* Seeing therefore  
 it remaineth that some  
 must enter therein, and  
 they to whom it was  
 first preached, entered  
 not in because of un-  
 belief:

murmurers lost by their infidelity.

*7* Again, he limiteth  
 a certain day, saying  
 in David, to day; af-  
 ter so long a time; as  
 is said, To day if ye  
 will hear his voice,  
 harden not your hearts.

*8* For if Jesus had  
 given them rest, then  
 would he not after-  
 ward have spoken of  
 another day.

*9* There remaineth  
 therefore a rest to the people of God.

*10* For he that is  
 entered into his rest,  
 he also hath ceased  
 from his own works,  
 as God *did* from his.

liverance from all the

*11* Let us labour  
 therefore to enter into  
 that rest, lest any man  
 fall after the same ex-  
 ample of unbelief.

*12* For

the works of the creation he is  
 said to have *rested from his works* \*.

And when the Psalmist (Psal xcvi.)  
 mentions the entrance into *God's*  
*rest*; it is indeed so far as it re-  
 fers to the Jews in the *wildernefs*,  
 meant of their entering into the  
*land of Canaan*, as a *rest* from  
 their travels in the *wildernefs*, re-  
 sembling that of *God's resting*  
 from his *creation*: but, as it re-  
 lates to the Jews of his *own* time,  
 to whom David spoke them, it  
 must have a *higher* meaning than  
 the *rest of Canaan*, which those

*7, 8. & 9.* For as that exhorta-  
 tion of David, *not to harden the*  
*hearts* was directed to the people  
*then* living, who had for a long  
 time been possessed of the land of  
 Canaan, into which Joshua brought  
 their forefathers; the *rest of God*  
 proposed to *them* could not be *that*,  
 but must signify a future *state* of  
*heavenly* happiness; the same that  
 the gospel promiseteth to us Chri-  
 stians.

*10.* Nor indeed could the hap-  
 piness and reward of a true ser-  
 vant of God be properly compar-  
 ed to *God's rest from all his work*,  
 unless it be a *final* and *complete* de-  
 liverance from all the labours and troubles of this life.

*11.* Strive therefore to attain  
 this *perfect* state of felicity, and  
 not lose it by apostacy, as the Is-  
 raelites did their Canaan.

*12. & 13.* And

12 For the word of God is quick and powerful, and sharper than any \* two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

13 Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked and open unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do.

14 Seeing then that we have a great High Priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession.

15 For we have not an high † priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin.

do it; as having *himself* been exposed to sufferings, and felt the miseries of human life, as you do; only with this difference, that those miseries *we* feel, are the result of *sin*, while *he* suffered in pure and unspotted *innocence* ‡.

12. & 13. And consider how A. D. 63. exquisitely wise, all-knowing, and terribly powerful this Jesus, the *Son* and *Word of God* is: that there is no way to conceal your cowardice and hypocrisy from him, the searcher of hearts; who is both your *Saviour* and your *Judge* \*. Consider also what a powerful and effectual thing the *Word of God* is (*viz.* his *promises* and *threatenings*) when duly believed and attended to in the minds of men.

14. Look on him and adhere to his profession, to his *word* and *promise*, as your Great *High-Priest*, that hath both atoned for your sins, and, by his exaltation into heaven, is become your powerful and constant *Intercessor* with God.

15. Embrace him, as a far more able and sufficient High-Priest than † Chap. ii. the *Mosaic* one could be; as in 17.—iii. 1. all other respects, so particularly 3, 6. in this, That he has not only perfect power to help and assist you, but is one that must be most compassionately willing, and free to

do it; as having *himself* been exposed to sufferings, and felt the miseries of human life, as you do; only with this difference, that those miseries *we* feel, are the result of *sin*, while *he* suffered in pure and unspotted *innocence* ‡.

16. Relying ‡ Chap. vii. 26. 1 John ii. 1, 2.

\* See Rev. i. 16 and ii. 12. 16. and xix. 13, and 15. with my paraphrase on those passages. And let the reader compare the *Notes* of the learned Mr Pierce; and then judge for himself. I thought it proper to express *both* senses; each of them having its favourers amongst the learned.

A. D. 63. 16 Let us therefore  
 ~~~~~ come boldly unto the  
 throne of grace, that  
 we may obtain mercy,  
 and find grace to help  
 in time of need.

16. Relying therefore on the  
 power and compassion of such an  
 Intercessor, you may address to  
 God with a much more comfort-  
 able assurance, than the Jews could  
 to the *mercy seat*: and cheerfully  
 depend upon him, for a seasonable deliverance from all  
 the persecutions you suffer for his sake.

## C H A P. V.

*The Dignity and Excellency of Christ's Priesthood above the  
 Levitical. The Efficacy of it proved from his Resurrection  
 and Glorification. It is compared to that of Melchisedec.  
 The Wisdom and Advantage of the Sufferings of the Son of  
 God. The small Progress of the Jewish Christians com-  
 plained of.*

\* See Chap. I  
 iv. 14, 15, 16, 17. **F**OR every \* high  
 priest taken from  
 among men, is or-  
 dained for men in  
 things *pertaining* to  
 God, that he may of-  
 fer both gifts and sa-  
 crifices for sins:

lence than that of *their* high-priest could ever be: as  
 may be seen by comparing them in any respect whatever.  
 As first, The *Jewish* high-priests, though employed in  
 divine service, and mediators between God and the peo-  
 ple, were yet but mere frail and mortal *men*.

2 Who can have  
 compassion on the ig-  
 norant, and on them  
 that are out of the  
 way; for that he him-  
 self also is compassed  
 with infirmity:

3 And

1. **Y**OU may now, I say, as  
 you are Christians, address  
 yourselves to God with a clearer  
 and more comfortable assurance  
 of acceptance with him than the  
 Jews could do; as having Christ  
 for your High-Priest, whose office  
 is of far more dignity and preva-

lence than that of *their* high-priest could ever be: as  
 may be seen by comparing them in any respect whatever.  
 As first, The *Jewish* high-priests, though employed in  
 divine service, and mediators between God and the peo-  
 ple, were yet but mere frail and mortal *men*.

2. & 3. And though they could  
 not but bear a compassionate regard  
 to the frailties and infirmities of the  
 people, in whose behalf they mini-  
 stered; yet was this their compassion  
 of a much inferior and less effectual  
 kind than that of Christ to *us*.

*They*



3 And by reason hereof he ought, as for the people, so also for himself, to offer for sins. *They* could not but have a fellow-<sup>A. D. 63.</sup> feeling with the rest of the con-  
gregation, because they were *men* and *sinners* themselves: And for that reason, upon the great *expiation day*, they offered a particular sacrifice for their *own* offences: Whereas Christ lived and suffered in perfect *innocency*, and was pleased, for our greater comfort and assurance, to sympathise with our infirmities, miscarriages and sufferings, while he had not the least sin of his *own*.

4 And no man taketh this honour unto himself, but he that is called of God, as *was* Aaron:

5 So also Christ glorified not himself to be made a high priest: but he that said unto him, Thou art my Son, to day have I begotten thee.

6 As he saith also in another *place*, Thou art a priest for ever after the \* order of Melchisedec.

4. 5. & 6. Then again, our Lord excels the *Levitical* high priests, in the divine *demonstrations* given of the greatness and authentieness of his high office. For as *they* were expressly ordered to be of the line of Aaron, and sometimes the *person* especially appointed by God; so was Christ of the family of David, according to the prophecies concerning him. And while he did not affect † to appear and show † See Phil. ii. 5—himself in the form of a *divine* and heavenly Mediator, while he lived<sup>11.</sup> upon earth, he was by his glorious resurrection from the dead, in a much more solemn manner, declared and demonstrated to be the *Son of God*, the great *High Priest* and *Saviour* of mankind. According to those words of the Psalmist, spoken of the || resurrection of the *Messiah*, || Acts xiii. 33. by God the *Father* (Psal. ii.) *Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee*. And upon the same account in another *Psal*m (Psal. cx.) he is called *A Priest for ever after*

---

\* [After the order of Melchisedec,] *κατα την ταξιν*. [According to the likeness or resemblance of Melchisedec]; as the following passages and those of the fifth chapter plainly show it, especially ver. 15. of that chapter. Accordingly the Syraic renders it by *כְּמִדְּמֻת* *similitude*.

A. D. 63. *after the order of Melchisedec, i. e. an eternal and powerful one; a King to govern and save as well as a Priest to sacrifice for his people.*

7 Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications, with strong crying and tears, unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard, in that he feared.

8 Though he were a Son, yet \* learned he obedience, by the things which he suffered.

9 And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him;

10 Called of God an high priest after the order of Melchisedec.

the true meaning of the forementioned scripture, *Thou art a Priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec*†.

11 Of whom we have many things to say, and hard to be uttered; seeing ye are dull of hearing.

excellency above the *Levitical* priesthood, the *Jews* so much boast of. But I fear your prejudices are still such, that


7. & 8. So also the prayers and tears, the agonies and sufferings of our Jesus, were a service of infinitely more acceptance and pre-  
valency with God, than the prayers and sacrifices of a *Jewish* high priest could possibly be. The obedience and sufferings of one, who was the very *Son of God*, making him at once both a complete atonement for our sins, and a most perfect and encouraging \* example of obedience and resignation to the Divine Will.

9. & 10. And as his sufferings thus rendered him a perfect *High Priest* for our reconciliation to God, so his resurrection || and glorification in *heaven* has demonstrated him to be the powerful Saviour of all his true disciples; giving them a perfect assurance of eternal happiness: According to

11. I have several things particularly to observe to you, concerning this analogy between the priesthood of Melchisedec, and that of Christ; in order to convince you of its great

---

\* [He learned obedience by the things, &c.] *ἐμαθεν* may signify, not only to be instructed one's *self*, but to learn *others*, answering to the Hebrew *למד* rendered both by *ἐμαθεν* and *διδάσκων*, in the Septuagint.

that you will hardly\* understand and relish them, though A D. 63.  
the things themselves are intelligible and easy enough. 

12 For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which *be* the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat.

*ish* notions and prejudices have made your improvement so small, that instead of that, I had need go over with you again, teach you the first rudiments of it, and treat you not like *men* but *children*.

13 For every one that useth milk, is unskilful in the word of righteousness: † for he is a babe.

14 But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, *even* those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil. ‡

12. For indeed, though one would think you have had time enough, from your first conversion, (especially the *Jewish* converts, who have long before enjoyed the advantage of the *law*, and the *prophets*) to understand your Christian religion so well, as to be able to teach the highest doctrines of it to others; yet I find your *Jew-*

13 & 14. And, as milk is the proper food for children, so, I am afraid, the first and plainest articles of Christianity would be fitter for such slender proficients as you, than the higher doctrines of it, which ought to be communicated only to such as have already attained to a good understanding ‡ of the first and fundamental points of their profession.

## CHAP.

---

\* [Hard to be uttered.] λόγος δυσερμηνεύσας. Hard for such prejudiced people to understand. The same with St. Peter's δύσνοητα. 2 Peter iii. 16.

† Ver. 13. [The word of righteousness,] ὁ λόγος δικαιοσύνης, *the* [doctrine of justification]—viz. by Christ, in opposition to that of or by the *law*.

‡ Ver. 14. [Both good and evil]—is an Hebraism to signify *things in general*. To know *good and evil*, is to have a very large knowledge Gen. iii. 5. To speak *neither good nor evil*, is to say *nothing at all*. But the phrase is here confined to a particular *subject* in religious matters, as the context shows, and as in the paraphrase.

## CHAP. VI.

*The Apostle promiseth them further Instructions, particularly in the Comparison between Christ and Melchisedec. But, before he enters upon that point, renews his Exhortation to Constancy and Perseverance, from the great Danger and Hazard of ever recovering a Christian Apostate; and from the Example of the Faith and Reward of Abraham, and the Truth of the Divine Promises.*

A. D. 63.

\* Chap. v.  
11, 12, 13.

1. **T**HEREFORE, leaving the principles of the † doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith towards God.

2. Of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgement.

*future judgement*, and the like; yet, for the better encouragement of those that still adhere to their profession, in these general and fundamental points, I shall wave them, and pursue my proposal of instructing you further and higher, particularly in the forementioned analogy between the priesthood of Christ, and that of Melchisedec.

1. & 2. **B**UT notwithstanding that the small proficiency you have made would make it not amiss for me, \* as I said, to teach you, over again, the first principles of Christianity; such as the necessity of *repentance* and reformation of life; of belief in God and Christ; of being baptized with *water* and the Holy Ghost; the imposition of the apostles *hands*, for receiving the Holy Ghost after *baptisms*; of the belief of a *future state* and a

3. (Which

† Ver. 1. 2. The principles of the doctrine of Christ—the foundation of repentance—faith—baptisms, &c.

*Note*, Whoever looks into the *comments* upon these two verses, will find to what a great uncertainty the learned are reduced in their interpretations of these *phrases*; viz. Whether they be *principles* and *fundamentals* of the *Jewish* religion (originally designed to lead men to the doctrines of Christ) or doctrines of *Christianity itself*. I have followed the *latter* sentiment; the reader may consult Mr. Pierce for the arguments that countenance the *former*.

3 And this will we do if God permit. more fully (God willing) when I see you again.)

4 For *it is* impossible for those who were once enlightned, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost,

5 And have tasted the good word of God, and † the powers of the world to come;

6 If *they* shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance: seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put *him* to an open shame.

7. & 8. So that, as that ground only which is likely to answer the cost bestowed on it, by bearing a good crop, is worth a man's pains to manure and cultivate; whereas, that which spoils the seed thrown into it, and returns the husbandman nothing but rubbish instead

7 For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God:

8 But

Vol. II.

R

of

3. (Which I shall partly now do in the sequel of this epistle, and

4. 5. & 6. I will do this, I say, for the sake of those who still persevere in their *Christian* profession. For indeed, it would be a vain \* and endless undertaking for me to begin again and reconvert those among you, who, against the most solemn engagements of their *baptism*, and the happy experience of the gifts of the Holy Ghost, conferred from *heaven* upon them; against all the sense they had of the great mercies of the laws and privileges of the *gospel*; and, in defiance of all those powerful † demonstrations, whereby the whole religion of Christ has been so amply conferred to them; have wilfully revolted, and thrown off their *Christianity*, to embrace the *Jewish* and *heathenish* religion again. Because such people have already resisted the utmost evidences that can ever be offered for their conviction, and done as perfect and public a † dishonour to Christ and his religion, as if

A.D. 63.

† πᾶρα δειγματίζοντας. Ex- p sing him to infamy.

\* ἀδύνατον Not strictly *impossible*, but only highly *improbable* or *difficult*.

† The powers of the world to come -- Δυνάμεις τε τῆς μέλλουσας αἰωνότητος. Not of the *future state*, but the *miracles* (Δυνάμεις) wrought in confirmation of the *religion* of the *Messiah*, who was to come in the *future* or *last age* of the *world*.

A. D. 63. 8 But that which beareth thorns and briers, *is* rejected, and *is* nigh unto cursing; whose end *is* to be burned.

effects of their ingratitude and incurable infidelity.

9 But beloved, we are persuaded better things of † you, and things that accompany salvation, though we thus speak. † *Compare* 2 Thess. ii. 12, 13. Ephes. iv. 20. Rom. viii. 9.

10 For God is not unrighteous to forget your work and labour of love, which ye have showed toward his name, in that ye have ministered to the faints, and do minister †.

† Chap. x. 33, 34.

erly have, and still do show to the poor distressed Christians of your country.

11 And we desire, that every one of you, do show the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope unto the end

12 That ye be not slothful, but followers of them, who through faith and patience inherit the promises.

holy men, who have reaped the promised blessings of God, by the same means.

13. For when God made promise to Abraham, because he could swear by no greater,

of corn, is fit for nothing, but to be left wild and barren, or else to be stubbed up and burnt; so these obstinate and wilful *apostates* deserve no further means of conviction, but are to be left to the effects of their ingratitude and incurable infidelity.

9. But, I hope, dear brethren, this is not *your* case, at least, not of many of you; and therefore I give you this, only as a very earnest and necessary caution of the great danger of falling from your Christian profession.

10. And be assured, that whatever our pressures and afflictions may at present be; if you be not wanting to yourselves, God will support you under them all. And I am the more confident of his special assistance towards you, as a just reward for that eminent degree of charity, which you formerly have, and still do show to the poor distressed Christians of your country.

11. Let me therefore exhort you all constantly to persevere in that good disposition and practice, in full assurance of so glorious a reward.

12. To be diligent and courageous in every branch of your Christian duty, and patient under all sufferings for the sake of it; in imitation of all those great and holy men, who have reaped the promised blessings of God, by the same means.

13. & 14. Remember, in particular, how punctually true God was in his great promise made to Abraham, of a numerous posterity,

greater, he swore by himself,

14 Saying, Surely, blessing, I will bless thee, and multiplying, I will multiply thee.

*sworn, That in blessing, I will bless (i. e. most assuredly and greatly bless) thee, and in multiplying, I will multiply (i. e. most assuredly and greatly multiply) thee.*

15 And so after he had patiently endured, he obtained the promise.

ward of his faith and patience. But the promise was *further* performed, by God's merciful and wondrous dispensations toward the *Jewish* church; and is now *absolutely* completed to all mankind, by the blessings of the *Christian* religion.

16 For men verily swear by the greater, and an oath for confirmation is to them an end of all strife.

17 Wherein God willing more abundantly to show unto the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsel, confirmed it by an oath.

18 That by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us.

19 Which *hope* we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and stedfast,

rity, from whom Christ, the *Saviour* of mankind (the promised

*seed*) was to come. How solemnly he was pleased to confirm it, by swearing by himself; Gen.

xxii. 16, 17. *By myself have I sworn, That in blessing, I will bless (i. e. most assuredly and greatly bless) thee, and in multiplying, I will multiply (i. e. most assuredly and greatly multiply) thee.*

15. And accordingly, Abraham actually lived to see a numerous (at least a very prosperous) family † of his own, as a *present* re-

ward of his faith and patience. But the promise was

*further* performed, by God's merciful and wondrous dispensations toward the *Jewish* church; and is now *absolutely* completed to all mankind, by the blessings of the *Christian* religion.

16. & 17. Thus God was pleased to condescend to the manner of us *men*, for our greater and more perfect satisfaction. For an *oath* is the highest and most decisive evidence that can be given or desired, in any human court. And because God could not appeal to any greater than himself, as *men* do when *they* swear by *himself* as the Author and Fountain of truth. (ver. 13.)

18. So that the assurance we *Christians* have of a future and eternal salvation, on condition of our faith and patient obedience, is upon the surest grounds that Heaven itself can give; being founded both upon the *promise* and the *oath* of God: In either of which it is impossible for *him* to deceive us, who is *truth* itself.

19. This assured hope of ours, like a strong anchor to a ship, holds up our minds against all the storms

A. D. 63. stedfast, and which entereth into that within the vail, fears; and presenting us with a lively prospect of *future* and eternal felicity.

20 Whither the forerunner is for us entered, *even* Jesus, made an high priest for ever, after the order of Melchisedec.

those mortal and temporary ones among the *Jews*; but, like Melchisedec, an *eternal* Intercessor, Prince and Saviour to us. The particulars of which comparison, I come now, according to my proposal, to explain.

and billows of this world; mounting our thoughts, and raising our views above its present cares and us with a lively prospect of *future*

20. Even of that glorious happiness, to which Jesus Christ our *Head* is now exalted, as an earnest, that we his true members are hereafter to follow him, who is thus become our *High Priest*; not like

## C H A P. VII.

*In what Respects the Priesthood of Christ resembles that of Melchisedec. Thence the Dignity and excellency of it above the Levitical. And by the Change of the Priesthood is demonstrated the Suspension of the Jewish Religion, and of the Obligation to the Ceremonial Law:*

\* 1. **F**OR this Melchisedec king of Salem priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him:

2 To whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all: first being

1. & 2. **T**O show you then the particular analogy between the priesthood of Christ and that of \* Melchisedec, and from thence the dignity of it above the *Levitical* priesthood: Now the first part of the resemblance lies in their *titles* and *characters*; the word Melchisedec signifying as, *a just and righteous king*; and *Salem* the place whereof

---

\* [For this Melchisedec, &c.] or thus ἕως γὰρ ὁ Μελχισεδέκ. For *he* (*i. e.* Christ) is the Melchisedec—*i. e.* The antitype of that Melchisedec who was king of Salem.



ing by interpretation whereof he was king, denoting A. D. 63  
king of Righteousness, *PEACE*. He was also a *priest* —  
and after that also, over his people, as well as a *king*;  
king of Salem, which a sincere worshipper of the true  
is king of peace; God, and approved of by him in  
that high office; and was in such esteem and authority,  
that the great patriarch Abraham, at his return from  
the slaughter of the four kings (Gen xiv) received  
his blessing, and paid him a tenth of the spoils he had  
taken. And thus he was a proper type and figure of  
*Christ the Lord of Righteousness, our Justifier, Peace-*  
*maker, and Great High Priest.*

3 \* Without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days, nor end of life; but made like unto the Son of God, † abideth a priest continually.

3. Again, the scripture records give no account of Melchisedec's pedigree. He had no descent from || Abraham or was born of any || *priestly* family. The *scriptures* say nothing either of the beginning or end of his life; nor of the time when he entered on his *priesthood*, or when he left it. And thus he, so far, figuratively represents our *Jesus, the Son of God, who was in the beginning* †, *before all things, who abideth for ever*; and † John i. 1. who, by his *resurrection* and *ascension* into heaven, is be- and viii. 35, come the *Eternal Lord* and Governor of his church, an <sup>38.</sup> everlasting *High Priest* and *Intercessor* for all true believers.

R 3

4. Now

\* *Ἀγενεολογητός*.—Without any *catalogue* or *register* of ancestors. [Without father, without mother.] The care that men of figure, in all ancient countries, took in registering their *ancestors* (and the Jews for particular reasons above any other) made it a common mode of speech, to call such persons, whose pedigree was either *obscure* or *lost*, *fatherless* and *motherless*. Thus.

Patre Nullo, Matre Servâ. Liv. Lib. IV.

Nullus Majoribus ortus. HORAT. SERM. Lib. I. Sat. 6.

Mos Romanos Reges esse quorum alter patrem non habet, alter matrem—Nam de Servii Matre dubitatur, Anci Pater nullus. SEN. Epist. 108.

† [Abideth a priest for ever.]—Not Melchisedec *abideth a priest for ever*, but Melchisedec resembles Christ (who) abideth, &c. It is an *ellipsis* and is understood. See Revel. i. 4, 5. where the like *ellipsis* may be seen.

A. D. 63.

4 Now consider how great this man *was*, unto whom even the patriarch Abraham gave the tenth of the spoils. cannot but conclude Christ (of whom *he* was but a mere *type*) to be a priest of far greater dignity than any *Jewish* priest can pretend to be.

4. Now, if you consider what great respects were paid to this Melchisedec, even by your great father Abraham himself, the very head of the *Jewish* nation; you cannot but conclude Christ (of whom *he* was but a mere *type*) to be a priest of far greater dignity than any *Jewish* priest can pretend to be.

5 And verily they that are of the sons of Levi, who receive the office of the priesthood, have a commandment to take tithes of the people according to the law, that is, of their brethren, though they come out of the loins of Abraham:

6 But he whose descent is not counted from them, received tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises.

5. & 6. For observe, the *Jewish* priests were appointed to take tithes of their *brethren*, the people that were descended from Abraham as well as they; and so in all other respects on the level with them. Whereas Melchisedec, who was not of that family, had yet these honours paid him, by the very *head* and father of it, even by Abraham himself, that *friend of God*, that had such noble promises made to him.

7 And without all contradiction, the less is blessed of the better.

maxim, *That he that receives a solemn blessing from another person, must be inferior to him*) and if so, then how much more excellent must Christ be, above all other priests, when even Melchisedec himself was but his mere *type* and resemblance?

7. From whence it is clear, he must be a greater person than Abraham (for it is an undoubted maxim, *That he that receives a solemn blessing from another person, must be inferior to him*) and if so, then how much more excellent must Christ be, above all other priests, when even Melchisedec himself was but his mere *type* and resemblance?

8 And here men that die receive tithes: but there he *receiveth them*, of whom it is witnessed that he liveth.

9 And

8. Again, the *Jewish* priests, you know, are but mortal *men*, and their priesthood of a short duration. Whereas, of Christ (the perfect Melchisedec) it is said, *That he is a priest for ever*, Psal. cx. 4.

9. & 10. And

9 And \* as I may say, Levi also who receiveth tithes, paid tithes to Abraham.

10 For he was yet in the loins of his father when Melchisedec met him.

inferior to him ; and

11 If therefore perfection were by the Levitical priesthood (for under it the people received the law) what further need *was there* that another priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron?

when the *Levitical* priests and sacrifices would have done without him.

12 For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law.

13 For he of whom these things are spoken, pertaineth to another tribe, of which no man gave attendance at the altar.

14 For *it is* evident that our Lord sprang out of Juda ; of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning priesthood.

9. & 10. And \* indeed all the *Jewish* priests that ever were, A. D. 63. may properly enough be said to have paid tithes to, and received blessing from Melchisedec, when Abraham did it, whose descendants they all were. And consequently must, in their office, be therefore much more to Christ.

11. Now, from all this it plainly appears, that the *Mosaic* priesthood, and the sacrifices of the *Jewish* law, were not designed by God as the only and sufficient means of pardon, and expiation for the sins of mankind ; no, nor for that of the Jews themselves : for if so, it was to no manner of purpose for God to appoint *another* Great High Priest like Melchisedec, when the *Levitical* priests and sacrifices would have done without him.

12, 13. & 14. And whereas there is now such a change for the better made in the *priesthood*, that the succession in the *Aaronical* family, and the tribe of Levi is quite out of date (as it is clear from Christ, the new and Great High Priest's not being born of the tribe of Levi, but Judah) it must thence follow, that God must be thought to make a proportionable alteration in the religion too.

R 4

15. & 16. For

---

\* Ver. 9. [As I may so say : or ὡς ἔπος ἐπείν, to speak the truth.] See Le Clerc, *Art. Crit.* Part II. chap. 2. But our own translation is very agreeable.

A. D. 63. 15 And it is yet far more evident; for that after the similitude of Melchisedec there ariseth another priest,

16 Who is made, not after the law of a carnal commandment, but after the power of an endless life.

*High Priest*, as Christ is; and yet, that the *sacrifice* he offers, and the *religion* he institutes, should be of no better kind than the *Mosaical* one was.

17 For he testifieth, Thou *art* a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

18 For there is verily a disannulling of the commandment going before. for the weakness and unprofitableness thereof.

19 For the law made nothing perfect, but the bringing in of a better hope *did*; by which we draw nigh unto God.

tance with God; and to *his* religion, which consists of complete laws, hopes and promises.

20 And in as much as not without an oath *he was made priest*,

21 (For those priests were made without an oath: but this with an oath, by him that said unto him, The Lord swear, and will not repent, Thou *art*

15. & 16. For nothing can be more absurd, than to suppose so considerable a change and advancement in the nature of the *priesthood*, without a *proportionable* excellency and improvement in the *services* to be performed: that God, in the room of a set of frail and imperfect Levites, should solemnly appoint *one* completely *perfect*, *powerful* and *immortal*

17. To suppose this, would be to lose all the importance of the forementioned prophecy concerning Christ: *Thou art a Priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.* (See Chap. v. 6, 9, 10.)

18. & 19. So that the very appointment of Christ, as a *priest*, is an evident declaration that the *Levitical* priesthood is to be now abolished, as too imperfect to answer the great end of expiating for the sins of mankind: and that the *Mosaical* sacrifices and ceremonies were nothing but figures and introductions to that great sacrifice of Christ, that procures us a perfect redemption and accep-

to *his* religion, which consists of

20, 21. & 22. And indeed that solemn oath whereby God is said to have confirmed and ratified the priesthood of Christ (a thing never used at the consecration of Aaron or any of his successors) sufficiently proves, that he was to be a priest of greater dignity, and a mediator of a covenant and religion far more excellent

a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec)

22 By so much was Jesus made a surety of a better testament.

23 And they truly were many priests because they were not suffered to continue by reason of death :

24 But this man, because he continueth ever, hath an unchangeable priesthood

25 Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost, that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them.

26 For such an high priest became us, *who is* holy, harmless undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens ;

*external* service of a mortal and sinful *man*, offering up the blood of a *beast* in our behalf. But is completely effected by *him*, who, by the undefiled purity of his life, and the spotless innocency of his death, is our perfect *High Priest* ; and by his exaltation to the utmost height of heavenly glory and majesty, is become our powerful and constant *Intercessor*.

27 Who needeth not daily, as those high-priests, to offer up sacrifice first for his

excellent than that of Moses. For A D. 63. no less than this can be implied in that expression, " The Lord *sware*, and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec," Psal. cx. 4.

23. & 24. And when you consider the *Jewish* priests to be mere mortal *men*, dying and succeeding one another ; but Christ, on the contrary, to be exalted into *heaven*, there to remain our *eternal* High Priest, and *constant* intercessor with God ; this will convince you of the mighty difference in point of excellency, between one and the other.

25. This will abundantly satisfy you in how happy a state we Christians are above the Jews, in having the same Saviour that died for our sins now sitting at the right hand of God, as the perfect Saviour and eternal Intercessor for all his true disciples.

26. And thus is Christ a High Priest most exactly suited to the great purpose of atoning for the sins, and procuring the salvation of mankind. Which could never have been accomplished by the

27. Such a one must the Saviour of mankind be, who has no sins of his *own* to expiate for, before he atones for *others* ; nor, that

A. D. 63. his own sins, and then  
for the peoples: for  
this he did once, when  
he offered up himself.

28 For the law maketh men high-priests which have infirmity; but the word of the oath which was since the law, *maketh* the Son, who is consecrated for evermore.

made the only and all-sufficient Priest, the Eternal Saviour and Intercessor of mankind.

that offers such a sacrifice as need to be repeated again and again; but one that completely redeems us *once for all*; as Christ did, by the sacrifice of *himself*.

28. And accordingly, you see the wide difference in point of excellency, between those infirm and mortal priests of the *Jewish* law, and *him* the *Son of God*, whom the *Psalmist* (in words spoken long after the law was given) declares God the Father to have

---

## C H A P. VIII.

*The foregoing Arguments, with the Inferences from them summed up, viz. that the Priesthood and Sacrifice of Christ do exceedingly much excel, and consequently have superceded and disannulled those of the Mosaical Law. That it was designed to be so, further proved from the Prophecies of the Old Testament.*

**N**OW of the things which we have spoken, *this is the sum*: We have such an high-priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens:

2 A minister of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle, which  
the

1. & 2. **T**HE sum\* then of what we are to infer from the foregoing comparison between Christ and Melchisedec, is this; that we Christians are exceedingly more happy than the Jews could be, in having Christ for a High Priest; not like those weak and mortal men, that served in the figurative fabrics of the tabernacle and temple, built by the hands

---

\* Ver. 1. This is the sum: or κεφαλαίον, the chief and principal thing.

the Lord pitched, and not man.

and habitation of God, there to intercede for us.

3 For every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices : wherefore it is of necessity that this man have somewhat also to offer.

4 For if he were on earth, he should not be a priest, seeing that there are priests that offer gifts according to the law :

not upon *earth*, like the *Jewish* priests are sufficient enough for such kind of performances, as are so imperfect as to leave the *conscience* of the sinner still guilty and impure.

5 Who serve unto the example \* and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was about to make the tabernacle. For see (saith he) that thou make all things according to the pattern showed to thee in the mount.

6 But now hath he obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also he is the mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises.

hands of *men* ; but one that is ex-<sup>A. D. 63.</sup>alted into *heaven*, the very throne

3. & 4. Thus is he, in the most effectual and happy sense, our High Priest *still*. For as the *Jewish* priests are daily and yearly repeating their imperfect sacrifices in the *temple* here below ; so does he *there*, continually and most prevailingly offer himself to God the Father for *us*. A service of infinitely greater necessity and advantage than the offering of those earthly gifts and sacrifices : a service to be performed in *heaven*,

the *Jewish* services ; for *Jewish* 5. These *Jewish* priests minister in a tabernacle that was only an imitation \* and shadow of what God showed to Moses from heaven, on the Mount. And as this tabernacle was but a mere *copy* of something shown before ; so the services performed in it can, at farthest, be no more than a mere shadow of something better to be hereafter.

6. Well then may this Priesthood of Christ be more excellent, and his Intercession more effectual than the Mosaical, as he is the Mediator of a covenant, and the Author of a religion, so much greater in its promises, blessings and privileges.

7. For

---

\* Ver. 5. Unto the example and shadow, ὑποδείγματι καὶ σκιά, to, or in the copy or shadow.

A. D. 63. 7 For if that first *covenant* had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the second. occasion for God to have so expressly promised to introduce *another* and a *better*.

8 For finding \* fault with them, he saith, Behold, the days come (saith the Lord) when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and the house of Judah :

9 Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt, because they continued not in my covenant, † and I regarded them not, saith the Lord.

10 For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts : and I will be to them a God and they shall be to me a people.

7. For, that the *Mosaical* religion was an imperfect and temporary dispensation, is demonstrable from this, that if it had not been so, there had been no

8. & 9. Whereas the prophet Jeremy (Jer. xxxi. 31.) after having reproached the *Jewish* nation for their irregularities, in plain words promised them, "That in after-times God would give them a new and more perfect dispensation of religion, far superior to that external and figurative service appointed at Mount Sinai, which they had so often neglected, and thereby forfeited the protection † and favour of God.

10. "A religion that should consist of laws and privileges purely moral and spiritual, and perfectly agreeable to rational minds; by obedience to which, they should obtain the perfect favour of God, and become his true church and beloved people.

II. A

\* Ver. 8. [For finding fault with them he saith]—Or, perhaps, more truly, and agreeable to the foregoing verse—*μεμφομενος γὰρ, αὐτοῖς λέγει*, finding fault (with that *first covenant*) he saith to them (to the Jews).

† [And I regarded them not.] So the Septuagint, which the apostle follows. We translate the Hebrew—*Though I was a husband unto them*. The same word *בעלתי* being taken in both senses. Pocock Miscal, Chap. i. and in Micah, pag. 3.



11 And they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me from the least to the greatest.

12 For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more.

13 In that he saith, *A new covenant*, he hath made the first old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old is \* ready to vanish away.

11. "A religion that should be <sup>A. D. 63.</sup> neither difficult to understand, nor encumbered with such numerous ceremonies as would render it hard, costly, or tedious to practice; but by its purity and plainness, should be natural and agreeable to every mind, and condescending to men of all circumstances and capacities."

12. "In fine, a religion, the services whereof would not leave the consciences of its worshippers uncleared of guilt, as the *Jewish* sacrifices did; but would provide for the full and complete expiation for the sins of all true penitent believers.

13. Now it is most evident, that by promising a *new* and better dispensation, God must intend to abrogate the *old* and more imperfect one. And accordingly the *ceremonial* religion of the Jews is now going to be \* quite laid aside, and the *Christian* to succeed in its room.

C H A P.

---

\* [Ready to vanish away.] Which was *perfectly* fulfilled at the destruction of Jerusalem, and the temple; about *seven* years after the date of this epistle.

## CHAP. IX.

*The Argument of Chap. viii. 5. &c. continued, viz. Proving the Jewish Tabernacle and Temple, with the Services performed therein, to have been figurative of Christ, his Sufferings and Religion. The Comparison between them enlarged upon, and the Excellence of one above the other further demonstrated.*

A. D. 63. **I** THEN verily the first covenant had also ordinances of divine service, and a worldly sanctuary.

2 For there was a tabernacle made, the first wherein was the candlestick, and the table, and the shew-bread; which is called the sanctuary.

3 And after the second vail, the tabernacle, which is called the holiest of all;

4 Which had the golden censer, and the ark of the covenant overlaid round about with gold, wherein  
was

**I.** BUT to proceed. That the Mosaical \* covenant and religion was only typical, temporary, and introductory to Christ, and his more perfect dispensation, is apparent from the nature of the whole service, and the tabernacle wherein it was performed.

2. Which tabernacle (and so the temple afterward), consisted of two principal parts; the first whereof had the golden candlestick, and the table with the shew-bread on it: and this was called the holy place, i. e. the common place of public worship, (Exod. xxvi. Numb. vii.)

3, 4. & 5. In the second, which was parted from the former by a large curtain, were placed the golden censer (made use of only upon the great day of expiation) and the ark, plated over with gold; in the side chests whereof were put the two tables of the

\* Some copies read Σκηνή, others Διαθήκη, without any material difference in the sense.

was the golden pot that had manna, and Aaron's rod that budded, and the tables of the covenant \*;

5 And over it the cherubims of glory shadowing the mercy-seat: of which we cannot now speak particularly.

to explain. And this *second* part of the tabernacle was called the *Holy of Holies*, i. e. The *most holy*, or the place of *extraordinary* worship.

6 Now when these things were thus ordained, the priests went always into the first tabernacle, accomplishing the service of God.

7. But into the second went the high priest alone once every year, not without blood, which he offered for himself, and for the errors of the people.

the law, the golden pot of manna, and Aaron's rod that budded (Numb. xvii. Exod. xxv.) Over which ark were placed the *cherubims*, that covered the mercy-seat with their wings (from whence God was pleased to make the several manifestations of himself in a *cloud* and light of *fire*). The figurative significations of all which particulars, I have no time now

6. & 7. The *first* of these (answering to the *Israelites* court in the *temple*) was the place where the priests performed the *daily* sacrifices and services: But the *latter* (and the same in the *temple*) was never used but one day in a year, the great day of *expiation*, by the high priest alone; who there offered up the blood of a sacrificed beast, first for *himself*, and then another for the whole congregation.

8 The

8. Now,

\* Ver. 4. [Wherein was the golden pot that had manna.] Note, By the word *wherein*, cannot be meant within the body of the *ark* itself. For, beside other plain reasons, the copy of the law must then have been closed up, and never taken out more; contrary to the very design of laying it there, as an authentic *original*. It must therefore mean the *side* of the *ark*, as the word (*mitzrad*) in Deut. xxxi. 26. signifies, as appears by comparing it with 1 Sam. vi. 8. and paraphrased by the Chaldee Paraphrase, in that very place of Deuteronomy. See the excellent Dr. Prideaux's Connexion of the Old and New Testament, Book III. p. 146, 147. 1st Edit. But indeed the word *wherein*, ἐν ᾗ may very well relate, not to κιβωτῶν, the *ark*, but to the σκηνὴ ἡ λεγόμενη ἁγία before mentioned, the *second tabernacle*, called the *most holy*; in which all these sacred utensils were; and whereby all objections are obviated.

A. D. 63. 8 The Holy Ghost

thus signifying, that the way into the holiest of all, was not yet made manifest, while as the first tabernacle was yet standing :

ly this, *viz.* That the true and perfect manner of mens attainment of *heaven* and true happiness, by the full pardon of their sins, and the complete dispensation of religion, was not yet clearly manifested under the *Jewish economy*.

9 Which was a figure for the time \* then present in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the service perfect, as pertaining to the conscience.

10 Which stood only in meats and drinks, and divers washings, and carnal ordinances imposed on them until the time of reformation.

11 But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle not made with hands; that is to say, not of this building;

12 Neither

8. Now, that *most holy* place may be an emblem of *heaven*. And the meaning of the *high priest's* being suffered *alone*, and but *once* a year to enter that solemn apartment, and the rest of the priests and people being wholly excluded from it, could be only

the true and perfect manner of mens attainment of *heaven* and true happiness, by the full pardon of their sins, and the complete dispensation of religion, was not yet clearly manifested under the *Jewish economy*.

9. & 10. And for the same reason, neither is it so now, \* under the *temple* service, which is nothing but a more splendid continuation of that of the *tabernacle*, consisting of external and figurative sacrifices and ceremonies, that have nothing in them to expiate the guilt, and clear the conscience of a sinner; but are only *introductions* to that *great* sacrifice, and most perfect dispensation of Jesus Christ the *Messiah*.

11. & 12. For *he*, indeed, by shedding his own precious and innocent blood for us, has perfected that expiation for our sins; which the blood of all the beasts upon earth, could no way have obtained: And by being *exalted* into *heaven* itself, and become our *Intercessor* there, he is a high priest of that dignity, and eternal

---

\* ἥτις παραβολὴ εἰς τῆτον καιρὸν τὸν ἔνεσθι κέτα. Which figure remains to *this present time*.

12 Neither by the blood of goats and calves: but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us.

13 For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer, sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh;

14 How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the Eternal \* Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?

The Spirit under whose conduct and direction he was, and by which he was demonstrated to be indeed *the Son of God with power*; lived a spotless life, offering himself an immaculate sacrifice to God; and then, by the power of the same *Spirit*, was exalted into *heaven*, there presenting himself as an *Intercessor* with the Father, to expiate all those sins that render us obnoxious to death and misery, and to make us the true church and servants of God, worthy to serve him here, and to enjoy him in his heavenly sanctuary hereafter?

15 And for this † cause he is the mediator of the New Testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under

eternal prevalency, which the *Jew-<sup>A. D. 63.</sup>ish* priest, in his little *earthly* fabric, with his figurative services, can bear no comparison with: The difference being as wide as that between the *shadow* and *substance*, or as *heaven* is from *earth*.

13. & 14. For if those merely external and typical performances of *sacrificing, washings, sprinklings*, &c. were allowed sufficient to cleanse the *Jews* from *legal* defilements, and procure them re-admission to the service of the *tabernacle* and *temple* (which was the utmost they could do); How much more available, in proportion, must be the sacrifice of Christ's blood, a person of the highest dignity, and unspotted innocence, raised from the dead by the power of the Eternal Spirit:

15. Thus † is Christ the Medi-† *διὰ τούτου.*  
ator of the new and better cove-By *this blood.*  
nant than that of Moses. By *his*  
death are all those transgressions  
forgiven, which would have en-  
tailed death upon us, notwith-  
standing the expiation of the *Jew-  
ish*

VOL. II.

S

\* Ver. 14. [The Eternal Spirit.] See and compare Gen. xlix. 26. Habak. iii. 6. Note also, that many MSS. read it *as the Holy Spirit*; and so the Vulgar Latin.

A. D. 63. under the first testament, they which are called, might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.

16 For where a testament is, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator.

17 For a testament is of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all while the testator liveth.

|| Διαθήκη, as  
ברית in the  
Hebrew.

by the blood of Christ: Or as the *will* and *testament* of Christ *himself*, that could not take place but at, and by his *death*\*.

18 Whereupon, neither the first testament was † dedicated with-

out blood. *Thereby figuratively showing the necessity of Christ's blood for the redemption of mankind.*

19 For when Moses had spoken every precept to all the people, according to the law, he took the blood of calves and of goats, with water and scarlet wool, and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book and all the people.

*is* sacrifices; and all true *Christian believers*, viz. whether *Jews* under the *first* testament or covenant, or *Gentile* believers under this *second*, are blest with the promise of eternal life and happiness.

16. & 17. To his *death*, I say, is all this owing; nor could we enjoy it, till his sufferings were past, any more than the last *will* and *testament* of any man can be valid, till the testator be dead. For thus may the blessings of Christianity be considered, either as a || *covenant* of God the *Father*, that was to receive its *ratification*

18. And in this it agrees with the *Mosaical* covenant, which was confirmed † and ratified by sprinkling the people with the *blood* of slain beasts: *Thereby figuratively showing the necessity of Christ's blood for the redemption of mankind.*

19. & 20. According to that account in *Exod. xxiv.* "That after Moses had read over the law to the people, he took the blood of calves and goats, mixing the blood with water (to keep it from congealing); and taking scarlet wool (to imbibe;) and hyssop (to sprinkle it); and with it he sprinkled the book of the law, and had it (by degrees ‡) sprinkled

\* Ver. 15, 16, 17, &c. Note, I have here expressed the two acceptations whereof the words Διαθήκη, *covenant* or *testament*, and Διαθέμενος, the *testator* or *pacifier*, are capable of in this difficult passage. The more critical reader may consult the learned Mr. Pierce.

† Not *dedicated* without blood, ἐγκεκαίνισται, i. e. Βεβαιω γέγονεν ἐκ γάβης, Chrysostom. So the Syraic Version.

‡ Josephus Archæol. Lib. III. p. 89.

20 Saying, This is the blood of the testament which God hath enjoined unto you.

God hath enjoined to you ;” *i. e.* by this ceremony used in making covenants and contracts, God on *his part* engages to perform the *promises*, and on *your part* to observe the *laws* of this covenant.

21 Moreover, he sprinkled with blood both the tabernacle, and all the vessels of the ministry.

22 And almost all things are by the law purged with blood : and without shedding of blood is no remission.

fels of *metal* that would abide the *fire*, and *clothes* that were washed in *water*.) And that no person whatever was cleansed, and *legally* absolved from his sins or defilements, without a *bloody* sacrifice.

23 It was therefore necessary that the patterns of things in the heavens should be purified with these, but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices than these.

24 For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true, but into

led upon all the people, *at least* A. D. 63.  
*all the chief* heads and representatives of them ; saying, “ This is the blood of the covenant which

21. “ In like manner, *after the* tabernacle *was built*, he sprinkled the whole tabernacle, and all the utensils of divine service belonging to it\*.”

22. And, you know, that according to *that* law, all kinds of vessels and appurtenances of the tabernacle whatever, were purified and consecrated by being sprinkled with blood (excepting some ves-

23. Thus men obtained admission to that sanctuary here *below* : But as to *heaven* itself, we can gain no entrance into *that*, but by being redeemed and purified by the *great* sacrifice of Christ, in a *perfect* and *effectual* manner, as *Jewish* things and persons were in a *figurative* one.

24. And this Christ has done, by his ascension into *heaven*, and becoming our Advocate with the *Father* there ; in comparison of which, the entrance of the high priest in-

S 2

to

\* Ver. 21. [Sprinkled the tabernacle.] See and compare what is said in Exod. xxiv. and xl. chapters ; in which *last* chapter, ver. 9—11. the word *sprinkling* is not indeed expressed, but is (most probably) included in the phrases *hallowing*, *sanctifying*, &c.—Compare also ver. 12. & 13. of that chapter, with Exod. xxviii. 40. 42. 43. 44. and Levit. vi. 16—20.

A. D. 63. into heaven itself, now  
to appear in the presence of God for us.

25 Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entereth into the holy place every year with the blood of others :

26 For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world : but \* now once in the end of the world, hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself.

27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment :

28 So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many ; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time, † without sin, unto salvation.

to the *second* tabernacle, the *most holy place*, was nothing but a mere shadow, and a figurative resemblance.

25. & 26. And so effectually sufficient is this his entrance into *heaven*, to present himself to God for us, that neither it, nor his death in order to it, need ever be repeated, as those of the *legal* priests were, every year. For the *one* atonement he has made, in this last \* and great dispensation of the *gospel*, by the sacrifice of himself, is abundantly enough for the pardon and salvation of all mankind.

27. & 28. And thus, so far, the death of Christ is like that of all other *men*, viz. That as *they* die but *once*, and are then to receive an eternal recompence for what they have done in this life ; so Christ, after *once* dying for our sins, has no more sufferings to undergo, no further *sacrifice* † to make, and is to appear no more upon earth, till, at the solemn day of judgment, he comes to crown and reward all his true disciples.

## CHAP.

\* [Now in the end of the world :] ἐπὶ συντέλειᾳ τῶν αἰώνων. In the last *age* or *dispensation*.

*Ibid.* Ver. 26. [Now once : ἅπαξ, once for all ;] in the same sense with ἀφ' ἁπαξ, it being so used in this, and in many other passages of the New Testament and LXX, with this *emphasis*, not taken notice of by interpreters. Compare 1 Pet. iii. 20. Jude ver. 3. Heb. vi. 4.—vii. 27.—x. 10. Psal. lxxxix. 36. Job xl. 4. Esther iv. 11.

† Appear—without sin ; χωρὶς ἁμαρτίας, without any further offering for sin. As in 2 Cor. v. 21. Or else referring these words to ἀπεδεχομένοις, [Those that look for him without sin, are good and pure Christians,] if this be not too hard a transposition. Beside that, χωρὶς ἁμαρτίας, is naturally connected to ἐκ δευτέρου, as ἀνεγενεῖν ἁμαρτίας is to ἅπαξ foregoing.



## CHAP. X.

*The second Argument still continued, viz. Judaism was but a figurative Introduction to Christianity. The Insufficiency of the legal Sacrifices, for the complete Atonement of Sin. The Death of Christ, the full and final Sacrifice further proved, from the Old Testament. It gives all good Christians a full Assurance of Heavenly Happiness, and is the most comfortable Argument for their final Perseverance in their Profession. The Jewish Christians again particularly exhorted to Constancy and Patience under their Sufferings; from the great Danger of wilful Apostacy; from the sense of their former Courage, and the Prospect of their certain and speedy Deliverance from their Persecutions.*

1 **FOR** the law having a shadow of good \* things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually, make the comers thereunto perfect.

2 For then would they not have ceased to be offered? because that

1. **WELL** then, it plainly appears by what I have already \* said, that the *Mosaical* \* priest<sup>hood</sup> and sacrifices were nothing but *types* and shadows of a future and more perfect atonement for the sins of mankind: and therefore, though never so often repeated, they could not of *themselves*, cleanse any *Jewish* worshipper from his sins, and open the way to *heaven* for him.

2. & 3. For indeed, had those sacrifices (particularly that upon the great *expiation* day) any real

A. D. 63.

\* Cap. viii. 5. ix. 8, 9, 23, 24.

S 3

vir-

\* [Of good things to come—] That is, say most interpreters, [Of the blessings of the gospel-religion:] Some understand it of *Heaven*, the true *Holy of Holies*. I have expressed *both* senses.

Ibid. [Not the very image: *αὐτὴν τὴν εἰκόνα*, the original, *the* very truth of the thing.] Chrysos. Syr. Verf. Rom. i. 23.

A. D. 63. that the worshippers  
 once purged, should  
 have had no more  
 conscience of sins.

3 But in those *sacrifices* there is a remembrance again made of sins every year.

Whereas, upon that great *annual* day, the high priest commemorates and deploras the past sins, both of that, and the *foregoing* years; a plain demonstration that they were not perfectly atoned for by the *former* sacrifices.

4 For *it is* not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins.

5 Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldst not, but † a body hast thou prepared me.

6 In burnt offerings and *sacrifices* for sin thou hast had no pleasure :

7 Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me) to do thy will, O God.

that he was actually most ready, and free to do it; as the scriptures had foretold †."

virtue to that effect, they need not have been \* repeated so often; when the thing was *once* perfectly done, had been done for *ever*. And again, if that *repetition* were effectual, there could be no occasion to abrogate them, and introduce another in their room.

4. And the truth is, there is nothing in the blood of any *beast*, that can answer the Divine Wisdom and Justice in demanding an atonement for the sins of *mankind*.

5, 6. & 7. Accordingly the *Psalmist* (Psal. xl.) prophetically representing Christ, as coming into the world, brings him in thus addressing to God the Father. "That whereas the sacrifices of the *Jewish* law were but mere figures, no way acceptable to him as a propitiation for the sins of mankind; the time was now come, wherein *he* (the Son of God) was now fully to accomplish it *by being made man*, and by yielding *himself* to suffer; in perfect submission and obedience to the Divine Will of the *Father* :

8. & 9. Now

---

\* [For then would they not have ceased to be offered.] The *sz* is not in some copies; but it makes no material alteration in the sense, which I have expressed both ways.

† [A body hast thou prepared me.] See Dr. Alix Sense of the Jewish Church, &c. Chap. 27. And Bishop Kidder, Dem. Mess. Vol. II. p. 268, 269, &c. for a full vindication of this passage, from the exceptions of the Jews. See also the note on Chap. xi. 21.

8 Above, when he said, Sacrifice, and offering, and burnt offerings, and *offering* for sin thou wouldst not, neither hadst pleasure *therein* (which are offered by the law):

9 Then said he, Lo,

10 By the which will we are sanctified, through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once *for all*†.

that need never be repeated; having, once † and for ever, procured the pardon and salvation of all true believers.

11 And every priest standeth daily ‡ ministring and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins:

12 But this man after he had offered one sacrifice for sins, for ever sat down on the right hand of God;

13 From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool.

8. & 9. Now these words are a plain declaration of the utter insufficiency of the *Jewish* sacrifices; when Christ puts his *own* sufferings and sacrifice to supply their defects. And, by doing the *one*, he abrogates all further use of the *other*. A. D. 63.

I come to do thy will, O God. He that he may establish the second.

10. And, consequently, we are not to regard *them* as the means of our justification and happiness; but to rely upon this obedient act of Christ suffering in our flesh; an act

11, 12, 13. & 14. Consider again, therefore, the great difference between the happy and glorious effects of this office of Christ and that of the *Jewish* priests. *They* were obliged to repeat their sacrifices every day or year. A clear evidence that their efficacy for the perfect pardon of sin was but small: whereas Christ, by *once* offering his *own* life, was so acceptable to God, as to be raised again from the dead, exalted to the highest degree of heavenly glory and majesty, invested with the full dominion over all his and

S 4

our

\* Ver. 9. [Taketh away the first]; i. e. He abrogates the first will or law of God, viz. the law of Jewish sacrifices, and establishes the second will, viz. the sacrifice of Christ—[By the which will we are sanctified, &c.] in the following words. Thus the ingenious Mr. Pierce has connected the sense; with which my paraphrase fully agrees, though the emphasis be not laid upon the same substantive.

† Note. [Once for all.] See Chap. ix. 26.—vi. 4.—x. 10. 1 Pet. i. 12.—iii. 18, 20. Jude ver. 3.

‡ Ver. 11. [Daily ministring *καθήμενος*, from time to time, —i. e. *yearly* upon the *great expiation day*.

A. D. 63. 14 For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified.

15 *Whereof* the Holy Ghost also is a witness to us: for after that he had said before,

16 This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them:

17 And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more.

18 Now where remission of these is, there is no more offering for sin.

Christians are so excessively zealous for.

19 Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus,

20 By a \* new and living way † which he hath consecrated for us through the veil, that is to say, his flesh;

21 And *having* an high priest over the house of God:

our enemies, sin, Satan, wicked men, and death itself; and so is the complete Redeemer of all that embrace his religion.

15, 16. & 17. For this and no other, is the sense of that fore-mentioned || divine prophecy (Jer. xxxi.), where, *after having expressed the excellency, plainness, and simplicity of the gospel religion*, it is added, “and their sins and iniquities will I remember no more;” i. e. There shall be one perfect and complete atonement made for them.

18. And if so, there can be no further occasion for those legal sacrifices and ceremonies which the Jews and many of the Jewish

19, 20. & 21. Wherefore, dear brethren, since our pardon and entrance into the heavenly state of happiness is thus fully procured, by so wise and effectual a method as this of Christ's death; since he has taken down the partition, † and prepared the way by suffering upon earth, and by being exalted into heaven, and becoming the High Priest, Governor and Intercessor for the Christian church;

22. & 23.

\* Ver. 20. [By a new and living way.] A most emphatical expression, to denote the happy difference between the Jewish entrance into the most holy place of the temple, and a Christian's entrance into heaven. If any Israelite, beside the high priest, dared to enter into that inner sanctuary, he suffered death: every Christian's entrance into heaven gives him eternal life.

† [Which he hath consecrated]; ἡν ἐνκαίνισεν, which he hath prepared, ἡν κατασκεύασεν, ἧς ἤρξατο. Chrysost., and which he himself began to enter by.

22 Let us draw near with a true heart, in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water.

23 Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering (for he is faithful that promiseth.)

24 And let us consider one another, to provoke unto love, and to good works: and to exemplary practice, to encourage and spirit up one another to perfect love and charity towards all your Christian *brethren*; without any further partial distinction between *Jewish* and *Gentile* believers.

25 Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting *one another*: and so much the more as you see the day approaching.

of that prejudice against the *Gentile* Christians, which they carry so far as to refuse to join with them in their worship and devotion. And it should be the stronger argument upon them to remember how near the time is drawing, wherein our Lord himself has declared there should be an end put even to the *temple*, and the whole *Jewish dispensation* †.

26 For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins,

27 But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall

22. & 23. How steadily ought we to embrace *his* religion, whereby so perfect a reconciliation is obtained for us; worshipping God, through *him*, with full and unshaken confidence in those promises that can never fail and deceive us? A. D. 63.

24. And, as this ought to establish your faith in God and Christ, under all your persecutions; so ought it to make you, by your

25. In fine, it ought to be a preservative against that cowardice, the *Jewish* Christians now too commonly discover, by forsaking the profession and || worship of || *Christianity*, and returning to that of the *synagogue* and *temple*, for fear of persecution; and cure them

26. & 27. Let me again \* remind you of the fatal consequence of wilfully and deliberately renouncing a religion so clearly attested and confirmed to you. If you slight, and once neglect the means of salvation now offered you by Christ, you lose the last and only method God will ever propose for your redemption; and must

† See Matth.

xxiv. Job

xiv. 23, 24.

\* Chap. vi. 4.

5, 6, 7.

**A. D. 63.** shall devour the adversaries.

awaits the obstinate adversaries of true religion.

28 He that despised Moses law, died without mercy, under two or three witnesses:

\*Cap. ii. 3.

29 Of how much forer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant where-with he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?

the very *Son of God*, profaning and treating his precious blood, that ratified this gracious covenant of their redemption, as the blood of an *ordinary* person, nay, of a *malefactor*; and doing the utmost contempt to the *Holy Spirit* so graciously given; by undervaluing the great and miraculous powers, which so amply demonstrated the truth of their holy profession?

30 For we know him that hath said, Vengeance *belongeth* unto me, I will recompense, saith the Lord. And again, The Lord shall judge his people.

31 *It is* a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

upon obstinate and incurable offenders is eternally durable, as his *existence* is.

32 But call to remembrance the former days, in which after ye were illuminated, ye en-

must expect to perish by that divine wrath and vengeance, that

28. & 29. And how great *that* will be, you may conclude from God's dealing with *apostates*, and presumptuous \* offenders against the *Jewish* law. Whoever was convicted of such a crime by the testimony of two or three witnesses, was ordered to be *slain without mercy*, Numb. xv. Deut. xvii. How much more dreadful and exemplary do you think, must be that *final* destruction of those, who now, contemptuously, and against the clearest evidences, reject the authority of Christ the *Messiah*,

30. Remember those severe words (Deut. xxxii. 35, 36.), wherein God declares, that "To him belongeth vengeance and recompence." And again, "The Lord will judge his (disobedient) people."

31. Consider duly, and in time, how fearful a thing it is to fall under the final displeasure of an infinite Governor, whose *justice*

32. And, the better to support yourselves under your present persecutions, recollect and comfort your spirits with a sense of that generous

endured a great fight of afflictions :

which befel you || at

generous Christian courage that A. D. 63. carried you through the sufferings

your first conversion.

|| Acts viii.

33 Partly whilst ye were made a gazing-stock, both by reproaches and afflictions; and partly whilst ye became companions of them that were so used.

33. When you were exposed, vilified and abused by the raging malice of the Jews; and bravely adhered to us the *apostles* of Christ, that were then treated in the same manner, Acts v. 41.—Cap. xiv. 5, 19. and—Cap. xvii. 10, 14, 15.

34 For ye had compassion of me in my bonds, and took joyfully the spoiling of your goods, knowing in yourselves \* that ye have in heaven a better and an enduring substance.

had in this world for

34. When you were so truly courageous, as to own and relieve those *apostles* (and *me* in particular) that were imprisoned in Judea for Christ's religion; and were so entirely convinced of the certainty of that eternal happiness of heaven, promised in the gospel, as cheerfully to part with all you the sake of it.

35 Cast not away therefore your confidence, which hath great recompence of reward.

little and mean would it *now* be, to shrink back and forfeit such hopes !

35. After such signal instances, therefore, of courage and resolution, in owning a religion you know to be attended with such ample and glorious rewards; how

36 For ye have need of patience; that after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise.

37 For

36. Consider, that *courage* and patience is the only thing that is to carry you through, and bring you to the heavenly state; which is the recompence for submitting to the Divine Will and Providence.

37. Nor

---

\* Ver. 34. [Knowing in yourselves, or rather knowing that you yourselves (that are thus persecuted) have in heaven a better—substance.] So the Alexand. MSS. read it *scures*, as also the Syr. Arab. and Clem. Alexandrinus.

A. D. 63.

37 For yet a little while, and † he that shall come, will come, and ‡ will not tarry. 37. Nor be discouraged, that you are not *immediately* rescued from your persecutions; for though it be not *immediate*, yet be assured, your deliverance will not only be certain, but speedy enough too. According to those words of the prophet, Hab. ii. 3. spoken of the coming of Christ, “Though he tarry, wait for him. For he that cometh (i. e. † Christ) will come, and will not tarry ‡ long.”

38 Now the just shall live by faith, but if any man draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him.

38. And forget not the following words, ver. 4. “Now the just shall live by his faith,” i. e. By a firm and resolute belief of, and adherence to the revelation of God’s will, when sufficiently made to him, and by a *faithful* perseverance in a practice agreeable to such belief. “But if any man draw || back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him,” i. e. Whoever, after the entertainment of divine truth, hypocritically conceals, or cowardly renounces the profession of it, shall forfeit all the blessings to which it entitled him.

\*Cap. vi. 9. 39 But we are not of them who draw back unto perdition: but of them that believe, to the saving of the soul.

39. And, brethren, I hope the generality of \*you, that have thus far stood out, under your former persecutions, will not now at last be lost for want of courage, but will reap the final salvation promised in the gospel, by a steady perseverance in its faith and principles.

† [He that cometh.] See Mat. xi. 3. Luke vii. 19.

‡ [Will not tarry: & χρονίζω, *will not stay too long.*] Sept. || ἐὰν ὑποσείληται, *if, or whenever, he draws back.*



C H A P. XI.

*The Apostle's Third Argument, for encouraging the Christians of Judea to Perseverance in their Profession, under all their Persecutions, viz. The numerous Examples of all the Patriarchs and holy Men recorded in Scripture, or in the Apocryphal Writings, as the most eminent Servants of God. That they all were justified by the same Principle of Faith in God's Revelation; for suffering under the same Hopes of future and invisible Blessings, that Christianity now propoſeth: and for the very ſame, ſhall they, and all good Chriſtians, be finally and completely rewarded together at the Great Day of Judgment.*

1 NOW faith is the substance \* of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.

1. I Said †, it was a steady faith A. D. 63. in Christ, and a resolute profession of his religion, that must ‡ Chap. x. procure your ſalvation. And 29. whereas the Jewish zealots are

wont to affright you, by confidently affirming, "That to embrace Christianity is to apostatize from Moses and from God:" it will be enough to silence that vain pretence, to consider, that to be a Christian, is the exercise and result of no other principle of faith, but what justified all the patriarchs and holy men of old; viz. "Such a rational and steady belief," either of things long since past, "or of the invisible blessings of a future life, proportionable to the evidences God has given us of them, as will actuate us into obedience, and make us ready to suffer for the profession of such a belief."

2. For

\* Ver. 1. [The substance of things hoped for: ὑποστασις, The firm assurance, or expectation.] So this word is truly rendered, Psal. xxxix. 7. Ruth. i. 12. Ezek. xix. 5. in the LXX. and Chap. iii. 14. of this epistle.

A. D. 63. 2 For by it the el-  
 ders obtained a good  
 report.

3 Through faith  
 we understand that  
 the worlds were fram-  
 ed by the word of  
 God, so that things  
 which are seen were  
 not made of things  
 which do appear.

† Gen. i. 2. now see it, by Christ † the *Word*, and *Son of God*, who  
 &c. John i.  
 2, 3, 4. λó- governs all the dispensations of it?  
 γος.

4 By faith Abel of-  
 fered unto God a  
 more excellent sacri-  
 fice than Cain, by  
 which he obtained  
 witness that he was  
 righteous, God testi-  
 fying of his gifts: and  
 by it he being dead,  
 yet speaketh.

*the principle that makes our services acceptable to God.*

5 By faith Enoch  
 was translated, that he  
 should not see death,  
 and was not found, be-  
 cause God had trans-  
 lated him: for before  
 his translation he had

6 But without faith  
 it is impossible to  
 please him: for he  
 § See ver. 1. that cometh to God,  
 must believe that he  
 is, and that he is a re-  
 warder of them that  
 diligently seek him.

2. For *this* great virtue the an-  
 cestors of your nation stand record-  
 ed, as such eminent examples of  
 piety and true religion.

3. What is it, but divine *reve-  
 lation*, that makes us absolutely  
 certain, that the world \* was not  
 by *chance*, nor a fortuitous jum-  
 ble of pre-existing *matter*, but  
 made in *time*, by the power and  
 command † of God, and put into  
 this beauteous form wherein we

† the *Word*, and *Son of God*, who

4. The serious belief of divine  
*revelation* rendered the sacrifice of  
 Abel acceptable, and the want of  
 it caused Cain's to be rejected.  
 God demonstrating his acceptance  
 of him as a pious and good man,  
 by causing fire from || heaven to  
 consume his sacrifice. And though  
 Abel be dead, yet is his sacrifice  
 a standing evidence, *That this is*

5. As a reward of this very same  
 virtue, was Enoch translated from  
 earth, without dying according to  
 the common course of nature.  
 Gen. v. 22, 24.

this testimony, that he pleased God.

6. And indeed, nothing is plain-  
 er, than that a firm persuasion of  
 the *existence of God* (though he be  
 § invisible to us), and a lively  
 hope and assurance, proportionable  
 to the knowledge men have of  
 his nature and will, that he will  
 reward

|| Ἐνέπρησι. Version. Theodorfi. See Gen. xv. 17. Lev.  
 ix. 24. Psal. xx. 3.

reward all his true and sincere worshippers (though <sup>A. D. 63.</sup> that reward be *future* and at a distance), is the first and most necessary principle of all true religion.

7 By faith Noah being warned of God of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house, by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by faith.

8 By faith \* Abraham when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed, and he went out not knowing whither he went.

9 By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise.

10 For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

the certain and unchangeable state of *future* happiness.

11 Through faith also Sarah herself received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a child when she was past age, be-

7. Upon *this* it was, that Noah prepared the ark, saved himself from the destruction of *this* world, and obtained the happiness of the *next*; while the rest of mankind were justly left to perish in their unreasonable infidelity.

8. & 9. By *this* Abraham left his native country, went and dwelt as a stranger, in a mean and obscure manner, in a foreign land; even before he knew what the land was, or was acquainted with the *promise*, that his posterity should fully possess and enjoy it, Gen. xii. 1. with Gen. xxvi. 3. xxviii. 13.

10. It was sufficient to that reasonable and good man, that God had promised him, in general, *To be his shield and exceeding great reward*, Gen. xv. 1. And *his* eye was upon

11. & 12. In reward of the same *faith* in the repeated *promise of God*, Sarah was enabled to conceive and bear a son, when both she and her husband were naturally incapable of such a thing, through

\* Ver. 8. [Abraham when he was called, *ὁ ὀνομαζόμενος Ἀβραάμ*, he that was called Abraham.] The words have a great emphasis; he whom God was pleased to call The Great Father, The Father of many Nations, The Father of the Faithful. See Gen. xvii. 3, 4, 5, 6. with my paraphrase and note there.

A. D. 63. because she judged him faithful who hath promised.

12 Therefore sprang there even of \* one, and him as good as dead, so many as the stars of the sky in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable.

13 These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.

14 For they that say such things, declare plainly that they seek a † country.

15 And truly if they had been mindful of that country, from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned :

16 But now they desire a better country, that is an heavenly : wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God ; for he hath prepared for them a city.

through their great age ; And from them came an innumerable posterity, which, without an extraordinary act of divine power, could no more have been expected from two such superannuated people, than if they had been actually dead\*.

13. & 14. All these forementioned worthies died in *this* noble principle ; full of the hopes, and possessed with the prospect of *future* and eternal felicities. Upon these *distant* joys they acted ; for *these* they gave up all worldly enjoyments, and looked upon the present life as nothing but a passage into a better state.

15. & 16. For it is very clear, it could not be *temporal* hopes, these great souls were acted by ; because Abraham, for instance, had a much more fair and natural prospect of *that* kind, in his own native country, than he could be supposed to have in a foreign land, among a barbarous and uncultivated people. Nor could it amount to much, for God to style himself *their* God ‡, i. e. in an *eminent sense*, their Great Protector and Rewarder ; if he had nothing

§ See Mat. xxii. 32.

\* Ver. 12. [Even of one, ἀφ' ἑνός, from that single person, and from him in a manner dead.]——So the word εἷς is used Gal. iii. 20. and in many other passages.

† Ver. 14. [That they seek a country]—A very flat translation ! It is Πατρίδα, [A country of their father's, their native and proper home :] So *heaven* is the *proper country* or habitation of *good men*, the place where (God) their *Father* dwells.

nothing to bestow on them but a few *temporal* blessings; A. D. 63.  
and those too, mixed up with many troubles and afflictions common to human life. All their proceedings, therefore, bespeak their main and ultimate hopes to have been in the *future* and invisible glories of another world; even the very same that the *gospel* now more explicitly proposes to us *Christians*.

17 By faith Abraham when he was tried offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises, offered up his only begotten son:

18 Of whom it was said, that in Isaac shall thy seed be called.

19 Accounting that God was able to raise him up, even from the dead: from whence also he received him in a figure.

him to him again, or else fulfil the promise in some other way, that would be as good and happy for him. And accordingly, as the birth of Isaac from the dead womb of Sarah was a gift of new and miraculous life; so the rescue of Isaac, by the voice of an *angel*, was the same thing to Abraham as if he had been actually slain, and then restored to life.

20 By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come.

21 By faith Jacob when he was dying, blessed both the sons of Joseph, and worshipped \* leaning upon the top of his staff.

VOL. II.

17. & 18. To proceed therefore: This serious persuasion of the divine truth and Providence, made Abraham, at the instance of the divine command, ready, with his own hands, to sacrifice the very *son*, in whom alone he expected to see the *great promise* fulfilled to him.

19. Most dutifully and rationally considering that the same Divine Power, that caused Isaac to be conceived and born, in a manner as wonderful as that of raising the dead to life again, could either restore

20. & 21. With this firm assurance, That God would make good all his benedictions (though perhaps he knew not precisely *when*) did Isaac, in a prophetic way, and with religious reverence pronounce the blessings on his sons Jacob and Esau; as Jacob did afterwards upon Ephraim and Manasse||. Gen. xlvii.

T

22. So 30.

\* Ver. 21. [Leaning upon the top of his staff.] In the Hebrew it is, "Israel bowed himself upon his bed's head." The word *מטה*, by the change of one *point*, signifying either

A. D. 63. 22 By faith Joseph when he died made mention of the departing of the children of Israel: and gave commandment concerning his bones.

23 By faith Moses when he was born, was hid three months of his parents, because they saw he was a proper child, and they were not afraid of the king's commandment.

24 By faith Moses when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter:

25 Choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season:

26 Esteeming the reproach \* of Christ greater

22. So did Joseph, just before his death, foretell the deliverance of the Israelites out of Egypt, and ordered his own bones to be carried with them into Canaan, as a testimony how fully he assured himself of their arrival there, according to the *divine* promise.

23. Thus Moses's parents, in defiance of that barbarous edict of Pharaoh, resolved not to deliver up so lovely and beautiful a child, but hid him three months by the side of the river Nile, in hopes, that God would providentially provide for his escape.

24. 25. & 26. Thus Moses, when he came at age, refused the great privilege of being adopted into the royal family of the Egyptian monarchs, owned himself to be a Hebrew born, and not Pharaoh's grandchild; choosing rather to share in all the difficulties the Israelites, \* whom he knew to be God's true *church* and people, were to undergo, than to enjoy the vicious and temporary

---

a *bed*, or a *staff*, the *LXX* read it in the *latter* sense: And it was that *version* the writers of the New Testament generally made use of. Of their method of quoting the Old Testament passages, though not absolutely *verbatim*, yet ever so as to make no alteration in the *sense* and *purpose* they are quoted for. The learned reader may consult Glassius Philog. Sac. p. 1472, &c. edit. Francof. 1653. But indeed the more true rendering should be "worshipping upon the top of his staff." See Mr. Hallet's Supplement to Mr. Pierce on the Hebrews, *in loc.*

\* [The reproach of Christ:] τῆς Χριστοῦ; of the *anointed* (people) *i. e.* the Israelites, Psal. cv. Or rather thus, *of Christ*, *i. e.* such reproaches as *Christians* now suffer for the sake of Christ and his religion: or such reproaches as Christ himself suffered while he was upon earth, or, *lastly*, the reproach Moses was likely to suffer for thus acting from a principle of *faith* in the *Messiah* to come.

greater riches than the treasures in Egypt: for he had respect unto the reward.

Moses refused the highest of *these*, by flighting the glories of Egypt. And as for the land of Canaan, he saw it at a distance, but never enjoyed it. His aim therefore was at *heaven, then*, as that of all good Christians is *now*.

27 By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king, for he endured, as seeing him who is invisible.

28 Through faith he kept the passover, and the sprinkling of blood, lest he that destroyed the first-born, should touch them.

29 By faith they passed through the Red Sea, as by dry land, which the Egyptians assaying to do, were drowned.

30 By faith the walls of Jericho fell down after they were compassed about seven days.

31 By faith the harlot Rahab perished not with them that believed not, when she had received the spies with peace.

32 And what shall I more say? for the time would fail me to tell of Gideon, and of Barak, and of Sampson, and of Jephthah, of David also and Samuel, and of the prophets.

33 Who

rary pleasures of the Egyptian court. And, with what view was this? Not of any *worldly* advantage or *present* happiness: for

27, 28. & 29. With this religious *faith* in the *revelations* of the invisible † God, he led the Israelites out of Egypt; dreaded not the powerful army that pursued him; kept the passover, ordered the blood to be sprinkled on the door-posts of each house, as a sure token of their exemption from the plague that raged around them; had the Red Sea miraculously divided for his passage; and the return of the waters to destroy his pursuers.

30. & 31. God, in reward of the Israelites *faith* in the divine *promises*, made the walls of Jericho fall (Josh. vi. 5.) And by *owning the true God*, upon sufficient *testimonies* given her, the very harlot Rahab saved her life.

32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37. & 38. In fine, it would be endless for me to go through the numberless instances of the like kind, recorded in the Old Testament. The miraculous victories obtained by some, the marvellous deliverances of others, and the wonderful and di-

A. D. 63.

33 Who through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions.

34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong,

waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens.

35 Women received their dead raised to life again: and others were tortured, not accepting deliverance: that they might obtain a better resurrection †.

36 And others had trials of cruel mockings, and scourgings, yea, moreover, of bonds and imprisonment.

37 They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword: they wandered about in sheepskins, and goat-skins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented:

38 Of whom the world was not worthy: they wandered in deserts, in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth.

39 And these all having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise:

¶ Ver. II.

while they lived; and though they have all been, long since, in a state of rest and happiness, it is but a state of blessed *expectation*. They have not, as yet, the full and complete enjoyment of that *celestial* glory.

40 God having provided some better thing

39. Thus all your pious *ancestors* stand upon record as *such*, by the firm and rational belief of *future* || and invisible blessings.

Things they actually saw not, while they lived; and though they have all been, long since, in a state of rest and happiness, it is but a state of blessed *expectation*. They have not, as yet, the full and complete enjoyment of that *celestial* glory.

40. It being the good pleasure, and wise appointment of God, to defer

---

\* Ver. 32, &c. [Of Gideon, and Barak, and Sampson, &c.]. For the particular *instances*, of the *faith*, and *exploits* of the several persons named or not named in these verses, to the 39th verse, let the reader consult Mr. Hallet's Supplement to Mr. Pierce, in loc.

† Ver. 35. [A better resurrection,] i. e. a *future* resurrection to *eternal life*, far better than the resurrection of the *women's children*, before-mentioned, or than that of the persons *tortured*, would have been. The *one* being a restoration to the present *short* life, the *other* to an *eternal* one.



thing for us: that defer *that*, till the perfect and A. D. 63. they without us should complete || revelation of the go- <sup>Κεῖν τὸν τί.</sup> not be made perfect. *spel* were made to us Christians, and the last and great dispensation of the *Messiah* be past: that so, both they, *patriarchs, prophets, apostles*, and all sincere Christians, whether *Jewish* or *Gentile* ones, may, for the courageous exercise of the same excellent and virtuous *principle*, be all rewarded and crowned together, with the happiness both of body and soul, at the final day of judgment.

## CHAP. XII.

*The Inference from the foregoing Argument; viz. That as the Behaviour of the Patriarchs and Holy Men of old, do vindicate the Reasonableness of the Christian Faith, so ought it to be the most exemplary Encouragement, to spirit up all Christians under their Sufferings for it. The same Encouragement further enforced, from the Example of Christ himself. The great Reasonableness and Advantage of suffering for true Religion. The Danger of relapsing from Christianity: especially to the Jewish Converts, from the apparent Excellency and Greatness of the Christian Religion, when compared with the Jewish Law.*

1. **W**HEREFORE, seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us, apostacy, † to which we tempt and draw you.

1. **H**AVING therefore such \* a- <sup>Chap. xi.</sup> bundant testimonies, "that your Christian faith is the exercise of the same virtuous principle for which all your pious ancestors stand so famously recorded;" let such numerous and excellent examples ‡ raise you above † νίφος all fears and perplexities, spirit μαρτύρων. you on in your Christian course, and keep you from that cowardly apostacy, † to which your present sufferings are so apt † ἐν πειρασμοῖς α-

T 3

2. And μαρτίαν.

A. D. 63. 2 Looking unto  
 ~~~~~ Jesus the author and  
 finisher of *our* faith;  
 who for the joy that  
 was set before him,  
 endured the cross, de-  
 spising the shame, and  
 is set down at the  
 right hand of the  
 throne of God.

expressible height of mind despised the scandal of dying  
 like a *malefactor* upon the cross: and is now according-  
 ly rewarded for it with the utmost degree of heavenly  
 glory and majesty.

|| ἀναλογι-  
 σασθε.

3 For consider him  
 that endured such con-  
 tradiction of sinners  
 against himself, lest ye  
 be wearied and faint  
 in your minds.

buoy *you* up under all the conflicts you endure for his sake.

4 \* Ye have not  
 yet resisted unto blood,  
 striving against sin.

out before you have done as much as those great *wor-  
 thies*, and Christ himself has done before you, would be  
 to come short, and lose the power of their examples.

5 And ye have for-  
 gotten the † exhorta-  
 tion, which speaketh  
 unto you, as unto chil-  
 dren, My son, despise  
 not thou the chasten-  
 ing of the Lord, nor  
 faint when thou art  
 rebuked of him.

6 For

2. And, for your still higher  
 encouragement, consider the most  
 perfect example of Jesus Christ,  
 himself, the author of your reli-  
 gion, and the great rewarder of  
 its true professors; who for the  
 joyful prospect of being exalted  
 as the Redeemer and Saviour of  
 mankind, with absolute patience  
 endured the pains, and with in-

3. Weigh || and compare *his*  
 sufferings with your *own*; and see,  
 if the blasphemies against *his* doc-  
 trine, the reproaches upon *his* per-  
 son, and the malicious attempts  
 upon *his* life, be not sufficient to

4. Remember, you have not yet  
 suffered the worst, \* from those  
 malicious adversaries; and to give

5. & 6. Those converts among  
 you, that shrink and faint, already,  
 under their persecutions, seem to  
 have forgotten the wise purposes,  
 and great advantages the scrip-  
 tures mention of God's permit-  
 ting afflictions to befall his true  
 servants: particularly that of  
 Prov.

\* [Not yet resisted unto blood.] Perhaps it may be an  
*agonistical* term: it being the most scandalous thing for any  
 combatant to give out before any blood was drawn: as Ja-  
 cobus Lydius observes, *Agonist. Sat.*

† Ver. 5. [And ye have forgotten the exhortation—] It  
 may perhaps be best to take these words *interrogatively*; *Καὶ  
 ἐκλέληθε τὴν παρακλήσεως*, [Have ye forgotten the exhortation?]

6 For whom the Lord loveth, he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth.

7 If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons: for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not?

8 But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons.

9 Furthermore, we have had fathers of our flesh, which corrected us, and we gave *them* reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live?

a wife and good *Creator*, that will reward our sufferings with *eternal* life and happiness?

10 For they verily for a few days chastened *us* after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness.

of reason, and levelled at our *highest* advantage; being designed to work those dispositions in us, that will render us like to God, and for ever happy in the enjoyment of him.

11 Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but

Prov. iii. 11. & 12. "My son, <sup>A. D. 63.</sup> despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him: for whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, &c."

7. & 8. In laying present afflictions on us, God acts only the part of a prudent *father*; training us up, by such methods, as may best work our tempers into a dutiful and patient obedience. And, should he wholly neglect these means, and indulge us in uninterrupted ease, and present prosperity, he would be wanting in one of the proper instances of a careful and tender father.

9. You all own, that the prudent severities and strict discipline of a *natural* parent are so far from discouraging, that they gain greater respect and reverence from the child. How infinitely more advantageous then must it be for us *men*, but especially Christians, to be under the present discipline of

10. For, while the corrections of our earthly parents may, through human weakness, be sometimes passionate and humourfome, and, at best, do chiefly tend to our conduct in a short and transitory life; the chastisements of God are full

11. Be not therefore discouraged at the sharpness of your present sufferings. Afflictions in-

A. D. 63. but grievous: nevertheless, afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby.

12 Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees.

13 And make straight \* paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned † out of the way, but let it rather be healed.

judgments, uphold their spirits, and keep them firm to their profession.

14 Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord:

peaceable carriage, and a gentle-disposition toward all mankind, is one of the main branches of our Christian duty.

15 Looking diligently, lest any man fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up, trouble you, and thereby may be defiled:

† ἐπισκοποῦντες.

|| See Deut. xix. 18.

16 Lest

deed are always troublesome, and sometimes press very hard; but the great advantage a good Christian may reap from a wise and courageous behaviour under them, is infinitely able to balance that account.

12. & 13. Wherefore, like true combatants, hold out and stand firm to the last. Encourage the faint-hearted, and support such as you find weak and feeble under their afflictions. Remove all objections \* and obstacles out of the way of such as you find apt to be prejudiced, and drawn aside; and, by a prudent behaviour toward them, endeavour to rectify their

14. Be careful to practise that *chastity*, and *purity* of life, without which none can enjoy the favour of God, nor be happy in his presence. And remember that a

peaceable carriage, and a gentle-disposition toward all mankind, is one of the main branches of our Christian duty.

15. Have a careful eye to yourselves, and to one † another, to prevent, if possible, any from relapsing from Christianity, and forfeiting all its blessings; for fear any such *apostate* should prove like a poisonous herb; and so taint || and infect others with his cowardly and base principles.

16. For

\* Ver. 13. [Make straight paths: or rather *τεοχίας ὁρθάς*, smooth, even paths.]

† [Be turned out of the way: *ἐκτραπή*, should be put quite out of joint.—]

16 Left there *be* any fornicator, or † profane person, as Esau, who for one morsel of meat sold his birth-right,

he resigned up his *birth-right*, to which such excellent privileges were annexed.

17 For ye know how that afterward when he would have inherited the blessing, he was rejected: for he found no place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with tears.

from *Christianity*, to religion and happiness.

18 For ye are not come unto the mount that might be ‡ touched,

16. For fear any *Christian*, for A. D. 63. the gratification of any \* sinful lusts, or securing his *worldly* advantages, should prove as thoughtless and profane † as Esau was, when, to satisfy his present hunger,

17. Let them learn by *his* example, that blessings, once lost, may not be recoverable by the utmost importunity and concern. And as *his* tears could avail nothing toward retrieving the *birth-right* he had fooled away; so it will be an exceeding hard, || if not im- Chap. vi. possible thing, for wilful *apostates* 4, 5, 6.

be ever reduced again to true religion.

18. 19. 20. & 21. And this danger will appear the greater, by considering, they forsake a religion so much

---

\* Ver. 16. Any fornicator: *μη τις πορνός*. That there be no whoremonger, of any kind, amongst you.

† Ver. 16. [Profane person as Esau;] for resigning the chief *priesthood*, which was the office and privilege of the *eldest* of the family, say most interpreters. Or else, for slighting the solemn *prayers* and *benedictions* of his *father*, with which the birth-right of the eldest son was conferred upon, and confirmed to him, as Mr. Le Clerc thinks. But the true and immediate notion of this *profaneness* of Esau appears best from the words of the history, Gen. xxv. 23. "He did eat and drink, and rose up, and went his way," *i. e.* careless and unconcerned; *thus Esau despised his birth-right—despised*; the Hebrew word signifies *profanely contemned*. And the *privilege* of the birth-right seems very plainly to have been the *rule* or *headship* of the family, according to those words of Gen. xxvii. 28, 29. "Be lord over thy brethren, &c."

‡ Ver. 18. [Unto the mount that might be touched,] *i. e.* an *earthly*, *corporal* and *sensible* one, denoting the external and carnal nature of the *ceremonial law*, from thence delivered. Yet I make a *query*, whether the true reading should

A. D. 63. ed, and that burned with fire, nor unto blackness, and darkness, and tempest.

19 And the sound of a trumpet, and the voice of words, which *voice* they that heard, entreated that the word should not be spoken to them any more :

20 (For they could not endure that which was commanded : And if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned, or thrust through with a dart.

21 And so terrible was the sight, that Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake.)

22 But ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels,

23 To the general assembly and church of the first-born which are written in \* heaven, and to God the judge of all, and to the spirits of just men † made perfect,

24 And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling

much more mild and gracious ; privileges and blessings so much nobler than those of the *Jewish* law. That *law* was delivered to your forefathers in a manner so dreadful, and with circumstances so tremendous and affrighting, that neither the people nor Moses himself could bear them, without horror and astonishment.

22. 23. & 24. On the contrary, your *Christian* religion, without any such terrible introductions, upon only the gracious and reasonable conditions of *repentance*, and true *faith*, makes *you* members of that spiritual and heavenly society, whereof all good and holy men \* (whether *circumcised* or *uncircumcised*), glorified saints, and even *angels* themselves are a part, under Christ their universal Head, the Mediator of this new and gracious covenant of the *gospel*; who has redeemed and cleansed us by the sacrifice of his blood. A sacrifice infinitely more pleasing to God than that of Abel, though offered

---

should not be *μη ψηλαφώμενω ὄρει*, “the mountain that might “not be touched.” This being perfectly true, as to the *time* of the delivery of the *law*, and a circumstance exactly agreeable to the rest, as mentioned by the *apostle*, in this passage. But finding no copies to warrant this reading, I leave it only as a conjecture.

\* [Whose names are written in heaven.] See Phil. iv. 3. the note there.

† Ver. 23. [The spirits of just men made perfect ; *that is*, who have perfected and finished their course,] having escaped all the dangers and temptations of the present world.

ling, that speaketh better things \* than that of Abel. fered with the most perfect faith\*; A. D. 63. and a bloodshed directly opposite in its effects to *his*; procuring *us* perfect *mercy* and *forgiveness*; while Abel's called for nothing but *vengeance*.

25 See that ye refuse not him † that speaketh: For if they escaped not who refused him that spake on earth, much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from him that speaketh from heaven:

25. Take heed then that you fall not off from the religion of the *Son of God*. For if *apostates* from the *law* delivered only from mount || Sinai, and by Moses, who was but a *man*, were so severely punished with death; how more terrible will be *their* punishment, who renounce a religion that was immediately revealed by the *Son of God* from *heaven*? || τον ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς κρηματίζοντα.

26 Whose voice then shook the earth: but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also heaven.

26. For, as great a dispensation as the *Jewish* law may seem to be, by the *solemnity* wherewith it was at first delivered; yet it is not comparable, either for its *greatness* or *duration*, to that of *Christ*. At the giving of that *law* indeed, *the earth was said to tremble*, Psal. lxxviii. 8. And the most remarkable dealings of God toward the *Jewish* people, are expressed in *scripture*, by *his shaking the earth*. But when the prophets describe the great changes and revolutions that should forerun, and the mighty power that should accompany the last and perfect dispensation

---

\* [Than that of Abel: *παρὰ τὸν Ἀβελ*, than Abel.] It not being agreed on by interpreters, whether these words relate to the *sacrifice* offered by Abel, or his *blood* spilt by Cain; I have expressed both senses.

† Ver. 25, [Him that speaketh—and him that speaketh from heaven—] Note, I interpret this of the *Son of God*: The learned Mr. Pierce thinks was *God the Father*. The difference cannot be great; since we all allow, it was the same God who spake by the *angels* and Moses, at mount Sinai on *earth*, and by his Son from *heaven*. And the words of the prophet Haggai express no more than the *degree* of the *solemnity* or *change* made by either of these *voices*. But let the reader judge.

A. D 63. tion of Christ the *Messiah*, they represent it by God's shaking both heaven and earth, Hag. ii. 7. 8. Yet once more (says God) and I will shake heaven and earth; i. e. make a *thorough* revolution, and establish a lasting dispensation of religion to all mankind\*.

27 And this word, Yet once more, signifieth the removing of those things that are shaken, as of things that † are made, that those things which cannot be shaken may remain.

28 Wherefore we receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have ‡ grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably, with reverence and godly fear.

29 For our God is a consuming fire. consume and destroy us, in a more terrible manner than he did the rebellious *Israelites*, Deut. iv. 24. and chap. ix. 3.

27. Now those words, *yet once more*, are a plain declaration, that the *Jewish* religion was to be altered and abolished, and a more perfect and *lasting* one to succeed in its room.

28. Seeing therefore, we *Christians* are actually become members of this excellent and unalterable religion, let us keep firm and ‡ steady to it; and worship God with that religious reverence, which cannot fail to make us acceptable to him.

29. Remembering that, if we do otherwise, he will, one day, consume and destroy us, in a more terrible manner than he did the rebellious *Israelites*, Deut. iv. 24. and chap. ix. 3.

\* See Matt. xxiv. 30. Mark xiii. 25. Luke xxi. 26.

† Ver. 27. [Of the things that are made—*ὡς πεποιημένων*, Of the things appointed]; i. e. *formerly* appointed, but *now* to be *changed* and *abolished*. See Mr. Pierce.

‡ Ver. 28. [Let us have grace: *ἔχαμεν χάριν*, Let us hold fast the grace.] i. e. the *gospel religion*. *ἔχω* being often the same with *κρίνω*, as in 1 Cor. vii. 2. 2 Tim. i. 13. See Glaffius Philolog. Sac. Tract. de Verbo Can. 1.



C H A P. XIII.

*The Apostle concludes with Exhortations to several Christian Duties, such especially as the Jewish Christians wanted most to have inculcated upon them; viz. to Charity, Hospitality, and Beneficence to their Fellow-Christians in imprisonment. To a due esteem of the lawfulness of Marriage, and to abstinence from all Uncleaness. To contentment in their worldly Condition. To a just esteem and imitation of their Spiritual Guides. In fine, to constancy in the true Doctrine and Worship of Christianity, as far surpassing the External Ceremonies of the Jewish Religion. Desires their Prayers for him. Prays for them. The Salutation and Conclusion.*

- I** **L**ET brotherly love continue. **I.** **H**AVING thus shown you the A. D. 63. great obligations and advantages of resolutely adhering to your profession, I shall conclude with exhorting you to the practice of such of its essential *duties*, as you *Jewish* Christians are most apt to be wanting in. Remembering then, in the first place, that universal love and charity to *all* your fellow Christians, is one of the special duties of the *gospel*. No partial distinction ought to be made between *Jewish* and *Gentile* brethren.
- 2 Be not forgetful to entertain strangers: for thereby some have entertained angels un-  
awares. 2. In particular, be mindful of that part of charity, that consists in hospitality to *strangers*. Remember how happy Lot and Abraham were, in entertaining *angels* ||, whom they at first took to be but *men*. || Gen. xviii. and xix.
- 3 Remember them that are in bonds, as bound with them; *and* 3. Have a special regard and compassion to such Christians as are under imprisonment for their religion.

A. D. 63. *and* them which suffer adversity, as being yourselves also in the body\*.

|| See 1 Tim. iv. 3. and chap. iii. 15. 4 † Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge.

is no such matter. God condemns none but irregular and unlawful pleasures; and the *marriage-bed* is † as honourable and pure to a *Christian* as to any other man.

5 Let your conversation be without covetousness: and be content with such things as ye have. For he hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee.

son, depend upon that promise of God to his church and people, Deut. xxxi. 6. Jos. xv. *He will not fail thee nor forsake thee.*

6 So that we may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me

7 Re-

religion. Consider yourselves as liable to the same afflictions.

4. And whereas the || *Jewish zealots* would persuade you, under pretence of greater purity, that *marriage* is an *unclean* state, and inconsistent with the perfection of religion: be assured there

is no such matter. God condemns none but irregular and unlawful pleasures; and the *marriage-bed* is † as honourable and pure to a *Christian* as to any other man.

5. Discover no immoderate desire of worldly gain in your dealings and conversation: But rest yourselves contented with what Providence and your own honest industry provides for you. For *Christians*, while they do their duty, may, with still greater rea-

6. And may with the Psalmist confidently say, *The Lord is my helper, I will not fear what man shall do unto me.*

7. Pay-

---

\* Ver. 3. [In the body: ὡς καὶ αὐτοὶ ὄντες ἐν τῷ σωματι—or, considering yourselves as (*members*) of the same body,] as some think it should be rendered. But this is not the use of the phrase in other passages, 2 Cor. xii. 3. and elsewhere.

† [Marriage is honourable, &c.] The phrase seems to me to be the most natural sense of the apostle: But, if the reader like it not, he may understand the verse as *imperative*, like the preceding and following ones, ἔστω being understood, “Let marriage be kept honourable, and the bed undefiled. For whoremongers, &c. δέ.” The like expression is found in the following verse—“let your conversation be, &c.” ἀφιλάργυρος ὁ τρόπος; where ἔστω is plainly understood.

7 Remember them which have the rule over you \*, who have spoken unto you the word of God: whose faith follow, considering the end of their conversation.

8 † Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever.

† so you ought to be immutably constant in preserving the doctrines of his religion pure and untainted: Remembering that his *gospel* is the *same* gospel to your teachers at *first*, and to *you* now, and to all generations that are to come *hereafter*.

9 Be not carried about with divers and strange doctrines: for ‡ it is a good thing that the heart be established with || grace, not meats, which have not profited them that have been occupied therein.

fices, that render a man not a whit *inwardly* better than he was without them.

7. Pay a due respect to the me- A. D. 63.  
mory, and follow the example of such as have been our spiritual guides and governors. Remember with what constancy they professed and taught you the Christian faith, with what patience and courage they died, and how they are now crowned and rewarded for it.

8. And consider, that as Jesus Christ is for ever steady and unchangeable in the promises he has

made, † so you ought to be immutably constant in preserving the doctrines of his religion pure and untainted: Remembering that his *gospel* is the *same* gospel to your teachers at *first*, and to *you* now, and to all generations that are to come *hereafter*.

9. Be not, therefore, deceived, and led away by the false notions of the *Jewish* doctors, about the absolute necessity of their *ceremonial* law. For it is of much ‡ greater advantage to be firm and steady in the practice of the moral rules of the || *gospel*, than to be never so strictly observant of the *Jewish* ceremonies and sacri-

10. Certainly

---

\* Ver 7 [Who have had the rule over you, &c.] It is very probable that the *persons* here meant, and recommended as examples of faith and constancy were, in general, the *elders* of the church at Jerusalem, and in particular St. James their bishop, lately martyred there. See Mill. Prolegom. § 83, 84.

† [Jesus Christ the same yesterday, &c.] That this is not meant of the *person* but the *promises* and *doctrine* of Christ, is not only agreeable to the *context*, but to many other passages of like nature. See Acts v. 42. 2 Cor. iv. 5. 1 Cor. i. 24. &c.

‡ [It is good, καλον, much better.] See Matt. xviii. 8, 9.

|| [With grace.] See 1 Tim. vi. 3. Where *sound words* and the doctrines of Christ, are opposed to *strange doctrines*, as *grace* is in this place.

A. D. 63. 10 We have an altar  
 whereof they have no  
 right to eat, which  
 serve the tabernacle.

† τῇ σκηνῇ†  
 λατρεύον-  
 τες. *priests.* But such as still adhere to *that law*, must lose  
 all the blessings and advantages of this religion of Christ.

11 For the bodies  
 of those beasts, whose  
 blood is brought into  
 the sanctuary by the  
 high priest for sin, are  
 burnt without the  
 camp.

12 Wherefore Je-  
 sus also, that he might  
 sanctify the people  
 with his own blood,  
 suffered without the  
 gate.

can partake of the blessings of his sacrifice and religion,  
 till they come entirely off from the *Jewish ceremonies*, and become true *Christians*.

13 Let us go forth  
 therefore unto him  
 \* without the camp  
 bearing his reproach:  
*dispensation.* Let us carry his cross, and after his exam-  
 ple, patiently suffer the reproaches and persecutions of  
 our adversaries.

14 For here have  
 we no continuing city,  
 but we seek one to  
 come,

we are to look on as our eternal city, and lasting home.

10. Certainly the benefits we  
 Christians receive, by the great  
 sacrifice of Christ's, death, are  
 infinitely preferable to the exter-

11. & 12. For, as the flesh of  
 those beasts, whose blood was of-  
 fered up on the great day of *ex-*  
*piation*, was ordered to be wholly  
 burnt without the *camp* (whilst  
 the tabernacle stood) and after-  
 wards without the gates of the  
*city*; and none of the priests or  
 people permitted to eat it: So in  
 like manner, Christ our great Sa-  
 crifice was, for our redemption,  
 crucified without the *gates* of Je-  
 rusalem; and accordingly none

13. Let us, therefore, leave the  
*Jewish camp*, i. e. \* the Jewish  
*ceremonial* religion, and entirely  
 embrace his more excellent *dis-*  
*pen*sation. Let us carry his cross, and after his exam-  
 ple, patiently suffer the reproaches and persecutions of  
 our adversaries.

14. Nor be discouraged, though  
 at present, you live in an unsettled  
 condition, and are persecuted from  
 place to place. This world, at  
 best, is not designed as a constant residence; it is *heaven*

15. By

---

\* [Without the camp:] ἔξω τῆς κατὰ νόμον γενομένης πολιτείας,  
 i. e. we ought to think ourselves under the *Jewish* dispensa-  
 tion no longer. Theodoret.

15 By him therefore let us offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of *our* lips, giving thanks to his name.

16 But to do good and to communicate, forget not, for with such sacrifices God is well pleased.

16 And, to your christian prayers and praises, be sure to add that great duty of *charity* and *beneficence* toward each other, without partiality and distinction; a sacrifice far better and more acceptable to God than all the burnt-offerings upon the *Jewish Altar*.

17 Obey them that have the rule over you, and submit yourselves: for they watch for your souls, as they that must give account, that they may do it with joy, and not with grief: for that is unprofitable for you.\*

most fatal \* thing to *yourselves*, as well as a mortification to *them*.

18 Pray for us: for we trust we have a good † conscience in all things, willing to live honestly.

19 But I beseech you the rather to do this

15. By him therefore, as your A. D. 63. perfect *High Priest* and *Intercessor*, offer up your constant prayers and thanksgivings to God; which the Prophet calls, *The calves, or fruits of our lips*, Hof. xiv. 2.

16. And, to your christian prayers and praises, be sure to add that great duty of *charity* and *beneficence* toward each other, without partiality and distinction; a sacrifice far better and more acceptable to God than all the burnt-offerings upon the *Jewish Altar*.

17 Pay all just regard to the rules and admonitions of your present || bishops and spiritual guides. || See ver. 7. Remember how great their charge over you is. Be therefore so tractable under their discipline and admonitions, that they may have the comfort of giving a good account of you, at the great day of Judgment; and not see all their pains lost upon you; which would be a

18. & 19. Let *me* have a special share in your prayers. Beseech God for success, in my ministry, and deliverance from my adversaries. And though I make no question, but to go through my *apostleship*, with a good

\* For that would be unprofitable for you; ἀλυσιτάλεις, very flatly translated, it bears the same sense with τὰ μὴ καθήκοντα, Rom. ii. 28. As that is to be render'd *abominable things*, so this signifies a most *dangerous and fatal thing*. See *Ephef.* v. 11. the note there. And compare *Rom.* iii. 12.

† Ver. 18. *We trust we have a good Conscience*—It is a very elliptical expression. His meaning is thus to be supplied; viz. “In preaching both to *Jews* and *Gentiles*, I assure myself, I act agreeably to my *Apostolick* commission; whatever hard censures some *Zealots* may pass upon me.”

A. D. 63. this that I may be  
restored to you the  
sooner.

tend to procure my deliverance from several approaching dangers, and bring me the more speedily to you.

20 Now the God of peace, that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant,

21 Make you perfect in every good work, to do his will, working in you that which is well pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

22 And I beseech you, brethren, suffer the word of exhortation, for I have written a letter unto you in a few words.

importance of the matter, and my great affection to you, would permit.

23 Know ye that our brother Timothy is set at liberty, with whom if he come shortly, I shall see you.

24 Salute all them that have the rule over you, and all the saints. They of Italy salute you.

25 Grace be with you all. Amen.

good conscience, and an undaunted courage; yet I desire the concurrence of your prayers, which may

20. & 21. And, in the meantime, may God, the author of all peace and happiness, who raised up our Lord Jesus Christ from the dead, and thereby declared him the Saviour and governor of his Church, accepting of his blood as the ratification of the new and gracious covenant of the *gospel*, for our perfect pardon and Redemption: May he confirm and strengthen you in all true obedience, giving you all the means and advantages of saving religion, by Jesus Christ; to whom be ascribed all honour and glory for ever. Amen.

22. I request, dear brethren, you would not think the arguments I have here used, for your constant perseverance in *Christianity*, too long and tedious. I have couched them in as short a compass as the

23. Take notice that our Christian brother *Timothy* is released from his confinement: And I am in hopes, we may shortly come together, and pay a visit to your Church.

23. My hearty Christian love to all your spiritual governors. All the Christians of *Rome*, and other parts of *Italy* salute you all.

25. The divine love and favour be with your whole Church. Amen.

A P A R A-

---

A  
P A R A P H R A S E

ON THE  
GENERAL EPISTLE

OF  
ST. JAMES.

---

THE P R E F A C E.

§ 1. **T**HE *clearest* accounts from antiquity, ascribe The author. this Epistle to *James* the son of *Alpheus*, or *Cleopas*, the brother of *Jude*, and consequently cousin-german to our blessed Lord, being called the Lord's *brother*, as that word in the *Jewish* language was usually appropriated to all *near* relations. He was, moreover, stiled *James* the *Less*, to distinguish him from the other *James*, who, from his great age, was denominated *James* the *greater*, or *elder*. And, lastly from his extraordinary sanctity and devotion, he went under the character of *James* the *Just*; and was by the Apostles chosen *Bishop* of *Jerusalem*.

§ 2. The exact distinction of the *person*, helps much The Time. to determine the *date* of his *Epistle*: It being certain, from *Josephus*, That this *James* suffered martyrdom, under the High priesthood of *Ananus*, and procuratorship of *Albinus*, viz. in the year of Christ LXII. This Epistle must bear date before that Time; and is most probably placed by *Dr Mills* in, or just before, the year LX.

*The occasion.* § 3. About this Time, the predictions of our Saviour, and of St. Paul, in his second Epistle to the *Thessalonians*, concerning the temper and behaviour of the *Jewish* nation, as tokens of their approaching destruction, were going on apace towards an accomplishment. False prophets and pretended *Messiahs* were numberless; their furious persecution against the *Christians* was either actually begun, or drew very near; and, as their rage improved to its utmost heat, the Love of many *Christians* began to wax cold. In fine, they had so corrupted their own religion, became so furious against all other people, and so malicious, even to one another, that it could not but be a certain conclusion. The Judge was not far from the door. These circumstances gave occasion to this apostle, the residentiary of the *circumcision* in *Judea*, to indite this Epistle, partly to the *infidel*, and partly to the *believing Jews*. With the former, his purpose was, to correct their haughty errors, soften their ungoverned zeal, and reform their undecent usages in religion. The latter he was to comfort, under the hardships they then did, or shortly were to suffer for their Christianity; to warn them from several of the prejudices and practices of their persecutors; to which their former education, or present afflictions might render them too prone; and to spirit them up to a pure and patient profession of the *gospel*. The several turns and applications of his argument to one, or the other, of these parties, shall be observed, with as much clearness, as can be gathered from the context of each passage; several whereof, after the manner of *Eastern* writing, may, at first sight seem directed to them both, promiscuously, and without distinction.

There is one particular passage (chap. ii. 14 to the end) that seems clearly levelled against the doctrine of the Hereticks, called *Simonians*, or Followers of *Simon Magus*, who, as *Irenæus* tells us (*Lib. II. Cap. 20.*) affirmed, *Liberos eos esse agere quæ velint; secundum enim Gratiâ Salvati Homines, non secundum justas Operas*; i. e. "That they might live and act as they pleased; because men were to be saved by *grace*, and not according to their good works."

To whom? § 4. It was directed to the *Jews* and *Jewish converts* of the *dispersion*: Yet, as that to the *Hebrews* was intended




tended for the general benefit of all the *scattered* tribes,  
 \* though directed to the natives of the *Holy Land*; so, <sup>See Pref. to the Heb.</sup>  
 no doubt, *this* had an equal respect to *them*, over whom <sup>§ 1.</sup>  
 St. James immediately presided in the special character  
 of their Bishop.

§ 5. And lastly, as this, and the following Epistles <sup>Why called</sup>  
 were written, not to any one, but to *several* Christian <sup>General.</sup>  
 churches; it is, upon that account, commonly thought,  
 they are called *Catholic*, or *General* Epistles.

## CHAP. I.

*The Title and Salutation, to the Foreign Jews, and Jewish Christians. He begins with the latter; exhorting them to a cheerful and good Improvement of present Troubles and persecutions; as the highest Perfection of a Christian Life. Prayer, with steady Faith in God, through Christ, the means to attain that perfection. Advice to the Poor, and to such as are despoiled of their Riches, for the sake of Christianity. The Uncertainty of Riches, and the Benefit of well improved Trials and temptations. A warning not to impute any Sin (particularly that of Apostacy) to God, who permits Temptations to befall them; but to the wilful Indulgence of their own Worldly and Vicious Inclinations. God, the Author of all Spiritual Blessings, cannot be answerable for the Cowardice and defaults of men. An Inference from thence, against the furious Temper, and violent Disputes of some Judaizing Christians. Against the pernicious Error of the Jewish Zealots, about the Efficacy of mere Faith, or External Profession of Religion without a suitable Practice. Against Railing and Contention. Charity in Words and Actions, a Principal Branch of true Religion.*

I JAMES a servant  
 of God, and of  
 the Lord Jesus Christ,  
 to the twelve tribes  
 which

I. JAMES, bishop of Jerusalem, a. D. 60.  
 worshipper of the true God,   
 and an apostle of Jesus Christ our  
 Lord and Saviour, sendeth this e-  
 pistle  
 U 3

A. D. 60. which are scattered abroad greeting. *pistle to the Jews and Jewish Christians*, particularly to those of the dispersion in foreign countries, wishing you all blessing and happiness.

2 My brethren, count it all joy when ye shall fall into divers temptations.

3 Knowing this, that the trying of your faith worketh patience.

improving your patience, and working you up to that noble disposition of a perfect submission to the Divine Will and Providence.

4 But let patience have her perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing.

\* *σοφία*. 5 If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally and upbraideth not, and it shall be given him.

6 But let him ask in faith nothing wavering: for he that *ἐν πίστει* wavereth is like a wave of the sea, driven with the wind, and tossed.

7 For let not that man think that he shall receive anything of the Lord.

8 A double minded man is unstable in all his ways. measures of duty and success of his prayers.

2. & 3. My dear brethren, I am truly sensible of the hardships and persecutions that are to be undergone by such of you as have embraced the *christian* faith. And I earnestly exhort you, not to be discouraged at them; as being the happy means and opportunities of

4. This is the temper that renders us complete disciples of our blessed Master, and is the perfection of a *christian* life.

5. In order to attain\* which, let every persecuted christian have recourse to God, in prayer, as to a most bountiful and free benefactor, that will not fail to grant him all seasonable assistance toward a prudent and courageous behaviour under his distress.

6, 7, & 8. But these prayers must be offered up with a full persuasion of, and reliance upon, the divine power and goodness †, with a firm conviction of the fitness and lawfulness of the things he prays for—an intire submission to the heavenly Providence, and a sincere purpose of adhering to the duties of your *profession*. For a man that is divided in his thoughts and principles has really no solid principle at all, will stick close to no virtue; which will defeat all the

9. What

9 Let the brother of low degree rejoice in that he is exalted :

that has <sup>\*</sup> always lived in mean circumstances, think his poverty abundantly compensated by the excellent privileges the *gospel* religion has advanced him to, and the opportunities he is furnished with, for the advancement of his faith and virtue.

10 But the rich, in that he is made low : because as the flower of the grass he shall pass away.

11 For the sun is no sooner risen with a burning heat, but it withereth the grass ; and the flower thereof falleth, and the grace of the fashion of it perisheth ; so also shall the rich man fade away

12 Blessed is the man that endureth temptation ; for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life which the Lord hath promised to them that love him.

13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God : for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth he any man.

For as God cannot possibly commit any moral evil *himself*, so it is equally absurd and impious to imagine he should be the *cause* of sin in any of his creatures.

9. With this steady Faith and resolution, let the *poor* christian, that has <sup>\*</sup> always lived in mean cir-

10. & 11. And let such, who for the sake of their religion are fallen from a wealthy and prosperous condition, be well pleased with a change, that gives them a title to substantial and *eternal* blessings, instead of that *temporal* prosperity, which, in itself is as liable to be destroyed by a thousand accidents of human life, as a tender flower is by the heat of the sun.

12. Happy therefore is the Christian that perseveres in his integrity, though at the expence of all his worldly enjoyments ; since he is so certain of that future and complete reward, which the God of truth himself has engaged to bestow upon all his sincere and virtuous servants.

13. Let no person then, that is drawn into the commission of any known sin (especially that of *† Apostacy* from his religion, for fear of persecution) presume to attribute his miscarriage to *God*, for suffering temptations or afflictions to be-

fall him. For as God cannot possibly commit any moral evil *himself*, so it is equally absurd and impious to imagine he should be the *cause* of sin in any of his creatures.

A. D. 60. 14 But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed. *indulgence of some worldly*

15 Then when lust hath conceived he bringeth forth sin: and sin when it is finished, bringeth forth death.

16 Do not err, my beloved brethren.

17 Every good gift, and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the father of lights, with whom is no variableness; neither shadow of turning.

much as the *world* owes to him the light of the *sun* and *moon*. Nay; more excellent are his heavenly gifts to the *soul*, than is the light of the heavenly bodies to the *world*; for, while *these* have their turns and periods, varying, and removing nearer, or further off from us; *God* is always the same, and *his* blessings ever at hand to us.

18 Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of first-fruits of his creatures.

of divine care, and free mercy towards us, in bestowing on us the blessings and privileges of the *gospel*-doctrine and religion, to guide our practices, and to actuate our endeavours: making *us* of the *Jewish* nation *first* converts to it, as an earnest of his calling the rest of mankind, after us, to the same blessings: So that we, like the first *fruits* under the *law*, ought to strive to be the

14. Certainly the only *proper cause* of a man's forsaking his profession, or transgressing the precepts of it is, his wicked indulgence of some worldly and vicious principle.

15. 'Tis nothing but his deliberate approbation of, and free consent to, such irregular passions, that draws him into the commission of such actions as bring him to death and condemnation.

16. & 17 Do not therefore so grossly impose upon yourselves, as to ascribe your wilful failings to *him*, to whom we owe all that is, or can be, good in us; who has given such ample assistance, and proposed such infinite rewards, for our virtue and perseverance. To *him* alone we owe all that light and influence, that guides the *mind*; as

18. In fine, so infinitely far is God from being the author of evil, or from necessitating us to any sin, or leaving us to the wild direction of *chance* or *destiny*; that he has displayed the most wonderful instance

the *best* of our kind, and most exemplary *Christians*, as A. D. 60.  
being *first* dedicated to his service.

19 Wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath.

from that fierceness in disputing for your own opinions (a thing the *Jewish* doctors and zealots are so addicted to) and be of a tractable, meek, and peaceable disposition.

20 For the wrath of man worketh not the righteousness of God.

21 Wherefore lay apart all filthiness, and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the ingrafted word, which is able to save your souls.

22 But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves. Do not you treat the

23 For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass:

24 For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what

19. And if you desire so to approve yourselves, you must be entirely weaned from that pride and affectation of *teaching*, and imperiously *dictating* to other men;

20. For, the violence of human *zeal* is but a hindrance, instead of an advantage, to those principles and practices, that are to justify and save us.

21. Strive, therefore, to get rid of all those exorbitant passions, that, like a multitude of proud suckers from a tree, will spoil your growth in Christian virtues, which are always best received and improved by a calm and humble spirit.

22. And, whereas the *Jewish* zealots are wont to put all the stress of religion in mere *outward* profession, and *external* observances;

*Christian* religion in that manner; which would be to put the most fatal cheat upon yourselves.

23. & 24. For the *gospel*-doctrine is of the same use to the *mind* and *conduct* of men, as a glass is to the *face*. And as the glass is of no benefit to one that sees the spots of his face in it, but takes no care to wipe them off; so the *gospel* precepts can be of no manner of advantage to a *Christian*, that only

exter-

A. D. 60. what manner of man  
 { he was.

practice, and leads his

externally professes and hears  
 them, but neglects to reform his  
 life agreeable to them.

25 But whoſo look-  
 eth into the perfect  
 law of liberty, and  
 continueth *therein*, he  
 being not a forgetful  
 hearer, but a doer of  
 the work, this man  
 ſhall be bleſſed in his  
 deed.

fation of more excellent liberties, immunities, and pri-  
 vileges, than all that the zealot *Jew* can boaſt of his  
*Mofaical* inſtitution.

26 If any man a-  
 mong you ſeem to be  
 religious, and bridleth  
 not his tongue, but  
 deceiveth his own  
 heart, this man's reli-  
 gion is vain.

27 Pure religion,  
 and undefiled before  
 God and the Father,  
 is this, to viſit the fa-  
 therleſs and widows in  
 their affliction, *and* to  
 keep himſelf unſpot-  
 ted from the world.

25. He therefore is the only  
 perſon that truly edifies by the  
*Chriſtian* doctrine, who embraceth  
 and uſeth it as a rule of *action*.  
 Then, indeed, it becomes a *law* to  
 him, a law that ſets him *free* from  
 the ſlavish obſervance of *Jewiſh*  
*ceremonies*; and that man will ex-  
 perience the *gospel* to be a diſpen-

26. Certainly, the moſt ſpecious  
 and loud pretences of external re-  
 ligion are but vain and inſignifi-  
 cant things, while a man gives  
 himſelf up to uncharitable ſlan-  
 ders, revilings, and reproaches a-  
 gainſt his brethren.

27. For, the habitual practice  
 of *charity* and bounty toward the  
 afflicted, the conqueſt over all ſen-  
 ſual, worldly and partial inclinati-  
 ons, and ſuch like *moral* duties,  
 are the things in which true reli-  
 gion does chiefly and principally  
 conſiſt.

C H A P. II.

*The Argument of the latter Part of the foregoing Chapter continued; viz. That the external Profession of Religion is wholly fruitless, where Men live in the Breach of its moral and substantial Duties. This shown in the instance of Partiality, and respect of Persons, especially in public and Judicial Causes. The Jewish Christians are taxed with this Vice, so common among the Jews. The evil and dangerous Consequence of any One such known and wilful Sin. Moral Practices the best, and only Evidence of good Principles, proved from the Examples of Abraham and Rahab. All is nothing without them.*

1 MY brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ the Lord of glory, with respect of persons.

any justice is to be found, even in their courts of *judicature*. All is carried amongst them, by wealth and *interest*: but for *you*, dear brethren, that profess the more perfect and glorious religion of *Jesus Christ*, how monstrous must it be to be guilty of a partiality so directly opposite to its spirit and precepts!

2 For if there come unto your || assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment:

3 And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit

1. THE *Jews*, that now so A. D. 60. much value themselves, and despise all other people in point of religion, are become so corrupt in their morals, in their private and public dealings, that hardly

2, 3, & 4. For *you* to distinguish your respects, and be partial in your proceedings with any, but especially a *Christian* brother, in a public court, || or in your church as- συγκλητική. semblies, upon account of his higher or lower fortunes in the world, his circumstances and outward figure; to care for the rich, and slight the poor; would be to make a most

A. D. 60. Sit thou here in a good place : and say to the poor, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool :

4 Are ye not then partial in yourselves, and are become judges of \* evil thoughts?

5 Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this world, rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which he hath promised to them that love him?

best *Christians*? Did not God chuse the very *apostles* out of that number? And have not *they*, and all their poor, but humble *followers*, the surest title to eternal life and happiness?

6 But ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men oppress you, and draw you before the judgment-seats?

7 Do not they blaspheme that worthy name by the which ye are called?

of Christ, and his religion?

8 If ye fulfil the royal law, according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well.

9 But

most unreasonable distinction, where there ought to be none; and to show yourselves most unthoughtful and unjust judges.

5. Consider seriously, dear brethren, upon this matter. Does God make such partial differences, in his dealings with mankind, as *you* do with one another? How many, that are mean in their outward circumstances, but humble in their tempers, have made the

6. & 7. On the contrary, while you are thus guilty of neglecting your *poor* brethren, how forgetful are you, that the *rich* men, to whose rank and quality you are so partial, are the persons most apt to oppose your holy religion! who are they, but the *richer* sort, of both *Jews* and *Gentiles*, that most commonly blaspheme † the name

8. Had you any just regard to that noble and comprehensive duty, of *doing as you would be done by*, you would act at another rate.

9. Whereas,

---

\* Ver. 4. Judges of evil thoughts: Or διαλογισμῶν πονερῶν.—  
Judges that use wicked and unjust arguments.

† That holy name by which you are called. τὸ ἐπικληθὲν ἐφ' ὑμῶν; that is, called over you, or given to you.



9 But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors.

10 For whosoever shall keep the whole \* law, and yet offend in one *point*, he is guilty of all.

11 For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law.

that, though you don't actually attempt his *life*, yet, if you commit *adultery* against him, you break in upon the *whole* divine authority, that establisheth *all right* between man and man.

12 So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty.

of *Christianity*. A religion that while it is most strict in its *moral* obligations, debarring us from all those licentious practices the *Jewish* Zealots || think themselves privileged in; yet, as I said *chap. i. 25.* is attended with immunities and blessings far exceeding what the *Mosaical* Dispensation can pretend to. || *ελευθεριαν*

13 For he shall have judgment without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy; and mercy

9. Whereas, by such an unjust and partial proceeding, you violate A. D. 60. and stand convicted of breaking the *whole* law respecting your neighbour.

10. For, the wilful and habitual breach of any *one* such *principal* command, renders a man, in a just sense, a transgressor of that \* *whole* table of the divine law, though he

11. Because the same divine *authority* that forbids us any *one* act of violating the rights of our neighbour, forbids us *all* the rest. The same divine authority (for instance) that restrains us from invading the property of our neighbour's *bed*, restrains us from *killing* him. So

12. Deal by one another, therefore, both in words and actions, as men that expect hereafter to be judged by the pure and perfect rule

13. For certainly, the man, of what profession soever, that shows no tenderness and impartiality towards his brethren, shall find severity

---

\* *The whole Law—he is Guilty of all*: *ὅλον τὸν νόμον*, the same as *νόμον βασιλικὸν* in *verse 8. viz.* The *Royal Law* respecting our *Neighbour*.

A. D. 60. mercy rejoiceth against judgment\*. verity of justice, without mercy at God's hands. And no person can so securely and chearfully stand the great trial of *Divine* Judgment, as he that hath been kind, impartial, and merciful to other *men*, without any unreasonable distinctions.

14 What *doth it* profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him?

14. Thus, I say, the actual and careful practice of *moral* virtue, is the substance and life of true religion. Mere *faith*, and *external profession*, without this, is of no effect to any man's salvation.

15 If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food;

16 And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be you warmed, and filled: notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what *doth it* profit?

15. & 16. Thus, when an indigent brother presents himself to you, as an object of your *charity*; to feed him with good *words* and kind *wishes*, without giving him any thing to clothe his body or satisfy his hunger, is to do just nothing at all for him.

17 Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone. to *faith*, and the warmest zeal for *external* acts of his worship, is to pay him no real service, while the practice of those *duties* is wanting, that are the main purposes of all religion.

17. The case is the very same with *God*, in all other instances of religion; the most loud pretences to *faith*, and the warmest zeal for *external* acts of his worship, is to pay him no real service, while the practice of those *duties* is wanting, that are the main purposes of all religion.

18 Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: Shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works.

18. To say, you are a true member of God's *church*, because you believe his word and revelation, and are a mere *professor* of his instituted religion, is to take a thing for granted, without full proof, and to give only your *own* word for it.

Whereas,

---

\* Ver 13. *Mercy rejoiceth against Judgment*: κατακαυχεται ἐλεος κρίσεως, *Mercy triumphs over condemnation*: or *The merciful man triumphs at his Judgment, or at his trial*. *Mercy* for the *merciful man*, as *circumcision* is put for the *circumcised person*, Rom. ii. 26, 27.

Whereas, he that shows the sincerity of his *faith* and A. D 60. profession, by the good influences it has in the conduct of his *life*, concludes very rightly ; as the *cause* is demonstrated by the *effect*.

19 Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well; the devils also believe and tremble.

19. The *Jew* magnifies himself above the *Gentile*, for his knowledge and belief of the *One True God*. If *that* be all, the very *devils* themselves are upon the level with him; for they believe the same, and tremble at the apprehensions of his Divine Power and Justice. And, if your faith be no better than theirs, you have the same reason to tremble as they have.

20 But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead ?

21 Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar.

to offer up his Son, or his confident reliance upon God's *promise*, and his being in *covenant* with him, but his *actual* entrance upon the *performance* of what God had commanded him.

22 Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect ?

23 And the scripture was fulfilled, which faith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness : and he was called the friend of God.

24 Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only.


25 Like-

20 & 21. But to convince *you* and *them* of the utter falsity of this principle ; let the *Jew* tell me what it was that justified *Abraham*, the father of his nation. and of all faithful people? You cannot but know, by the express words of the history, it was not his mere *belief* and persuasion, that God had order'd him

22 & 23. Thus that great *Patriarch* demonstrated the excellence and sincerity of his inward *principle*, by the *practice* of the noblest virtue. 'Twas this procured him that great Character, *Abraham believed God, and it was imputed to him for righteousness, and he was called the friend of God.* Gen. xv. 6.

24. And, if this were *Abraham's* case, 'tis in vain for any *Jew* or *Christian* to expect to be saved, upon a different foot from that of the *Father of the Faithful*.

25. Again,

A. D 60. 25 Likewise also,  was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way?

26 For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also. *outward* profession can no more make a true *Israelite* (much less a true *Christian*) than a *body* without a *soul* can make up a *man*.

25. Again, what was it that rendered the harlot *Rahab* so acceptable to God, as to save her life? Not her mere *conviction* that the God of the *Jews* was the *True God* || ; but her actual *reception* of the spies, as his messengers; as the genuine effect of such a persuasion.

26. From which instance, as a confirmation of the reason of the thing itself; 'tis exceeding plain, that bare *external* privileges, and

can no more make a true *Israelite* (much less a true *Christian*) than a *body* without a *soul* can make up a *man*.

### CHAP. III.

*The Jewish Christians are again particularly dissuaded from the Pride and Ambition of being called Doctors, and Teachers; and from that Spirit of Contemning, Reviling, Cursing, and Calumniating, to which the Jewish Zealots were so much addicted. The great Advantage of a gentle and peaceful Temper, and the fatal Effects of a Censorious and Unbriiled Tongue.*

|| Chap. i. 19. See I Tim. i. 7. Rom. ii. 19, 20. MY brethren, be not many masters, knowing that we shall receive the greater condemnation.

setting up for *teachers*; of usurping an authority over the consciences of others, and be guilty of the calumny and censoriousness that is consequent to such pride and affectation. Against *this* notorious *vice* I must now more particularly warn you. Consider then, the more knowledge and understanding you pretend to, the more heinous

I. I Have already || observed to you, that you can never answer the character of true *Christians*, while you harbour that ambition of the *Jewish* zealots, of imperiously

nous

nous are the faults you commit, and that your punishment for them must be proportionable. A D. 60.

2 For in many thinks we offend all. If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle the whole body.

2. The very best of us have their slips and failings. But the liberties of the *tongue*, are what most men are too apt to transgress in, above all measure. And were those *Zea-*  
*lots* but free of the vices of that very member, wherewith they pretend to teach others, they had much better pretence to religious perfection than now they have. The government of the *tongue* has a general good influence upon the conduct of human life.

3 Behold, we put bits in the horses mouths, that they may obey us; and we turn about their whole body.

4 Behold also the ships, which though they be so great, and are driven of fierce winds, yet are they turned about with a very small helm, whithersoever the governor listeth.

3, 4, & 5. And, as horses are managed by the bit, and ships steered by the rudder, that is, but a small piece in comparison of the bulk of the vessel; so the whole conversation of a man is, in a manner, guided and well-ordered by the temperate use of that little member, which, whenever it flies out into extravagant, uncharitable and abusive expressions, becomes like a spark amongst combustible matter; blows up and consumes all before it.

5 Even so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things. Behold how great a matter a little fire kindleth.

6 And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue amongst our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature: and

6. Well may such a *tongue* be compared to fire, for its desperate and destructive quality; it puts the whole world into confusion and disorder, and destroys like a conflagration, begun from hell itself.

7 For every kind of beasts, and of birds, and of serpents, and things in the sea, is tamed and hath been tamed of mankind:

7. & 8. When it once obtains and has got the mastery over a man's conduct, it is unruly beyond the most savage creature we know of: Its fierceness exceeds that of the

VOL. II. 8 But

X

*lion;*

A. D. 60. 8 But the tongue  
 can no man tame, it  
 is an unruly evil : full  
 of deadly poison.

9 Therewith bleſs  
 we God, even the Fa-  
 ther : and therewith  
 curſe we men, which  
 are made after the ſi-  
 militude of God.

10 Out of the ſame  
 mouth proceedeth bleſ-  
 ſing and curſing. My  
 brethren, theſe things  
 ought not ſo to be.

11 Doth a fountain  
 ſend forth at the ſame  
 place ſweet *water* and  
 bitter ?

12 Can the fig-tree,  
 my brethren, bear  
 olive-berries ? either  
 a vine, figs ? ſo can  
 no fountain both yield  
 ſalt water and freſh.

13 Who is a wiſe  
 man and endowed with  
 knowledge amongſt  
 you ? let him ſhew out  
 of a good converſa-  
 tion his works with  
 meekneſs of wiſdom.

14 But if ye have  
 bitter envying and  
 ſtrife in your hearts,  
 glory not, and lie not  
 againſt the truth.

15 This wiſdom  
 deſcendeth not from  
 above, but is earthly,  
 ſenſual, devilish.

*lion* and *tyger* ; and its venom be-  
 yond the worſt of *ſerpents*.

9. & 10. It runs men into prac-  
 tices the moſt abſurd as well as  
 impious ; cauſing them to uſe that  
*very* member, that was given us  
 to celebrate the praifes of *God*, to  
 throw out curſes and imprecations  
 againſt their *brethren* that were  
 created like themſelves, in the *i-*  
*mage* of God. Bleſſing and curſ-  
 ing out of the ſame mouth ! How  
 irrational and monſtrous a thing  
 to be guilty of !

11. & 12. A thing as utterly  
 inconſiſtent with true religion, as  
 it is to ſuppoſe the ſame water,  
 from the ſame part of a ſpring,  
 ſhould be ſalt and freſh at the ſame  
 time ; that a fig-tree ſhould bear  
 olives, or a vine produce figs, *i. e.*  
 a perfect contradiction in the na-  
 ture of things.

13. Whatever *chriſtian* convert,  
 or *ſeawiſh* zealot, therefore, would  
 be indeed a maſter of religious  
 wiſdom, let him ſhow his wiſdom,  
 firſt in the ſuppreſſion of this  
 wretched habit ; and in reducing  
 himſelf to a meek and charitable  
 diſpoſition toward his brethren.

14. & 15. For as long as ever  
 this haughty and contentious ſpi-  
 rit in *religious* diſputes, vents itſelf  
 through the *tongue*, his boaiſting is  
 but vanity, and his pretences hy-  
 pocriſy. The wiſdom he pre-  
 tends to, is the effect of nothing  
 but ſenſual and worldly principles,  
 and a perfect imitation of the *De-*  
*vil* and wicked ſpirits.

16 For where envying and strife is, there is confusion and every evil work.

17 But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be intreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy.

18 And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace of them that make peace.

16. For nothing but wickedness A. D. 60. and destruction can be the result of proud, censorious, and contentious disposition.

17. Directly contrary to this, the wisdom and temper of *true religion* exerts itself in a freedom from sensual and worldly inclinations, in rendering a man mild and courteous, and persuadable by reason, kind and charitable to the indigent, generous, just and impartial to *all* mankind, and sincere in all religious pretences.

18. And whoever is of this peaceable and good temper, and endeavours to persuade others to it, will not fail to reap the happy fruits and blessed effects of it.

#### C H A P. IV.

*The Apostle illustrates the woeful effects of a turbulent and malicious temper, from the then present state and condition of the Jewish people. A sad account of them. He endeavours to work their cure, by persuading them to repentance and true religion. Then persuades the Christian converts from the notorious vice of slander and calumny; and from an immoderate and confident pursuit of worldly projects, without any pious regard to, or reliance upon divine Providence.*

FROM whence come wars, and fightings among you? come they not hence, even

1. **W**HAT I have \* hitherto observed, of the wretched effects of a turbulent and contentious spirit, is but too woefully demonstrable,

A. D. 63. even of your lusts, that *monstrable*, from the present state and condition of the *Jewish* people. Let any *Jew* tell me the real cause of all those calamities and desolations, those foreign, civil, and domestic broils, that are now the general plague of *that nation*. What is it, but the sensual and ambitious temper I have been describing !

2 Ye lust, and have not : ye kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain : ye fight and war, yet ye have not, because ye ask not.

2. Your hearts are entirely bent upon temporal pleasure, and temporal dominion ; you are impatient under the *government* Providence has subjected your nation to. This put you upon *seditious* practices, that can never gain your ends ; and your intestine discords make your case still worse. Nor can God be supposed to prosper a people, so estranged from all true religion and devotion toward him.

3 Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask amiss, that ye may consume it upon your lusts.

3. It is true, you keep up the external profession, and the *form* of worship and prayer. But this can avail you little, while the stress of your desires is fixed on *worldly* pleasures, and the view of all your very *prayers* is the gratification of lustful and ambitious principles.

4 Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God ? who-soever therefore will be a friend of the world, is the enemy of God.

4. O faithless and perverse *nation* ! How can you be so ignorant, as to imagine, the love of *God* and true religion can ever be consistent with this immoderate thirst after *temporal* riches and grandeur ? You must give up one, or the other.

5 \* Do ye think that the scripture saith in vain, The spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth to envy ?

6 But he giveth more grace ; wherefore he saith, God resisteth

5. & 6. How contrary have the scriptures of the *Old Testament* described the temper of God's true servants, to that envious and contentious spirit that now reigns in the generality of your nation ? Do you perceive any such disposition and



fifteth the proud, but and practice in us *Christians*? \*So A. D. 60.  
 ‡ giveth grace unto far from it, that you behold no-  
 the humble. thing but peaceableness and humi-

lity, the genuine fruit of *God's Spirit*, and to which his special favour and blessing is annexed; according to those words of *Solomon* (*Prov. iii. 34*) *Surely he scorneth the scornors, but he giveth grace ‡ (or favour) to the lowly.*

7 Submit yourselves therefore to God: resist the devil, and he will flee from thee.

8 Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you: cleanse your hands, ye sinners, and purify your hearts, ye double minded.

9 Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let

7, 8, 9, & 10. And if you would be cured of those wretched habits, that are the causes of your present calamities, and partake of the same blessings with *us*, you must serve God in the same true and sincere manner as *we* do; sue to him for pardon and salvation, by reforming all your towering and proud conceits, by hearty repentance for the violences and injustice you have committed; and endeavouring

X 3

\* Ver. 5. *Do you think the Scripture saith*—the Spirit in *us*—These words are, by some interpreters, thought to refer to *Numb. xi. 29. Enviest thou for my sake? i. e.* should the gifts of the Spirit, conferred upon *one*, move *another* to envy? But, as those words are very different from St. James's, who was not here speaking of *gifts* and spiritual pre-eminence at all; I judge the Paraphrase to be the most agreeable and coherent sense. For I think it will clear this passage of all difficulties, if we divide the *fifth verse* into two *interrogations*: viz. *Do ye think that the Scripture speaks in vain? i. e.* the Scripture quoted in the *sixth verse*; or any of those *Scriptures* that speak against *pride* and *envy*. Then, *the Spirit that is in us lusteth [or lusteth it] to envy? in us i. e.* in *us apostles* or *Christians*. No; far from it; it puts us into a far better way of obtaining God's *grace* or *favour*; viz. by *peaceableness* and *humility*. *Wherefore* [not *he*, but] *it*, the Scripture saith, *God resisteth the proud, &c.*

‡ Ver. 6. *Giveth grace*, i. e. favour or blessing. *χάρις* answers to *יח* in the Hebrew: Its primary sense is *favour*; which in the *New Testament* is branched out into several acceptations, including either the  *blessings of the gospel in general*, or any *principal branches* of them. But is rarely (that I can find) used to signify any *inward motions*, or *secret operations of the Holy Spirit on the mind*, unless when it expresseth the *extraordinary gifts*, and *miraculous endowments* on the *apostles* and *first Christians*.

A. D. 60. let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your joy to heaviness.

10 Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you up.

repentance, God will be reconciled to you, avert the judgments that hang over you, and make you again, his beloved *church* and *people*.

11 Speak not evil one of another (brethren) he that speaketh evil of his brother, and judgeth his brother, speaketh evil of the law, and judgeth the law: but if thou judge the law, thou art not a doer of the law, but a judge.

of that *law*, while he

12 There is one law-giver, who is able to save, and to destroy: who art thou that judgest another?

\* Rom. xiv.  
4—10.

13 Go to now, ye that say, To day or to morrow, we will go into such a city, and continue there a year, and buy and sell, and get gain:

you *Christian* converts, I find, are too much tainted with the *Jewish* spirit of worldly-mindedness. You cut out business, and conclude upon the success, as if *time* and *events* were at *your* disposal.

14 Whereas ye know not what *shall* be on the morrow: for what

deavouring to rectify those corrupt inclinations, that have hitherto divided you between God and the world: By thus striving against the temptations of the devil, you shall be enabled to overcome them; and upon condition of so thorough a humiliation and

11. As to *you*, dear brethren, that are already converted to *Christianity*, be sure to avoid that pernicious custom of *slander* and *raucousness*. Remember, that whoever hastily and unjustly condemns another man, reflects upon *religion* itself, sets up for a judge, and makes himself wiser than the divine *law*. And such a one must not pretend to be a true disciple of that *law*, while he sets himself *above* it.

12. Consider, that God alone, \* who gives us his laws, has the right to judge and condemn us for the breach of them: And how dare any man take *his* work out of his hands!

13. Another thing, I would correct in you all is, that *confidence*, and unthoughtful *assurance*, with which you are apt to pursue your worldly projects; without a due sense of, and pious dependance upon divine *Providence*. Some of

14. & 15. You forget what changes and disappointments a single day may produce; and that life itself

what is your life? It is even a vapour, that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away. self is as fleeting as a vapour. A. D. 60. consideration, that ought to fill us with the most humble dependance upon the divine Will; in all events and expectations.

15 For that ye ought to say, If the Lord will, we shall live, and do this, or that.

16 But now ye rejoice in your boastings: all such rejoicing is evil. 16. And, therefore, such eager designs, and confident proposals, in your temporal affairs; look as if you thought yourselves independent of divine blessing and protection.

17 Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doth it not, to him it is sin. 17. Now *this* or any other crime, must be greater in a *Christian*, than in any other man; because *he*, by the clear revelation of the *gospel*, has (or ought to have) better notions of his duty, and a stronger sense of his religious obligations.

## CHAP. V.

*He turns himself to the Jews, reproaching them with the just and miserable Effects of their Avarice, Cruelty, Lust and Injustice. Then returns to the Jewish Christians, exhorting them to Patience and good Temper, under their Persecutions from the Jews, in hopes of a speedy Deliverance, by a just Judgment upon that Nation. Warns them from the Sin of rash Swearing, so common among the Jews. Recommends Prayer to the Afflicted, and divine Praises to such as are in easy and chearful Circumstances. Adviseth Anointing, and the devout Prayer of inspired Ministers, to be used, for the Recovery of such as are struck with Sickness, as a Punishment for some notorious Sins. Such are enjoined to make special Confession of the Sins they take to have been the Cause of their Distemper. The great Effect of the Prayers of Holy and inspired Ministers, for the Recovery of such People. The happy Advantage of bringing a Sinner from Ignorance and vicious Courses, to true Repentance.*

A. D. 60. 1 **G**O to now ye rich men, weep and howl for your miseries that shall come upon you.

\* Cap. iv. 13, 17.

2 Your riches are corrupted, and your garments moth-eaten.

3 Your gold and silver is cankered, and the rust of them shall be a witness against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire: ye have heaped treasure together for the last days.

4 Behold, the hire of the labourers, which have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, crieth, and the cries of them which have reaped, are entered into the ears of the Lord of Sabaoth.

5 Ye have lived in pleasure on the earth and been wanton: ye have nourished your hearts as in a day of slaughter.

6 Ye have condemned and killed the just, and he doth not resist you.†

1, 2, & 3. **T**IS not without good reason that I warn \* you all against a too eager and confident pursuit after worldly riches. For let the worldlings of the Jewish nation consider now, and behold, to what a lamentable end those principles are likely in a short time to reduce them; when their riches shall perish, their grandeur be eclipsed, and themselves be destroyed, by a judgment most dreadful and exemplary.

4. *You* that to enrich yourselves, have defrauded and oppressed others, even robbing the hireling of his wages, will shortly feel the effects of such injustice, in the resentments of a just and all-powerful God.

5. *You* that have abused the plentiful provisions of Providence, to riot and excess, will find you have been but fattening yourselves up, like sacrifices, for the day of slaughter.\*

6. *You* that have crucified your own innocent Messiah and Saviour; and still, with unrelenting hearts, are persecuting his disciples, from the

\* Ver. 5.—*As in a day of slaughter.* Note, This phrase may, perhaps, more properly signify, *As men do in a time of feasting upon slain sacrifices.*

† Ver. 6. *And he doth not resist you,* or else interrogatively, *ἔτι ἀντιτάσσεται ὑμῖν*; *Doth he not [in return] now set himself against you?* A much more consistent and clearer sense; agreeable to chap. iv. 6. and 1 Pet. v. 5. See also Dr Bentley's *Remarks upon Free Thinking*: where there is given, by that admirable critic, a most ingenious conjecture, for a yet clearer sense of this passage.

the same wicked principles, by which your Fore-fathers <sup>A. D. 60.</sup> slew the ancient *prophets*; will soon experience the direful consequences of such incurable malice and ingratitude. }

7 Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord: behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, until he receive the early and latter rain.

8 Be ye also patient; stablish your hearts, for the coming of the Lord draweth nigh.

9 Grudge not one against another, brethren, lest ye be condemned: behold\* the judge standeth before the door.

and you have no need to prevent him, in what he will so soon and certainly perform for you.

10 Take, my brethren, the prophets, who have spoken in the name of the Lord, for an example of suffering, affliction, and of patience.

11 Behold, we count them happy which endure. Ye have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord: that the Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy.

7. & 8. Wherefore, my dear brethren, that are *converted* to this persecuted *religion*, bear all your present sufferings with courage and patience. Imitate the industrious husbandman, that patiently waits the seasons of the year, to produce him the fruits of his cost and labour. With infinitely better assurance, may you depend upon *Christ* for a\* speedy deliverance from these your persecutors, and a glorious reward for your perseverance.

9. Discover no fretful impatience, no thirst of revenge against your enemies, or one another. For that would be to incur the same punishment due to *them*. God himself will very\* shortly be your just Avenger,

10. & 11. Let the courageous examples of God's true *prophets* in all ages, spirit and support you. Remember *Job* that most afflicted of all men; how deeply he suffered, and how amply he was recompenced. And from hence assure yourselves, God can never fail, in due time, to rescue and reward *every* faithful servant.

---

\* *The coming of the Lord draweth nigh. The Judge standeth before the door; viz. The destruction of Jerusalem, which was but a few years after this Epistle was written.*

A. D. 60.

12 But above all things, my brethren, swear not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath: but let your yea, be yea, and your nay, nay, † lest you fall into condemnation.

evil in such kind of \*oaths. For no oath can be made by any creature \*, but must have an *ultimate* respect to the Creator, whose creature it is. Be therefore careful, always to speak truth, and use no other means to gain belief, than a modest *affirmation* or plain *denial*. For every degree beyond this, bespeaks some † false design, and is sinful † and condemnable.

13 Is any among you afflicted, let him pray: Is any merry? let him sing psalms:

† ἐνθυμει.

cise of them that are in ease † and prosperity.

14 Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church, and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord:

15 And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed

12. And let me particularly warn you, that no examples, no provocations whatever draw you into the vice of common swearing, and invoking the name of *God* upon light and needless occasions. Swear not so much as by any *creature* of *God*, in common conversation, as the *Jews* accustom themselves to do, and vainly pretend there is no

evil in such kind of \*oaths. For no oath can be made by any creature \*, but must have an *ultimate* respect to the Creator, whose creature it is. Be therefore careful, always to speak truth, and use no other means to gain belief, than a modest *affirmation* or plain *denial*. For every degree beyond this, bespeaks some † false design, and is sinful † and condemnable.

13. Improve every condition of life to a religious advantage. Let *prayer* be the refuge of the || afflicted; and devout *praises*, the exercise of them that are in ease † and prosperity.

14. & 15. When any Christian is visited with sickness, especially any disease inflicted on him for some *notorious sin*; let no *charms* and conjurations be used over him, as the *Jews* are † now a-days wont to do, when they anoint their sick with oil: But let the Christian *ministers* be sent for to intercede with *God*, by fervent prayer. They may indeed, use the *anointing* as a *natural* remedy, but not in a *superstitious*

\* Nor by any other oath, μήτε ἄλλόν τινα ὅρκον. Nor by any such kind of oath. So in Mark iv. 41. Luke viii. 25. τίς ἄρα ὁ υἱος ἑστίς, What manner of person is this. See Matth. v. 34, 35.

† Lest ye fall into condemnation; ἐς ὄψο κρίσιν, as some Copies read it.

† See Lightfoot Harm. N. T. Burnet Artic. p. 289

mitted sins, they shall be forgiven him, *stitions way.* Let them lay all the *stresses* in the devout *prayers* of *inspired* ministers, put up in *Christ's* name, for a blessing upon that means. And those prayers shall become effectual for the recovery of a true penitent, and the forgiveness of those sins that were the cause of his distemper\*.

16 Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed: the effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

16. In all such extraordinary sicknesses as these, let the sick person freely acknowledge and confess to his minister the particular sins he hath reason to conclude brought the distemper as a special punishment upon him. And then let the minister appoint and pray for him, as

before prescribed, *ver.* 14. for God will have great respect to these prayers of *† ministers*, which now, in the *first* times of the *gospel*, are directed and assisted by the inspirations *||* of the *Holy Ghost*.

17 Elias was a man subject to like passions as we are, and he prayed earnestly that it might not rain: and it rained not on the earth by the space of three years and six months.

18 And he prayed again, and the heavens gave rain, and the earth brought forth her fruit.

motion and encouragement of his true Religion.

19 Brethren, if any of you do err from the

17. & 18. And, as the prayer of *Elijah* (who was but a mortal man, any more than Christian ministers

are now) availed to stop the rains upon the land of *Israel*, for three years and six months together, in the days of *Ahab*; and then to bring them again: So shall these prayers of men inspired by the *Holy Spirit*, now under the *gospel*, be as available for the cure of these distempers, or any such miraculous event, as God shall think convenient, for the promotion and encouragement of his true Religion.

19. & 20. And, to conclude, let all *† Christians* whatever (especially ministers,

\* *The Sick*—The same sickness, and the same kind of sins, as in *Matth.* ix. 2, 6, 7.—x. 8. *Mark* vi. 13. 1 *Cor.* xi. 32. See the Paraphrase fully vindicated, in the excellent *Dr Clagget*, in his Discourse of *Extreme Unction*. Part I. Printed in 1687.

A. D. 60. the truth, and one  
 { convert him,

20 Let him know,  
 that he which con-  
 verteth the sinner from  
 the error of his way,  
 shall save a soul from  
 death, and shall \*hide  
 a multitude of sins.

an act of infinitely greater value than the restoring a  
 sinner to his *bodily* health; and as much preferable, as  
*eternal* is to *temporal* good, and, as the *soul* is to the  
*body* †.

*ministers*, whose \* special office it  
 is) remember, that for them to be  
 instrumental in thus reducing a sin-  
 ner to the sense of his miscarriages,  
 and to true repentance for them, is  
 the noblest office they can perform.  
 Let them value themselves as in-  
 struments of saving a *soul* from de-  
 struction, and covering all its sins;

---

\* ἀδελφοὶ—τίς—See Dr. Clagget Sup. 40, 41.

† *Shall hide a multitude of sins.* Both Dr. Hammond and  
 Dr. Whitby make this refer to the sins of the person who  
*does*, not who *receives* the charitable office of conversion.  
 But as I have chosen to follow the sense of Dr. Clag-  
 get, as much more natural; I refer the reader to his  
 own choice, when he has seen how judiciously he has clear-  
 ed the sense of these verses. Extreme Unction. p. 40, 41.



---

A  
P A R A P H R A S E  
ON THE  
FIRST EPISTLE GENERAL  
OF  
S T. P E T E R.

---

P R E F A C E.

§. 1. **C**ONCERNING the Author of these two epistles there can be no doubt, all ages having ascribed them to the Apostle St Peter. Author.

§. 2. In the year of Christ 67 or 68, in the latter end of Nero's reign, St. Peter and St. Paul are agreed on to have suffered martyrdom at *Rome*. They having, therefore, both of them declared their deaths to be near at hand, St. Paul in 2 Tim. iv. 6. and St Peter here, 2 Epistle i. 14. makes it most natural to conclude, the *date* of these two *epistles*, with that of 2 Tim. to have been in the year 66 or 67, as judiciously stated by Dr. Pearson, Dr. Mills, and Dr. Whitby; to the eternal confutation of the Romanists, who, in favour of their darling notion of St Peter's being at Rome, and for 25 years bishop there, would place it in the year 44, in direct contradiction to the history of the Acts, and the most evident passages in the epistles themselves. Time.

§. 3. They are dated from *Rome*, which, for its notorious degree of *Idolatry*, vice, and superstition, is figuratively stiled *Babylon* here, and in Rev. xvii. and xviii. (see note on Cap. v. ver. 13.)

§. 4. The

Occasion.

§. 4. The design of the Apostle, with relation to the Christians of these provinces, is evidently the same with that of St. Paul to the Hebrews, and of St. James to their whole *dispersion*, viz. the Jews being now, from *Judea* to the utmost bounds of their dispersion, arrived to the utmost degree of impiety, lust, rage, and distraction; their aversion to the Roman government prompting them to *sedition*; and their unbounded zeal for the *Ceremonial Law* exciting them to persecute all *Christians*, without any relentings of mercy or humanity, and to hearken to the pretences of every *false prophet*; gave occasion to St. Peter's advices here directed, chiefly to the Jewish converts, but not excluding such Gentile Christians as had been either formerly proselyted to the Jewish religion, or were newly converted from \* heathenism to christianity. To support them under their heavy persecutions; to persuade the Jewish converts particularly to have no hand in the rebellion against Cæsar, or his officers; and to spirit them *all* to perseverance in the pure and peaceable profession of their *christianity*, against the false doctrines, and impure practices of the Jewish zealots, or of such *hereticks* as were then spawned from those people, as was Nicholas of Antioch (Acts vi. 5.) whose lewd *sect* is taken notice of by St. John, Revel. ii. 15. and is generally thought to be referred to, in some passages of these Epistles.

\* See cap i.  
18.—ii. 10.  
—iv. 3. and  
2 Pet. i. 1.

§. 5. I shall only add, That the destruction of *Jerusalem* drawing now very near, St. Peter represents it in the same expressions, taken in the same latitude with those of the ancient Prophets, our Saviour, and St Paul, upon the same prudential reasons: Those phrases, *The day of the Lord. the coming, or Revelation of Jesus Christ*, referring both to the *particular* judgment on the *Jewish* nation, and to that of the *world* in *general*. For which I refer the reader to the Preface to the Thessalonians: And for what is here urged in the *relative* duties, I refer him to the Preface to the Ephesians, §. 4. Let the learned reader also consult the great and learned Sir Isaac Newton's Observations on the Apoc. Cap. 1. where he will see still a clearer light into the *time, date, and design*, of this and other *epistles*.

C H A P. I.

*The direction and salutation. The Apostle blesteth God for the great mercies and privileges of the Gospel-religion. Comforts both Jewish and Gentile Christians under their present persecutions, from the sense of those happy blessings, and the truth and certainty of them, as foretold by the ancient Prophets, and now exactly fulfilled. Exhorts them to the pure and steady practice of their religion, from the great consideration of their redemption by the blood of Jesus Christ.*

1 **P**ETER an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the strangers scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia, those parts.


2 Elect according to the foreknowledge, of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit unto obedience, and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you, and peace be multiplied.

vine favour and happiness.

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy, hath begotten us again unto a lively hope, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead,

4 To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you.

1. **P**ETER an apostle of Jesus Christ, sendeth this epistle to the converted Jews of the ancient dispersion, in Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, the Provinces of the Lesser Asia, and Bithynia. Not forgetting the Gentile \* Christians of

A. D. 66.   
See Cap. i. 18. ii. 10. iv. 3, 4, 5. and 2 Pet. i.

2. To all you that have embraced the gracious Covenant of the *gospel*; a Covenant that is ratified † and confirmed by the blood of *Christ*, and entitles you to the gifts and graces of the *Holy Spirit*; privileges that God originally designed and by his prophets formerly promised to the *christian church*. Wishing you the abundance of di-

† *Πατριάρχης*  
See Heb. xi. 24. Exod. xxiv. 8.

3. & 4. Expressing my humblest thanks to God, the Father, of our Lord Jesus Christ, for the inexpressible mercy of giving us Christians so sure a prospect of the never-fading and eternal happiness of heaven, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ, our Lord and head.

5. And

A. D. 66. 5 Who are kept by  
 { the power of God  
 through faith unto  
 salvation, ready to be  
 revealed in the last  
 time.

|| ἐν καιρῷ  
 ἡχίται

by we shall not fail of compleat glory and haapiness, at the final day of judgment.

6 Wherein ye greatly rejoyce, though now for a season (if need be) ye are in heaviness through manifold temptations.

7 That the trial of your faith being much more precious than of gold that perisheth though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise, and honour, and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ :

8 Whom having not seen, ye love ; in whom, though now ye see *him* not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable, and full of glory.

9 Receiving the end of your faith, *even* the salvation of *your* souls.

10 Of which salvation the prophets have enquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace *that should come* unto you :

5. And for preserving and supporting us, by his Almighty Power, under all our afflictions and temptations, to persevere in the faith of this his last || and great dispensation of the *gospel*, where-

6. & 7. This is what *you*, as good *Christians*, cannot but make the subject of your utmost joy and satisfaction. Looking on the worst of present evils as only so many happy opportunities of exercising your faith, improving your virtue, and brightning that future crown you are then to receive ; and consequently to be of more real advantage to you than all the riches and fading glories this world can afford.

8. & 9. Thus upon reasonable and sufficient evidence, you embrace a *Messiah* you never *personally* knew ; and believe the doctrine and promises of a *Saviour* you never *actually* saw. This fills you with the inexpressible and glorious hopes of that eternal salvation which is the sure reward of such as are possessed with a faith so rational and well grounded.

10. & 11. This is that gracious dispensation of religion for the future happiness of mankind, so exactly described and punctually foretold by the ancient *prophets*, men inspired by the Spirit  
 \* of

11 Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit \* of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified before-hand

\* of this very *Christ*, to foretel both the *time* and glorious *fruits* of his sufferings in relation to himself, and all his true disciples.

the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow.

12 Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you, with the Holy Ghost sent down from Heaven; which things the angels desire to look into.

12. For, as to the *time*, they knew and expressly declared it was not to be transacted in *their* days, but spoke of it as *future*, representing it just as it has now been actually revealed by *Christ* himself, and declared to you and all Christians, by us his *apostles*, endowed with the same *holy spirit* for that purpose. And this dispensation of the *gospel* is so abundant in divine wisdom, justice and mercy toward mankind, that not only

*prophets* foretold it with pleasure, but the very *angels* themselves cannot but contemplate upon it, with delight and astonishment.

13 Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end, for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ;

13. Let this consideration then arm you with vigilance, courage and constancy in a profession attended with such blessings as these of the *Christian* \* religion are, \* *ἐν ἀποκα-* which you are so certain to enjoy *ἀντί-* at the final appearance of \* Christ *Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ* to judgment.

14 As obedient children, not fashioning yourselves according to the former lusts in your ignorance:

14. & 15. Show yourselves true disciples of *Christ*, by reforming the irregularities of your former notions and practices, and imitating the divine author of your religion in holiness and purity of life.

15 But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all

manner of conversation;

Y

16. For

\* Ver. 11. *The Spirit of Christ which was in them.* The meaning is, either the same Spirit of God, which inspired the *prophets* formerly, and dwelt in *Christ* more fully afterward: Or else, the Spirit by whose inspirations the *prophets* foretold the time and circumstances of *Christ's* sufferings, and is therefore called the *Spirit of Christ*. The former seems to be the more natural sense.

A. D. 66. 16 Because it is written, Be ye holy, for I am holy. 16. For those expressions (*Lev. ii. 44.—xix. 2.—xx. 7, 26.*) wherein the *Jewish* people are exhorted *to be holy as God is holy*, are much more engaging upon us of the *Christian* church.

17 And if you call on the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every man's work, pass the time of your sojourning here in fear:

17. And this does most specially concern such of you as are newly converted from the *heathen* to the *Christian* religion, from the worship of *idols* to that of the *one true God*. Now, that you are received into the true *church* of God, with the same goodness and mercy as the *Jews* themselves are, and shall be judged and rewarded equally with *them*; *you* are obliged to particular care and watchfulness over your future conduct.

18 Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers:

18. & 19. You ought to consider yourselves as captives redeemed from a state of ignorance and *idolatry*, wherein you were originally educated. And that the purchase was not procured by the most valuable thing *this* world could afford, but cost the blood even of *Christ* himself *the Son of God*; a person of most exalted dignity and perfect innocence.

20 Who verily was fore-ordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you;

20. & 21. Even that *Messiah*, originally designed by God for the redemption of all mankind; but, tho' promised from the first, and all along described by the *Jewish prophets*, to that people; yet was not *actually* sent into the world for that purpose, till this last and great dispensation of the *gospel*; wherein his religion was intended to be proposed equally to *you*\* and

21 Who by him do believe in God that raised him up from the dead, and gave him glory, that your

\* δι' υμῶν.

*them*, by us his *apostles*, and demonstrated to us all, by his resurrection from the dead, as a sure pledge of *our* future happiness, upon our sincere obedience. So that, by being *Christians*, you do not forsake *God* (as the obstinate

faith and hope might be \* in God.

12 Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit, unto unfeigned love of the brethren; *see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently* :

23 Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the Word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever.

could be, by joining himself to their external and *cere- monial* worship. You are regenerated and made the children of God, by the belief of those *gospel* doctrines, the habitual practice whereof will work in you those excellent graces and divine virtues, that will for ever adorn and make you happy.||

24 For all flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man, as the flower of grass. The grass withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away :

25 But the word of the Lord endureth for ever. And this is the word which by the gospel is preached unto you.

what *Isaiah* there described it, *The word of the Lord that endureth for ever*, Isa. xl. 6, 7, 8.

stinate *Jews* vainly pretend) but <sup>A. D. 66.</sup> most effectually \* believe in him.

22. And since you have engaged to reform your lives by obedience to this pure and *spiritual* religion, one of the chief duties whereof, is an universal love and charity to *all* your Christian *brethren*; be sure to practise that *principal* virtue with the utmost ardour and sincerity.

23. Remember, that by embracing this profession, you become the *church* and people of God, in a sense much more excellent than the *Jews* were by their natural descent from *Abraham* and the *patriarchs*; or than any *proselyte*

24. & 25. Those privileges of natural *descent* the *Jews* so much boast of, the succession in rich and noble families, by any civil relation or institution, are mere *external* and fading blessings: As *Isaiah* formerly represented them. But the blessing of being taken into *God's church*, by embracing the revelation of Jesus Christ, is of the utmost and everlasting consequence to us. And thus the gospel we preach to you is truly

|| See *Jen.* i  
12, 13. and  
here v. 24.

Y 2

C H A P

\* Ver. 21. *That your faith and hope might be in God; ὡς τὴν πίστιν ὑμῶν—ἐν τῷ θεῷ.* So that your faith—is in God.

## CHAP. II.

*The loving and charitable temper spoken of Chap. i. 22. further and particularly recommended, from the great Example of Christ, and the Blessings of his Religion. The believing Gentiles are received into its Privileges, while the Infidel Jews are rejected; according to the Scripture Prophecies. The Jewish Christians exhorted to pay all due Obedience to the Emperor and his Officers; as obliged thereto by their Christianity, and as the only Means to avoid the scandalous Character of being Seditious, as the Gentiles were apt to represent the Christians, in common with the rest of the Jewish Nation. Christian Servants or Slaves obliged to serve and respect even their Heathen Masters, though severe toward them for their Religion's Sake: Encouraged thereto by the Example of Christ's Meekness and Patience under his sufferings.*

A. D. 66. **1** Wherefore laying aside all malice and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speakings.

**2** As new born babes desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby:

† Josephus.  
Jani. i. 21.  
† λογικον  
γαλα. Rom.  
xii. 1.

† reasonable precepts of the *gospel*, whereby you may improve in all virtue and holiness.

**3** If so be ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious.  
|| Χρησθ.

**1. & 2. THUS** are you\* regenerated by the *Christian* faith. And therefore, as new born children are to be fed with the most simple and harmless diet; so ought you, now, most carefully to avoid all those principles of treachery, hypocrisy, envy and calumny, to which the *Jewish*† people are so miserably prone, and to put in practice the pure and

**3.** Those contrary Graces of a gentle, meek,|| and kind disposition, being so fully recommended

to you by *Christ* your merciful redeemer and great example.

4. To



4 To whom coming, as unto a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, and precious,

5 Ye also,\* as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ. members of his church, are capable to offer such truly spiritual services to God, as infinitely surpass their legal and ceremonial sacrifices; and are invested with such honours and privileges as *their* imperfect dispensation has no pretence to\*.

6 Wherefore it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner-stone, elect, precious; and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded.

7 Unto you therefore which believe he is precious; but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner.

8 And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them

4. & 5. Look upon yourselves as A. D. 66. members of *his* religion; both *Jewish* and *Gentile* Christians being equally parts of that noble fabrick, the *church*; of which *He* is the foundation and corner-stone, uniting you both into one building, far exceeding that of the *Jewish temple*. And though the *Jewish* council rejected and despised him, yet has God demonstrated him to be the true *Messiah*; and *you*, as mem-

6. Agreeably to that prophecy of *Isa. xxviii. 16.* concerning *Christ*: Representing him as the Head of a new and more perfect religion, attended with more valuable promises and privileges, undoubtedly to be bestowed on all the *Jewish* people that would embrace and obey him.


7. & 8. Which character of him is now fulfilled to you *Christian* believers, that enjoy the privileges of the *gospel*. But, to the obstinate unbelievers of *that nation*, are as justly applicable those words of the *Psalmist*, relating to the same *Messiah*; *Psal. cxviii. 22.* The stone which the builders (i. e. the *Jewish* council) rejected, is become the Head of the Corner, i. e. the Head and

Y 3

Foundation

---

\* *Lively stones, a spiritual house, a holy priesthood.* Expressions all alluding to the *Jewish* temple and priesthood, and intended to show the excellency of the *Christian* above the *Jewish* religion.

A. D. 66. them which stumble  
 at the word, being  
 disobedient, whereun-  
 to also they \* were  
 appointed.

Foundation of God's true church.  
 In them also is compleated that  
 prediction of *Isa. viii. 14*, repre-  
 senting Christ as a *stone of stumbling,*  
*error, prejudice and destruction,* to  
 which God has in so just Judgment, given *that* people  
 over, for their incurable malice and ingratitude\*.

9 But ye are a cho-  
 sen generation, a roy-  
 al priesthood, an ho-  
 ly nation, a peculiar  
 people; that ye should  
 shew forth the praises  
 of him, who hath cal-  
 led you out of dark-  
 ness into his marvel-  
 lous light;

10 Which in time  
 See ver. 5. past were not a peo-  
 ple, but are now the  
 people of God: which  
 had not obtained mer-  
 cy, but now have ob-  
 tained mercy.

ing up a service to God more pure and acceptable than  
*they*, by their *ceremonial worship*, can pretend to.

11 Dearly beloved,  
 I beseech you as stran-  
 gers and pilgrims, ab-  
 stain from fleshly lusts,  
 which war against the  
 soul.

9. & 10. As much, therefore, as  
 the *Jewish* zealots are apt to de-  
 spise you *Gentile* Christians, as a  
 people that never were in cove-  
 nant with God, nor belonged to  
 his ancient *Church*; yet even *you*  
 may now assure yourselves that,  
 by your embracing *Christianity*,  
 your condition is as much different  
 from what it was, as light is from  
 darkness; and all the sacred *cha-*  
*acters* ||, great *titles*, and religious  
*privileges*, that nations so much va-  
 lue themselves upon, are *yours*  
 now in a much better and truer  
 sense than ever they were *theirs*.  
 So that you are capable of offer-

11. Wherefore, dear brethren,  
 whether *Gentile* or *Jewish* Chris-  
 tians, make it your utmost en-  
 deavour to answer this excellent  
 design of your religion, for the  
 glory of God and your own hap-  
 piness,

---

\* Ver. 8. *Whereunto also they were appointed*: Or else *ἐἰς ὃ  
 ἔτιθέσθαι*—*To which* [prejudice and infidelity] *they were wil-*  
*fully and habitually disposed*: In the same sense with *τεταγμένοι  
 ἐἰς ζωὴν αἰώνιον*, *men well disposed for eternal life*, *Acts xiii. 48*.  
 But it is perhaps, most natural to refer the *ἐἰς ὃ ἔτιθέσθαι*, to the  
*τῷ λόγῳ*, *The word*. Thus—“ They, being disobedient, stum-  
 bled at that word to which they were appointed, *viz.* for  
 “ Light and Instruction.”

pinefs, by the conquest of all those sensual appetites that corrupt the true principles of the mind. Place not your aims and hopes upon *temporal* pleasures: Look upon the present world only as a passage toward the more certain and durable happiness of *heaven*. A. D. 66.

12 Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles, that whereas they speak against you as evil doers, they may by your good works which they shall behold, glorify God in the day of visitation.

12. I warn the *Jewish* converts especially, to consult the credit and interest of their profession, by a prudent and decent behaviour among the *Gentile* people; and particularly by paying all due obedience to the government of the *country* you live in. This will be the best means to take off that prejudice and misrepresentation you lie under, among

the *Romans*, as a people as seditious || and averse to their laws, as the rest of the † *Jewish* nation is. And, by thus expressing your peaceable subjection to their government, you will avoid the vengeance of God, which with the rest of the sinful world will be severely \* chastised; and, whenever you are called to account before the *Roman* \* judicatures, will be able to give an honourable account of yourselves, and cause all people to think and speak well of you and your religion. || κακοποιῶν  
† Joseph. de.  
Bel. Jud.  
Lib. II.  
Cap. 8.  
\* ἡμέρα ἐπι-  
πισκοπῆς.

13 Submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake, whether it be to the king, as supreme;

14 Or unto governors as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evil doers, and for the praise of them that do well.

13. & 14. Nor let your own *private* safety be the only motive of obedience to the government under which providence has placed you; but know, you are bound to it by the law of *Christianity*, which makes no alteration in *civil rights*. As therefore, the *Roman Emperor* and his deputy *officers*, are placed over you, for the same good purposes as *Jewish* princes or governors were formerly appointed over the *Jewish*

nation, viz, the preservation of the publick peace, the security of the rights and properties of the people committed to their charge, by suitable rewards and punish-

A. D. 66. ments; *all* ought to pay them a just obedience and sub-  
jection\*.

\* See Rom. 15 For so is the  
xiii. 1, &c. will of God, that with  
† ὅπως α. well doing we may put  
καθ' ὅπως α. 15. to silence the igno-  
|| See ver. 12. rance of foolish men.

16 As free, and  
not using your liberty  
for a cloak of malici-  
ousness, but as the  
servants of God.  
† As free;  
See John  
viii. 32, 33  
—36,

those of their *own* nation and religion. You *Christians*  
are now entitled to liberties ‡ and privileges much nobler  
than *theirs*. But these privileges are purely *spiritual*;  
and you ought by no means to abuse them into a pre-  
tence for seditious practices, and disturbance of the *civil*  
*government* you live under, as the *Jews* do.

17 Honour all men.  
Love the brotherhood.  
Fear God. Honour  
the king.

of what denomination soever. Adhere firmly to your re-  
ligion, and reverence the *emperor* and his *ministers*, with  
the honours due to temporal governors.

18 Servants be sub-  
ject to your masters  
with all fear, not on-  
ly to the good and  
gentle, but also to  
the froward.

their frowardness toward them on account of their *re-*  
*ligion*. Think not that *Christianity* exempts any one from  
his *natural* and *civil* obligations, as the *Jewish* zealots  
are apt to imagine\*.

\* See Pref.  
to Ephes,  
§ 4.

19 For this is  
thank-worthy, if a  
man for conscience  
toward

15. Thus † you will at once pro-  
mote your own safety, obviate the  
prejudices || your character is asper-  
sed with, and discharge a most prin-  
cipal duty of your holy religion.

16. The *Jews* indeed, under the  
notion of being the seed of *Abra-*  
*ham*, and under the immediate go-  
vernment of *heaven* ‡ proudly dis-  
dain to be subject to any *powers* but

17. In fine, therefore, give all  
ranks of men the respect due to  
their character. Bear an affectionate  
regard to all your fellow *Christians*

18. Let all *Christians*, that are  
servants or *slaves*, to *heathen* mas-  
ters, continue to serve them with  
all fidelity and respect; not only  
submitting to their *reasonable* com-  
mands, but also patiently bearing

19. & 20. Not to repine at the  
punishments you *really* deserve,  
by neglecting your master's busi-  
ness,

toward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully.

20 For what glory is it, if when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if when ye do well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently: this is acceptable with God.

21 For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that we should follow his steps.

who has undergone so much for you.

22 Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth.

23 Who when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not, but committed himself to him that judgeth righteously.

24 Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we being dead to sin, should live unto righteousness; by whose stripes we are healed.

25 For ye were as sheep going astray, but are now returned unto

ness, has no great virtue in it: but to endure, with an even and contented mind, the hardships they lay on you for being *Christians*, and discharging your conscience toward *God*, this is a true instance, and will be rewarded by God as a generous act of obedience.

21. This is indeed agreeable to your *religion*, which you are now to consider as a state of suffering and discipline. Your very *profession* is to imitate the meekness of *Christ*, your great *head* and *example*; and to suffer for *his* sake,

22. & 23. For thus did the innocent and unspotted *Jesus*, while he suffered for the sins of others, having no blemishes of his own, return none of the reproaches cast upon him, nor flung out so much as one impatient threat against his merciless crucifiers; but perfectly resigned himself and his cause to *God*, the great and righteous Judge.

24. So complete an example have you in a *Saviour*, who ought the most strongly to engage you to an imitation of him, in this, and all other instances of true virtue; since the very sufferings and patience proposed to you were the means whereby he redeemed you from sin and death.

25. In short, both *Jewish* and *Gentile* Christians are to reflect upon themselves to have been in such a state

A. D 66. unto the shepherd and a state of ignorance and vice be-  
 { bishop of your souls. fore their conversion, as might well  
 bear the comparison of the *prophet*, resembling you to  
*sheep that were lost and gone astray* (Isaiah liii. 6. See also  
 Jerem. 1. 6, 17.) But now, by the *Christian Religion*, you  
 are recovered again, and put under the conduct of a *Sa-  
 viour and Governor*, whom it is your utmost happiness,  
 as well as duty, to imitate and obey.

### C H A P. III.

*Differences in Religious Principles ought to be no pretence for  
 Christian Husbands or Wives to withdraw the duties of that  
 relation, even from Heathens, to whom they are married.  
 The Christian Wife ought to endeavour to win over such  
 Husband to the Christian Faith, by the singular kindness of  
 her behaviour, her modest garb, and virtuous conversation.  
 The Christian Husband to do the same toward such Wife,  
 by expressions of the utmost tenderness and affection. Unanimi-  
 ty, candour, peace, and justice recommended, upon the same  
 reasons of interest and duty, as in the foregoing chapter, e-  
 specially that of the example of Christ, who is now exalted  
 to be our powerful Head and Saviour. A Comparison be-  
 tween the Ark of Noah, and the Baptism of Christians.*

\* See Chap. ii. 13—18. **L**ikewise, ye wives,

be in subjection to  
 your own husbands,  
 that if any obey not  
 the word, they also  
 may without the word  
 be won by the conver-  
 sation of the wives :

2. While they be-  
 hold your chaste con-  
 versation

1. & 2. **T**O proceed then : \* the  
 same reasons that o-  
 blige christians to be peaceable sub-  
 jects, even under *heathen* govern-  
 ments, and faithful servants, even  
 to *infidel* masters, are equally strong  
 for your discharge of all other re-  
 lative duties, under the same circum-  
 stances. Thus all christian wives  
 ought

verſation coupled with fear. ought to pay all ſubmiſſion and reſpect to their *huſbands*, though *un-*  
*converted*; † endeavour, if poſſible, by a meek, chaſte, loving, and modeſt behaviour, to win them over to the *Chriſtian Faith*, that hath ſo viſible good effects upon their conduct. A. D. 66.  
 † See 1 Cor. vii. 12, 13, 14, 15, 16.

3 Whoſe adorning, let it not be that outward adorning, of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel:

4 But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even *the ornament* of a meek and quiet ſpirit, which is in the ſight of

3. & 4. Let theſe *women* ſtrive to recommend themſelves to their *huſbands* affections, not by the nicety and ſumptuouſneſs of their dreſs, and outward gaiety of their perſons; but by the virtue of their lives and ſweetneſs of their temper: thoſe lovely ornaments of the mind, that infinitely ſurpaſs all external beauty and artificial accompliſhments, and render them amiable in the eyes of *God*.  
 God of great price.

5 For after this manner in the old time, the holy women alſo who truſted in God adorned themſelves, being in ſubjection unto their own huſbands.

6 Even as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him Lord, whoſe daughters ye are as long as ye do well, and are not afraid \* with any amazement.

7 Likewise ye huſbands dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour

5. & 6. In this you will truly imitate thoſe famous women, that were wives of the *patriarchs*, and *mothers* of your *nation*: you will approve yourſelves the genuine daughters of *Sarah*, that dutiful ſpouſe of faithful *Abraham*, ſo long as you keep firm to your duty \*, and be diſcouraged from no inſtance of it by any preſent dangers and inconveniencies.

7. In like manner, let all Chriſtian *huſbands* treat their *wives* in a tender and condeſcending manner, as the weaker *ſex*; performing all conjugal

---

\* *With any amazement*; alluding, perhaps, to that paſſage of *Sarah* Gen. xx. 20. or Gen. xviii. 15.

A. D. 66. nour unto the wife as  
 ~~~~~ unto the weaker vessel,  
 \* See 1 Cor. fel, and as being heirs  
 vii. *ut supra*. together of the grace  
 of life, that your  
 prayers be not hindered.

this virtuous and obliging carriage toward her : that so their religious devotions be not hindred by any differences in principles, or disagreement of tempers.

8 Finally, be ye all of one mind, having compassion one for another ; love as brethren, be pitiful, be courteous :

9 Not rendering evil for evil, or railing for railing : but contrariwise blessing, knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye should inherit a blessing.

10 For he that will love life, and see good days, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips that they speak no guile.

11 Let him eschew evil and do good, let him seek peace and ensue it.

12 For the eyes of the Lord, are over the righteous, and his ears are open unto their prayers : but the face

conjugal duties to them \*, as christianity requires : looking upon a *Christian* wife in the notion of an heiress of the same heavenly happiness with himself, and endeavouring to render an *unbelieving* one so, by converting her to the *faith*, by

8. In fine : be all unanimous in your principles ; compassionate to the infirmities of each other ; and let your whole conversation run in that strain of clarity, tenderness, and courtesy that becomes christian *brethren*.

9. Seek no revenge against your persecutors, but return prayers and good wishes to such as revile and reproach you : remembering that the blessings you enjoy by your *Christian* profession, are the strongest argument to make you desire the good and happiness of all your fellow creatures.

10, 11, & 12. Consider the blessings annexed to an even, just, and peaceable disposition (Psal. xxxiv. 12, 13, &c.) *What man is he that desireth (a happy life) and loveth to see (many) good days ? Keep thy tongue from evil (speaking) and thy lips from speaking deceit. Depart from evil (or mischief) and do good, seek, and pursue peace. The eyes of the Lord are upon the righteous (the just, or merciful) and his ears are open to their prayers. But the face*

(i. e. Dis-



face of the Lord is against them that do evil. (i. e. displeasure) of the Lord is against them that do evil. A. D. 66.

13 And who is he that will harm you, if ye be followers of that which is good? the best means to preserve you from the malice of *mankind*. For, there are scarce any people of so savage a temper, as without any provocation, <sup>\* τὸ ἀγῶν</sup> to injure a person of a kind \* and inoffensive behaviour.

14 But and if ye suffer for righteousness sake, happy are ye; and be not afraid of their terror, neither be troubled: 14. But, whenever it shall happen, that you suffer for the sake of your *religion*; look upon *that* as your happiness. Be not discouraged at any threats, or the worst that can befall you, of that kind.

15 But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts, and be ready always to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meekness and fear. 15. Be but possess'd of a religious fear of offending *God*, believe his truth, depend upon his power, justice and goodness; and you need not fear to own, and be ready to defend your *Christian* principles, in a modest and humble way, upon either private or publick examination.

16 Having a good conscience, that whereas they speak evil of you, as of evil doers, they may be ashamed that falsely accuse your good conversation in Christ. 16. For, thus to demonstrate the innocence and peaceableness of your carriage, is the most direct way to shame and confound those that would represent you as men of turbulent and † seditious principles.

17 For it is better if the will of God be so that ye suffer for well doing than for evil doing. 17. And, whether it succeeds in securing you from *their* malice, or no; yet you will have the inward satisfaction of suffering with a good conscience, and for a good cause; without which your afflictions would indeed be insupportable.

18. You

A. D. 66. 18 For Christ also  
 hath once suffered for  
 sins, the just for the  
 unjust: (that he might  
 bring us to God) be-  
 ing put to death in  
 the flesh, || but quick-  
 ned by the Spirit :

|| 2 Cor.  
 xiii. 4.

by the power of the *Holy Spirit*.

19 By which also  
 he went and preach-  
 ed unto the spirits in  
 prison\* :

\* τοῖς ἐν-  
 φυλάκῃ  
 πνεύμασι.

|| Gen. vi. 3.

20 Which some-  
 time were disobedi-  
 ent, † when once the  
 long suffering of God  
 waited in the days of  
 Noah, while the ark  
 was a preparing,  
 wherein few, that is  
 eight souls, were †  
 saved by water.

∴ Gen. vii.  
 13.

sentenced to destruction, for their incurable impiety;  
 and none saved in the ∴ ark, beside Noah, and seven  
 more of his family†.

21 The like figure  
 whereunto, even bap-  
 tism, doth also now  
 save us (not the put-  
 ting away of the filth  
 of

18. You will, then, copy after  
 the great example, and share in  
 the glories of your innocent Sa-  
 viour, who laid down his spotless  
 life to procure the pardon and  
 salvation of a guilty world; and,  
 in reward of those sufferings,  
 was raised again from the dead,

19. & 20. Even of that divine  
*Spirit*, wherewith he inspired Noah  
 to preach repentance and reforma-  
 tion to the wicked people, before  
 the flood; those dissolute wretches,  
 that were enslaved to \* their brutish  
 lusts; and after the merciful  
 space of a hundred years || given  
 them to repent in, and Noah per-  
 suading them to it, with particu-  
 lar earnestness, all the while he was  
 preparing the ark; were, at last,  
 like condemned \* prisoners, justly

21. & 22. Now our baptism is the  
 same to us, as the ark was to Noah,  
 and his family, viz. A means of  
 our salvation from sin and eternal  
 death, as the ark saved them from  
 the

\* Ver. 19. By which [*ἐν ᾧ*] he went and preached—Not  
 that Christ himself preached, but preached by the Spirit, i. e.  
 by sending the Spirit upon Noah; agreeably to 2 Pet. ii. 5.  
 and 1 Pet. i. 11.

† Ver. 20. *ὅτε ἅπασι*, When once for all. See  
 the note on Heb. ix. 26.

‡ Saved by water. A quite wrong translation: δι' ὕδατος,  
 is out of, or from the water; in the same manner as διὰ πυρός,  
 saved by fire, should be rendered, As out of the fire 1 Cor.  
 iii. 15.

of the flesh, but \* the answer of a good conscience towards God) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ,

22 Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God, angels, and authorities, and powers being made subject unto him.

having now a perfect pledge and earnest of it, by the resurrection of *Christ* from the dead, and his glorious exaltation into heaven, to the utmost degree of glory and majesty; whereby angels and archangels, men and devils, all ranks and degrees of creatures are put under his government and dominion.

the *flood*, For, Christian *baptism* is A. D. 66. not a mere external *ceremony* of washing and cleansing the *body*; but its nature and advantage lies in its being a solemn \* *engagement* on *our* part, to dedicate ourselves to the service of *Christ*; and the *promise* of eternal life, on *God's* part, on condition of our performing that engagement. A promise we are certain to see performed, as ha-

---

\* *The answer of a good conscience*: *ἐπιρώτημα* signifies either a *question*, or an *answer*. It most probably alludes to the *questions* put to, or *answered* by the person baptized, and so signifies the *stipulation* of baptism.

## C H A P. IV.

*The Gentile Christians again exhorted to Purity of Life, and Constancy in their Profession, from the Consideration of Christ's Sufferings for them, and their Engagement to imitate Him. They are warned from the former Vices of their Heathen State. The Apostle turns his Argument again to the Jewish Converts, telling them, the Dissolution of the Jewish State and Religion, with the exemplary Destruction of that People, was near at hand; exhorting them to great Sobriety, Devotion, Charity, and Hospitality, for their Preservation from the Effects of that Calamity. Advices for the due Use of Spiritual Gifts, and the Exercise of Sacred Offices. The dreadful Judgment upon the Jewish Nation, and the happy Security of good Christians.*

A. D. 66. I **F**Orasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh, arm yourselves likewise with the same mind: for he that hath suffered \* in the flesh, hath ceased from sin.

\* Chap. iii. 18, &c.

2 That he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh, to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.

3 For the time past of our life may suffice us to have wrought the

1. & 2. **T**HUS \* you are to consider how great an obligation the sufferings of *Christ*, on your behalf, lays on you to renounce all your former vicious principles and carnal practices, and that the very design of your *Christianity* is, to engage you to live by the purity of *his* pattern.

3 You *Gentile* converts must especially know, you are now to bid adieu to all the drunkenness, impure

---

\* Ver. 1. *He that hath suffered in the flesh.* A Christian's suffering in the flesh is, in this place, evidently the same with his mortifying the flesh, and its lusts: As appears by the second and third verses.

the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousness, lusts, excess of wine, revelings, banquettings, and impure debaucheries and abominable practices, so usual in your former course of *heathen* worship. A. D. 63.

4 Wherein they think it strange that you run not with them to the same excess of riot, speaking evil of you:

4. Those impious customs being become branches even of their *religious worship*; your *heathen* neighbours will, 'tis like, wonder at your relinquishing them, and point you out for men of novelty and affectation, with the utmost indignity and reproach.

5 Who shall give an account to him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead. themselves up to obstinate and irreclaimable wickedness.

5. But let not *that* dishearten you. A time is coming when God will severely recompence them, and all that have given

6 For, for this cause was the gospel preached also to them that are dead, that they might be judged according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit.\*

6. Remember the blessed advantages you *Gentile* Christians, who were *dead in trespasses and sins*, now enjoy, by the *gospel* revelation, engaging you to condemn\* and mortify your former vicious and sensual habits, and live a new and divine life. A thing which, tho' your *heathen* neighbours may re-

proach\* and condemn you for, yet the present comforts of this *spiritual life*, and the assurance of being raised to an immortal happiness, by the power of the *divine spirit*, will demonstrate *your* wisdom and *their* folly.

7 But the end of all things is at hand: be ye therefore sober and watch unto prayer.

7. Let the *Jewish* converts now take notice, the *ceremonial* religion, some of them are so fond of, is drawing near to an end; and the

Z

*Jewish*

---

\* *Judged according to men in the flesh, but, &c.* I have joined the two most natural interpretations of these phrases, and leave the reader to take which he thinks to be the most strictly agreeable to the context.

A. D. 66. *Jewish* State and people to be destroyed, by a most exemplary judgment. To prevent their sharing in which common calamity, it behoves them to betake themselves to great sobriety, temperance and devotion, according to our Saviour's advice, *Matth. xxi. 34, 36.*

8 And above all things have fervent charity among yourselves: for charity shall cover the multitude of sins.\*

9 Use hospitality one to another without grudging.

you the divine protection from the miseries now coming upon your obdurate nation.

10 As every man hath received the gift, even so minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God.

† χάρις,  
χάρισμα.

ard to whom God has committed a talent to be liberally and chearfully improved to the church's good.

11 If any man speak, let him speak as the oracles of God: if any man minister, let him do it as of the ability which God giveth, that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ: to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

‡ λαλει.

|| ως λόγια  
Θεοῦ. See  
Rom. xii. 5.

|| διακονει.

the glory of God, through Jesus Christ, to whom be ascribed all praise and dominion. Amen.

8, & 9. Remember too, that a charitable, kind, and hospitable temper, free of all partial distinctions and animosities against such as are not of your opinion, will do you particular service in the present case; will contribute much to atone for your former miscarriages of that kind; and procure

10. Whatever extraordinary † gift of the Spirit any Christian is endowed with, or whatever † office he is intrusted withal, let him not overvalue himself and despise others upon that account; but look upon himself as a steward

11 Thus, he that has the gift of explaining ‡ Scripture prophecies, let him presume to carry that explanation no further ‡ than his inspiration reaches. He that is a steward of the church's charities for the poor, or is sent on any charitable || message to any church, let him perform those offices with diligence and heartiness. And so, for all other employments in the ministry let your chief aim be to

12. Once

\* See James v. 9—20. and the Note there.

12 Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial, which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you :

13 But rejoice, in as much as ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings ; that when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy.

eternal splendor and felicity.

14 If ye be reproached for the name of Christ, happy *are ye* ; for the Spirit of glory, and of God resteth upon you : on their part he is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

him, whom your adversaries so ignorantly despise.

15 But let none of you suffer as a murderer, or as a thief, or as an evil-doer, or as a busy-body, in other mens matters.

are now so very prone to.

16 Yet if *any man* suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed, but let him glorify God on this behalf.

your submission to his

17 For the time is come that judgment must

12. Once more let me intreat A. D. 66. you, dear brethren, not to be surprised and disheartened at the severe persecutions that befall you, for the sake of your profession. Think it not strange, that *Christianity* should be now a state of trials and sufferings.

13. Look on it, rather as an honour to be sharers in the sufferings of your *Lord*, who accounts all *your* afflictions as his *own*. And rejoice in it as your greatest happiness, that, as you are to resemble him in suffering here, you are one day to shine with him in

14. Whenever, therefore, you are vilified for your Christian religion, 'tis a happy token of your being the true disciples of God and Christ; entitled to those endowments of the *Holy Spirit*, that are the earnest and pledge of your future glory, and will enable you to triumph and sing the praises of

15. Only take special care, that none of you commit, and so justly suffer for, any acts of violence, theft, sedition, or intruding into matters that don't belong to you: vices that the *Jewish* \* zealots \* Josephus:

16. But, so far as you innocently suffer for the peaceable profession of *Christianity*, bless God, for such happy opportunities of displaying and perfecting your divine Will and Providence.

17, & 18. In fine, the time is now come, when even the *Christian*

A D. 66. must begin at the house of God, and if it first begin at us, what shall the end be of them that obey not the gospel of God?

18 And if the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear?

are likely to escape it only by a special act of mercy and providence; what must be the condition of those, upon whose heads these judgments are intended *principally* to fall!

19 Wherefore, let them that suffer according to the will of God, commit the keeping of their souls to him in well doing as unto a faithful Creator.

merciful deliverer, and eternal preserver.

*stian church* itself is to undergo the sharp discipline of present trials and afflictions. And, if the *believing* part of the *Jewish* nation be, by divine Wisdom, permitted to suffer such things, how dreadful must be the judgment upon the *infidel* and *obstinate* part of that people? And, if their destruction will be so general and terrible, that the very *Christian* members

19. Wherefore, as you *Christians* are sure of the divine protection, bear your present persecutions with an easy and chearful mind. Keep steady to your duty, and commit your lives into *his* hands, who is your faithful Creator, and cannot fail to be your

## C H A P. V.

*The Elder and superior Officers of the Church exhorted to a diligent, chearful, disinterested and humble Management in the governing the Christian Church. The younger and inferior Officers charged to obey their Superiors; and to the Exercise of Humanity, and all kind Offices to each other. All Christians encouraged to patient Submission and Resignation, under their present Sufferings; to a vigilant Sobriety against the prevalent Temptations of the Devil, and his wicked Instruments. The Apostle's Prayer for them. The Salutations and Conclusion.*

1. THE elders which are among you I exhort, who am also

1. HAVING thus given you these general directions, I now particularly exhort the *clergy* of your



so an elder, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed.

that saw \* the sufferings of *Christ*, and is ready to bear\* *μαρτυρ.* witness to the truth of them, by suffering for his religion; and is under a sure expectation of sharing in the future glory promised to his true disciples.

2. Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly: not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind.

3 Neither as being lords over God's heritage: but being examples to the flock.

ing on the charitable *collections* of the church as dedicated to *his* service.

4 And when the chief shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.

5 Likewise ye younger, submit yourselves unto the elder; yea, all of you be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility, for God resisteth the proud and giveth grace to the humble.

34. Surely he scorneth the scornors, but his favour is with the lowly.

your churches to a special care of A. D. 66. their duty. Let all the elder || and superior church-officers then, || *πρεσβυ-τροί.* take this advice, as coming from one that is himself one of the chief of their sacred order, an *Apostle*

2. & 3. Let them govern their churches with great diligence, both in doctrine and example; with the utmost cheerfulness and freedom from all sinister and secular designs. Neither exercising any imperious behaviour † toward their people, † *κύρι εὐόντες των κληρων.* nor disposing of the public † revenues committed to their care, in an arbitrary or humourfome manner: but acting like faithful stewards over *God's* people, and look-

4. And, by so doing, they shall receive the crown of eternal reward, at the great appearance of Christ to judgment, who is the Lord and head over the whole church.

5. In like manner, let all the *inferior* clergy pay a just respect and submission to those of the *superior* orders. And, in fine, be all, of every degree whatever, ready to do all kind and good offices to each other; making that great virtue of *humility* their chief and most valuable ornament: remembering those words of Solomon, Prov. iii.

A. D. 66. 6 Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time ;

7 Casting all your care upon him, for he careth for you.

8 Be sober, be vigilant ; because your adversary the devil as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour.

9 Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world.

10 But the God of all grace, who hath called us unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you.

11 To him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen. all glory and dominion for ever and ever. *Amen.*

12 By Silvanus a faithful brother unto you (as I suppose) I have written briefly, exhorting and testifying, that this is the true grace of God wherein ye stand.

13 The

6. & 7. And let both *clergy* and *people* commit themselves to the divine care and providence, with all pious and humble resignation, under their present sufferings ; depending upon God for a seasonable deliverance, and a glorious reward.

8. Let your care and circumspection be particular, at this time, when the rage of the *devil* and his wicked instruments your *persecutors*, is so violent to draw you into *apostacy* from the Christian faith.

9. Your courage and resolution therefore, ought to be proportionable to your danger. And it will add something to it, to consider, that your *Christian* brethren in other parts of the world, are now labouring under the same persecutions.

10. & 11. And may *God*, the author of all divine favours and blessings, who has given us a sure prospect of eternal glory and happiness, by the *Christian* religion, shorten your present sufferings, and enable you to improve them into a complete resignation to his divine will and providence ; whereby you cannot fail of the final rewards proposed to you. To him be ascribed

12. This epistle, intended, in the shortest compass I could, to comfort and confirm you in the true faith, I now send by *Silvanus* (or *Silas*) of whose integrity I presume you all have a great opinion.

13 All

13 The *church that* is at Babylon elected together with *you*, saluteth you, and *so doth* Marcus my son.

most filial respect. See Philip ii. 22.

14 Greet ye one another with a kiss of charity. Peace *be* with you all that are in Christ Jesus. Amen.

13. All your fellow-christians <sup>A. D. 66</sup> here at \* *Rome*, send their hearty love to your churches. And particularly (*John*) *Mark*, who has served and assisted me with the

See Philip ii. 22.

14. Salute each other with your usual kiss of charity for my sake. All blessing and happiness attend every christian in your respective countries. *Amen.*

\* *Babylon*. So it is most generally thought *Rome*, is here and in Rev. xvii. and xviii. figuratively called, from its heathen *idolatry* and *superstition*, as some think, but much more probably as it was foreseen to be the head and mistress of vicious corruptions in the *Christian* church. The learned Bishop Pearson understands by *Babylon*, in this place, the *Egyptian Babylon*. Op. Post. de Success. Rom. Episcop. cap. 8.

---

A  
P A R A P H R A S E  
ON THE  
SECOND EPISTLE GENERAL  
OF  
S T. P E T E R.

---

*Note,* This Epistle being written in the latter end of the same year, to the same *people*, and upon the same *occasion* with the foregoing ; the reader is referred to the *preface* thereunto prefixed.

---

C H A P. I.

*The title and salutation. The great blessings of the Christian Religion. Christians exhorted to the resolute practice of such virtues as are suitable to such blessings. The necessity and glorious effects of those Christian virtues. The design of this Epistle, much the same with that of the former. St. Peter foretels his own approaching martyrdom. Reminds them of the truth and certainty of their Christian Religion, from the testimonies of a divine voice from Heaven, and the completion of scripture prophecies.*

A. D. 66 } SImon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them

1. SImon Peter a servant and Apostle of Jesus Christ, sendeth this epistle to the Christian churches

them that have obtained like precious faith with us, through the righteousness of God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ :

2 Grace and peace be multiplied unto you, through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord.

3 According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that *pertain* unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to

4 Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises ; that by these you might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

5 And besides this, giving all diligence, add to your faith, virtue ; and to virtue, knowledge ;

6 And to knowledge, temperance ; and to temperance, patience ;

churches of *Pontus, Galatia, Capadocia, the lesser Asia, and Bithynia,* to all, whether *Jewish* || or *Gentile* || converts, that place their hopes of pardon and salvation, in the *Christian religion*, as I myself do. A. D. 66. See Pref. to 1 Epist. § 4. Chap. i. i.

2. & 3. Wishing you all that happiness and blessing which is the fruit of truly knowing God to be our supreme Father, and Jesus Christ to be our Lord and Saviour By whose glorious power \* and authority we are now called into the privileges and profession of a holy religion, that will qualify us for eternal life.


glory \* and virtue ;

4. A religion, whereby you are reformed from the vices and corruptions of the rest of mankind ; have enjoyed the promises made to the Christian church, of being inspired with the Holy † Ghost here, † *Deus* and wrought into such a resemblance and imitation of God, as cannot fail to render you, for ever, happy in him *hereafter*. † *Deus* *plenus* *gratiae* *et* *veritatis*.

5. 6. & 7. Wherefore, † seeing the blessings of your religion are such, make it your utmost endeavour to perform the reasonable and necessary conditions of *finally* enjoying them, viz. courage in *profession*, and sincerity in *practice*. Let that courage

---

\* Ver. 3. *Called us to glory and virtue* : *Διὰ δόξης ἔ ἀρετῆς*—By his glory and power ; or, by his glorious power ; the same with *Διὰ δύναμιν* in the former part of the verse. So the *Alexand.* and other MSS. *διὰ δόξαν* ; and the *Vulg.* *Propriâ sua Gloriâ & Virtutē*.

A. D. 66.  tience; and to patience, godliness;

7 And to godliness, brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness, charity.

tions, constant in the true worship of God, and loving and charitable, in your thoughts and behaviour to all your Christian brethren.

8 For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you, that you shall neither be barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.

9 But he that lacketh these things, is blind, and cannot see far off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins.

10 Wherefore the rather, brethren give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall:

11 For so an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

12 Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you always in remembrance of these things, though ye know them, and be established in the present truth.

13 Yea, I think it meet, so long as I am in this tabernacle, to stir

courage be supported by a careful study and knowledge of its true principles; those principles back'd and secured by a strict abstinence from all sensual and unlawful pleasures; and exert themselves in rendering you patient under afflictions,

8. These are the true characters of a good Christian; and the only things that will improve you in your holy profession.

9. And the Christian, that neglects these virtues, has lost all true notions of his religion, and forgotten the very end and design of his baptism.

10. & 11. Make the diligent practice of these duties, therefore, the only certain condition of the gospel blessings. And then, as you have done your part, you may be perfectly assured of the compleat fruition of Christ's future and eternal kingdom.

12. & 13. Wherefore though you cannot but, in general, know this to be the great concern of your Christianity, yet, in this present state of trials and temptations, I could not but think it proper, once and again, to remind you of a thing of such infinite importance: Especially considering,

lift you up, by putting *you* in remembrance :

14 Knowing that shortly I must put off *this* my tabernacle, even as our Lord Jesus Christ hath shewed me.

15 Moreover, I will endeavour that you may be able after my decease, to have these things always in remembrance.

16 For we have not followed cunningly devised fables, when we made known unto you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eye-witnesses of his majesty.

ed eye-witnesses of the life, miracles, death and resurrection of *Jesus Christ* ; all of which are demonstrations of that great article of his *future* appearance, to be the great judge of all the world.

17 For he received from God the Father, honour and glory, when there came such a voice to him from the excellent glory, 'This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

18 And this voice which came from heaven, we heard when we were with him in the holy mount.

I have but a short while to be your *living* remembrancer. A. D. 66.

14. For I expect, very soon to die, a *martyr* for the religion of Christ, and, by the same kind || of || *Viz. Crucifixion.* death that he *himself* was pleased to foretel me I should. (See *John* xxi. 20.)

15. And therefore, I leave you these my *Epistles*, to revive your courage, and preserve you in constancy to the true faith, after I am gone.

16. And you ought to look upon the testimonies of the truth of your profession (and particularly of this great article of *Christ's future coming*) given you by *me*, and the rest of the *Apostles*, not like the uncertain *traditions* and *forgeries* of the *Jewish* doctors ; but as truths confirmed by unsuspect-

17. & 18. I myself was one of them, who at his glorious transfiguration, upon the mount, saw those displays of the divine majesty, and heard the voice from heaven declaring him to be the *Son of God*, the true *Messiah* and Saviour of mankind. (See *Matt.* xvii. 1. and *Mark* ix. 2, 3, &c. *Luke* ix. 28, &c.)

Now<sub>2</sub>

A. D. 66. 19 We have also  
 { \*a more sure word of  
 prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, † as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day-star arise in your hearts :

*prophecies* with the transactions of *Christ*, remembering the predictions *Christ* made concerning himself; and you will find the authority of the *one* to be as clear from the *other*, as light † itself; and, by still future concurring circumstances, and the blessings of *Christ* upon your honest endeavours, you will be more and more enlightened and confirmed in the truth and excellency of religion||.

20 Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation†.

21 For

19. Now, all these kind of evidences must render our religion of still more uncontestable authority, as they are *facts* that are the completion of ancient *prophecies*. An argument, the most obstinate *Jews* can never withstand. But, whatever *their* perverseness be, rest *you* satisfied in such convincing proofs. Read, and compare those

20. & 21. These predictions rightly compared and understood cannot but, at the same time satisfy *you*, and confound your *adversaries*; especially those of the *Jewish* part; For,

For,

---

\* Ver. 19. *A more sure word*—Not more sure than the *facts* spoken of in the 17th and 18th verses; but more sure than the *cunningly devised fables* in the 16th verse.

† *As unto a light shining in a dark place*; i. e. Though the *prophecies* seem *dark* and obscure, yet by applying them to *Christ* they will become *clear* and plain. See and compare 2 Cor. iii, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18. Or perhaps, the *dark place* may be the same with *darkness*, *John* i. 5. *The light shineth in darkness, and the darkness comprehended it not.* See Dr Clarke's Paraph. on that passage.

|| *The day*: So the gospel-religion is called, *Rom.* xiii. 12, 16. *The day-star*: So *Christ* is called the *day spring*, *Luke* i. 78. *The morning star*, *Rev.* ii. 28.

† Ver. 20. *Of any private interpretation.* Note, *this two verses* may be very properly rendered thus: *None of the prophetic predictions of the Old Testament* [or at least, not the *Generality* of them] *were of so express, clear, and plain a nature. as to be their own interpreters*: 'Tis *Christ* and his *gospel* that perfectly



2! For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake *as they were moved* by the Holy Ghost.

For, *they*, as well as *we*, do all allow those prophecies concerning the *Messiah*, not to be *human* inventions, or the suggestions † of † ἰδίαις ἐπιθυμίαις καὶ φαντασίαις *private* fancy, but the clear predictions of men inspired with the Holy Ghost. And, consequently,

'tis impossible but the *Christian* religion, which is the completion of those *prophecies*, must have the same characters of divine truth with the *prophecies* themselves.

---

fectly opens and explains them. And then the following words, *For prophecy came not by the will of man*, may have this sense, viz, *For those prophets, though truly inspired of God, yet could not prophecy concerning those matters, when, or as much, and many things, as themselves pleased. or their then present bearers might desire; but were confined to the dictates of the Holy Ghost.* Now all the obscurities and defects of their doctrines are fully cleared up, and supplied by the life, and transactions of that *Christ* of whom they prophesied. Thus the sense of these three verses is most ingenuously and judiciously connected by *Sam. Werenfels*. Differtat. Theolog. Dissert. 10. Edit. Basil. 1709.

## CHAP. II.

*Warnings against false and heretical Teachers in the Christian Church. A black Account of their Principles and Practices. Their severe Judgment and Condemnation. Their Characters exactly and principally agree to the Zealots among the Jewish Converts, among whom Nicholas of Antioch, mentioned Acts vi. 5. was the Broacher of a lewd Heresy; and whose Followers are mentioned by St John, Revel. ii. 6. and are thought by the ancient Commentators, to be here particularly referred to.*

A. D. 66. **B**UT there were false prophets also among the people: even, as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, \* even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction.

† Compare St. Jude's Epistle.

|| See Deut. xxxii. 6. 1 Cor. vi 20. and Chap. iii. 3, 4 of this Epistle.

zing faction: † A set of men, that are broaching the most pernicious doctrines, by practising upon which, while they boast themselves *as the peculiar* || *and purchased people of God*, they really renounce him that is indeed their Lord || and Redeemer; and shall, in due time, feel the fatal effects of such obstinate malice and ingratitude. †

2. These

\* Ver. 1. *Even denying the Lord that bought them.* Note. They who take this to be meant of *Jesus Christ* are much mistaken. It was God the *Father*; the Lord of the whole world, the God of Jews and Christians, of whom it is said — *Is he not thy Father who hath bought thee?* Deut xxxii. 6.

2 And many shall follow their pernicious ways, by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of.

3 And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandize of you, whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth not.

4 For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment;

Remember, the apostate *angels* themselves reigned but a little while in their pride, were expelled the regions of heavenly light, thrust down into the dark\* and lower world, and are here confined, like prisoners in chains, 'till the final day of judgment upon them and all wicked men.

5 And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly:

6 And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrha into ashes; con-

2. These people, by their violent zeal, and plausible pretences, are like to seduce many converts to their party, to the great scandal of the *Christian* name. A. D. 66.

3. They insinuate themselves into your affections, and strive to gain profelytes for temporal ends, † and the gratification of their own impure passions. But that divine judgment long since pronounced † against the authors of such wickedness, is drawing on, and will soon overtake them. † ἐκταλαῖ. See Jude 4.

4. For, however they may at present prevail, and whatever their malicious endeavours against you be, rest yourselves satisfied, from all the course of the divine dispensations, that *they* are sure of their punishment, and *you* of a gracious and timely deliverance.

5. & 6. You may conclude the certainty of your rescue from these impious persecutors, from the instance of *Noah*; that preached repentance to the antediluvian world, and was one of the || eight || that were saved in the *ark*. And *these* may as assuredly gather their approaching vengeance, from the destruction of that wicked generation, ὀγδοον. Gen. vi. 9. 1 Pet. iii. 20.

\* ταρταρώσας. See Ephes. ii. 2. Dr Whitby on this place.

A. D. 66. condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly :

7 And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked :

8 (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from

9 The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations ; and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished :

10 But chiefly them that walk after the flesh, in the lusts of uncleanness, and despise government. Presumptuous *are they*, self-willed : they are not afraid \* to speak evil of dignities :

11 Whereas angels, which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord.

*Satan* none of his railing accusations, but only said, *the Lord rebuke thee*. See Jude, ver. 9.

tion, by the flood, and from the dreadful examples of *Sodom* and *Gomorrhah*.

7. & 8. Remember, how special a deliverance that good man *Lot* had, from the ruins of those lewd people, after all the many vexations he was forced to endure at the sight of such profligate and numerous examples.

day to day with *their* unlawful deeds.)

9. From all which instances, good *Christians* ought to assure themselves of a proportionable share of divine care and providence, for their deliverance from present afflictions, and of a future vengeance upon their cruel persecutors.

10. And, if ever divine justice were due to any crimes, it must fall with terrible weight upon the abominable lusts, the unmasterly pride, and incurable prejudices of the *false teachers* of these times ; several of which are arrived to that presumption, as to vilify their superiors, not only upon *earth*, but in \* *heaven* too.

11. How contrary was the behaviour of those much superior beings, the good *angels*, toward those wicked *spirits* which they had engaged and overcome ! Even *Michael* the *archangel*, returned

12. But

---

\* *To speak evil of dignities*, may refer either to their vilifying their *civil* governors, or to the base and wicked notions which the *ancients* tell us these *heretics* vented about the *angels* and heavenly *spirits*. See Jude, ver. 8.

12 But these, as natural brute beasts, \* made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not, and shall utterly perish in their own corruption.

13 And shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the day-time: spots they are and blemishes sporting themselves with their own deceivings, while they feast with you:

14 Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin, beguiling unstable souls: an heart they have exercised with covetous practices: cursed children.

15 Which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Bozor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness.

16 But was rebuked for his iniquity: the dumb ass speaking with man's voice, forbade

12. But these proud *mortals*, <sup>A D. 6.</sup> more like beasts of prey \* than men, being prone to mischief and ripe for destruction, revile and blaspheme every thing, without reason or distinction; and shall accordingly feel the nature and woeful effects of so wilful a degeneracy.

13. & 14. So habituated are they to all sensuality, fraud, covetousness and hypocrisy, that when at some times they appear fair and religious, to betray men to a good opinion of their principles; at other times they commit their lewdness in open day-light: they make a jest of the worst impieties; attend upon your *sacraments* † and † 1 Cor. xi. *love-feasts*, only for some riotous 20. 21. and lustful gratification. In fine, Jude 12. are a perfect scandal to religion, and shall at last receive the vengeance due to those that are accursed and utterly forsaken of God.

15. & 16. And well may God be supposed to abandon such wretches to themselves who have renounced all principles of sober reason and true religion, and instead of deserving the name of *Christians*, may be called the followers of *Balaam*; while, for their secular advantages, they corrupt and delude *Christian* people, as he did the *Israelites* ‡ against the plain dictates of his own conscience,

\* *Made to be taken and destroyed.* Or thus, γεγεννημένα εἰς ἔλωσιν ἢ φθοράν; *Made for rapine and destruction.* I express both senses, but our translation is the most agreeable.

‡ See Num. xxxvi. 16, and Joseph. Antiq. Lib. IV. chap. vi.

A. D. 66. had the madness of conscience, for the sake of *prefer-*  
 ~~~~~ the prophet. *ment.* Nor does the miraculous  
 reproof, by the mouth of a dumb ass, upon the first at-  
 † Num. xxii. tempt † of that infatuated man, move *these* his *followers*  
 to the least remorse of consideration.

17 These are wells  
 without water, clouds  
 that are carried with  
 a tempest, to whom  
 the midst of darkness  
 is reserved for ever.

void of all refreshing moisture, but full of noxious va-  
 pours, they blast and destroy all before them. Surely  
 the most exquisite of future punishments must be the  
 portion of such people !

18 For when they  
 speak great swelling  
*words* of vanity, they  
 allure through the lusts  
 of the flesh, through  
 much wantonness, those  
 that were clean esca-  
 ped from them who  
 live in error.

17. What shall I say more of  
 them, or how shall I describe them?  
 So empty are they of all good, that  
 I might compare them to *springs*  
 quite dried up. So pernicious are  
 their principles, that like *clouds*

18. Yet, as worthless as they  
 are, their pretences to religion run  
 high, to the utmost degree of pride  
 and vanity. The secret design of  
 all which is, the better to mislead  
 others into their filthy and impure  
 practices.

19 While they pro-  
 mise them liberty,  
 they themselves are  
 the servants of cor-  
 ruption : for of whom  
 a man is overcome, of  
 the same is he brought  
 in bondage.

19. They promise their *votaries*  
 the liberties and privileges of God's  
*church* and people, while *themselves*  
 are enslaved to lust and debauch-  
 ery. And no man is so perfect a  
*slave* as he that is governed by his  
 lust, and ridden by his passions.

20 For if after  
 they have escaped the  
 pollutions of the world,  
 through the know-  
 ledge of the Lord and  
 Saviour Jesus Christ,

they are again entangled therein, *and* overcome, the latter  
 end is worse with them than the beginning.

21 For it had been  
 better for them not  
 to have known the  
 way

20. And verily, their case, as  
*apostates* from the clear light of  
 the *gospel*, is much worse than if  
 they had never been converted at  
 all to it.

21. For the ingratitude of an  
 apostate *christian*, in sinning against  
 such plain and happy methods of  
 salvation,

way of righteousness, than after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them.

22 But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb: The dog is turned to his own vomit again, and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire.

salvation, must needs render him A. D. 66. more incurable and justly condemnable than any *heathen* that was never brought to such a conviction.

22. And thus the wilful indulgence of their brutish passions has reduced these men to the worst instances of habitual brutality; to turn to the vilest of their former vices, as the *dog* does to his vomit, or the *sow* to the mire.

### C H A P. III.

*He repeats the design of his Epistle, viz. To arm them against the false and heretical Teachers, by reminding them of what the ancient Prophets, Christ and his Apostles have foretold of them. These Teachers insult the orthodox Christians, upon the long delay of Christ's judgment threatened to the adversaries of his religion. An answer to their objection. The certainty of this Judgment, both upon the Jewish nation in particular, and upon the whole wicked world in general. The earth shall be destroyed by fire at the last judgment, as it was once by water. An inference from hence, for the patience and purity of a Christian life.*

I THIS second epistle (beloved)

I now write unto you, in both which I stir up your pure minds by way of remembrance:

2 That ye may be mindful of the words which

1. & 2. WELL then, the prevalence of these lewd and heretical \* *teachers* being now \* Chap. ii. such, it was a chief part of my design, in this *second* epistle, to arm you against them, by reminding you of what the ancient *Prophets, Christ* and his *Apostles* have foretold concerning

A. D. 66. which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us the apostles of the Lord and Saviour :

3 Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts,

cerning them, and the judgments that are to overtake them.

3. That, being thus specially warned beforehand, you may be the less surprized, and influenced by this wicked and prophane set of men, that infest the Christian church.

4 And saying †, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.

4. According to those *predictions*, you have now an instance of their daring impiety in deriding the *christian* doctrine of *Christ's solemn appearance to judge and punish the obstinate adversaries of his true religion*. You tell us, *say they*, of wonderful blessings upon good, and dreadful punishments upon wicked men, at this *great day*: And this notion you support by *prophecies* and *predictions*. But we have not seen an article of it fulfilled. The *patriarchs* and *prophets* to whom ye pretend these promises, and by whom these threats were pronounced, are all dead and gone; and the world is just as it was from the beginning.

5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water, and in the water.

6 Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished.

7 But the heavens and the earth which are now, by the same word

5. & 6. Unthoughtful wretches! Have they, or can they forget all the facts, and wink thus hard at all the former *demonstrations* of divine justice and providence over mankind? Can they be ignorant, that the very *God* who created the *earth*, consisting of the sea and land, destroyed it once by its own waters for a punishment to its wicked inhabitants?

7. And, had they but any regard to the plain predictions of *Christ*, and the doctrine of his *apostles*, they must

---

† See Dr. Mill. Prolegom. § 126, 127, 128.



word are kept in store, reserved unto fire, against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men.

must know too, that as the *antediluvian* world perished by the *flood*, so shall the *present* world we inhabit be destroyed by a conflagration of *fire*; and all wicked and irreclaimable men be left to perish in its flames\* at the great day of universal judgment.

8 But (beloved) be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.

of ignorance in us to account him slow and tardy in the performance of his word, or to suspect he will never perform it all, because 'tis not done so *soon* as we may wish or expect: For this is to measure the *divine* mind by our *own* infirm conceptions and imagination. A *thousand years* seem a long and tedious time to *us*, that seldom out-live a *hundred*: And whatever *we* propose to do must be done speedily; or else opportunity may be lost, and time will fail us. But with the *eternal Being* 'tis quite otherwise. He can lose no time, nor want opportunity. Whatever he promiseth or threatneth, he can as certainly and effectually perform, a thousand years hence, as to-day or to-morrow: And a thousand years are infinitely less to him, than a day is to us.

9 The Lord is not slack concerning his promise (as some men count slackness) but is long-suffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

seeing their errors, and reforming their practices; it being the gracious intent of heaven to do the utmost that justice and goodness will permit, for the salvation of all his rational creatures.

must know too, that as the *antediluvian* world perished by the *flood*, so shall the *present* world we inhabit be destroyed by a conflagration of *fire*; and all wicked and irreclaimable men be left to perish in its flames\* at the great day of universal judgment.

8. But, for a further answer to their impious objection; when God has expressly promised a *future* blessing, or threatned a *future* judgment, but not stated to us the precise *time* of its accomplishment; 'tis the lowest degree

of ignorance in us to account him slow and tardy in the performance of his word, or to suspect he will never perform it all, because 'tis not done so *soon* as we may wish or expect: For this is to measure the *divine* mind by our *own* infirm conceptions and imagination. A *thousand years* seem a long and tedious time to *us*, that seldom out-live a *hundred*: And whatever *we* propose to do must be done speedily; or else opportunity may be lost, and time will fail us. But with the *eternal Being* 'tis quite otherwise. He can lose no time, nor want opportunity. Whatever he promiseth or threatneth, he can as certainly and effectually perform, a thousand years hence, as to-day or to-morrow: And a thousand years are infinitely less to him, than a day is to us.

9. Besides, in the present case of divine *promises* and *judgments*, 'tis the effect of perfect wisdom and mercy, for God to defer the execution, in order to exercise and improve the faith and patience of *good* men; and to afford to all that are *obstinate* and incredulous, the utmost opportunity of

A.D. 66. 10 But the day of  
 { the Lord will come as  
 a thief in the night,  
 in the which the hea-  
 vens shall pass away  
 with a great noise,  
 and the elements shall  
 melt with fervent  
 heat; the earth also  
 and the works that  
 are therein, shall be  
 burnt up.

filled, by the Roman armies) yet even *that* will be a time of unexpected and terrible calamity, to the sinful part of that people; and may well be figuratively expressed by *the convulsions of heaven and earth, and all Nature.\** But infinitely more dreadful will be the day of *universal doom*, when, in a *literal* sense, both air and earth, sea and land, with all the appurtenances of this our habitable world, shall, with the most astonishing circumstances, be destroyed by the *conflagration.\**

11 Seeing then that  
 all these things shall be  
 dissolved, what man-  
 ner of persons ought  
 ye to be in all holy  
 conversation and god-  
 lineſs,

12 Looking for,  
 and haſting unto the  
 coming of the day  
 of God, wherein the  
 heavens being on fire,  
 ſhall be diſſolved, and  
 the elements ſhall melt  
 with fervent heat!  
 will be ſo tremendous in all its circumſtances. (See  
 ver. 10.)

10. But how long ſoever God  
 may think fit to defer his deliver-  
 ances of *good*, and his vengeance  
 upon *ſinful* men; yet the great day  
 of *recompence*, we ſpeak of, will  
 aſſuredly come, according to all  
 the predictions concerning it.—  
 And, whether you conſider it in  
 relation to the deſtruction of the  
 Jewiſh nation in particular (which  
 is but a ſhort figure of the *grand*  
*judgment*, and now ſoon to be ful-

filled, by the Roman armies) yet even *that* will be a time of unexpected and terrible calamity, to the sinful part of that people; and may well be figuratively expressed by *the convulsions of heaven and earth, and all Nature.\** But infinitely more dreadful will be the day of *universal doom*, when, in a *literal* sense, both air and earth, sea and land, with all the appurtenances of this our habitable world, shall, with the most astonishing circumstances, be destroyed by the *conflagration.\**

11. & 12. The certainty of  
 which things ought to make the  
 Jewiſh Chriſtians particularly  
 careful to avoid all the impure  
 luſts and vices of their nation,  
 thereby to eſcape the common  
 ruin now coming upon it; and,  
 in like manner, all *Chriſtians* in  
 general, to ſtrive after the utmoſt  
 purity of life and converſation, as  
 the condition of deliverance, at  
 the great diſſolution of the *whole*  
*world*; and to be every way pre-  
 pared for this *day of God*, that  
 will be ſo tremendous in all its circumſtances. (See  
 ver. 10.)

13. For

---

\* For the double conſtruction of this and the three fol-  
 lowing verſes, let the reader compare Matth. xxiv. 29.  
 30.—42. Chap. xxv. 1.—11.—14, &c. Mark xiii. 24, 25,  
 26, 27, with Dr. Clark's Paraph. and 1 Theſſ. v. 2, 3, 4.

13 Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and \* a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness.

Jewish State, and ceremonial religion, will be followed by the establishment,|| and freer propagation of the Christian faith. || Isa. lxxv. 16, 17, 18. And, at the dissolution of the whole wicked world, we shall & lxxvi. 22 be translated into another, where we shall live in the compleat exercise of all true virtue, and in the enjoyment of perfect happiness.

14 Wherefore (beloved) seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blameless.

15 And account that the long-suffering of our Lord is salvation, even as our beloved brother Paul also, according to the wisdom given unto him, hath written unto you.†

16 As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things, in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as

13. For, to all true and sincere A. D. 66. Christians, these fearful revolutions will be only introductions to a new, and more happy state,\* according to the prophetic expressions. Thus the destruction of the

14. Let these considerations, then, spirit you forward to that innocence and steady piety, which will render you acceptable to Christ, and sure of his glorious rewards.

15. & 16. And, to conclude, look upon this merciful delay of the divine judgments upon your wicked persecutors, with a different eye, from what those irrational people view it withal. Consider it, as an instance of divine compassion, in giving further time and space for repentance, to that obstinate nation. Agreeably to my brother Paul's discourse in Rom. xxiv. Rom. xi. and in other passages of his epistles, where he† 1 Thess. Chap. iv. speaks of the rejection of the Jewish people, the coming of Christ, and the and v, Philip iv. 5. day of the Lord, &c. which, †tho'—iii. 11. 20 they Rom, ii, 4,

A a 4

\* *A new heaven and a new earth.* See note on ver. 10. See my Paraph. on Revel. Chap. xxi. with the note thereon, ver. 5.

† Ver. 15. *Hath written unto you*, viz. To you Jews, Hebrews, in his epistle to the Hebrews, Chap. ii. 28.—x. 23,—35, 37. See Dr. Mill's Prolegom. § 85, 86, &c.

‡ *Ev' ois*, in which discourses: Or rather, as some MSS. read it, *Ev' ois*, in which epistles.

A. D. 66. as they do also the *other scriptures*, unto *understood*,|| by such as will attend  
 || *δυσωστὰ*, their own destruction. to the predictions of the *prophets*,  
 See Heb. v. or the warnings of *Christ* and his *apostles*; yet, by men  
 11. prejudiced and preposseſſed with notions of *temporal*  
 greatness, and accustomed to vicious principles, are  
 misunderstood and perverted, to wrong and destructive  
 meanings.

17 Ye therefore, be-  
 loved, ſeeing ye know  
*theſe things* before, be-  
 ware leſt ye alſo be-  
 ing led away with the  
 error of the wicked,  
 fall from your own  
 ſtedfaſtneſs.

18 But grow in  
 grace, and in the  
 knowledge of our  
 Lord and Saviour Je-  
 ſus Chriſt: to him be  
 glory both now and  
 for ever. Amen.

17. But you, dear brethren, ha-  
 ving better apprehenſions, ought  
 to be watchful, never to be led a-  
 way by their pernicious doctrines,  
 nor by any hardships whatever,  
 diſcouraged from your profeſſion.

18. On the contrary, endeavour  
 continually to improve in the true  
 faith and practice of the religion  
 of your Lord and Saviour *Jeſus*  
*Chriſt*; to whom be aſcribed all  
 honour and glory, now and for e-  
 ver. Amen.

A P A R A -

---

A  
P A R A P H R A S E

ON THE  
FIRST EPISTLE GENERAL

OF  
S T. J O H N.

---

P R E F A C E.

THERE being no reasonable dispute against St John's being the Author of these epistles, it will be needful only to observe something concerning the people to *whom*, the time *when*, and the occasion upon *which*, they were written.

§ 1. St. John being one of those Apostles, whose main <sup>To whom.</sup> business was to convert the Jews \*, as that of Paul and \* Gal. ii. 9. Barnabas was to preach to the Gentiles and Jews together, in foreign parts; and, it being agreed on by antiquity, that he exercised his ministry in the parts of *Asia the Great*, after he had left *Judea*; and those of the *Lesser Asia*, after the death of St. Peter and St. Paul; these circumstances with the strain of these writings themselves, render it sufficiently clear that this *first epistle* was directed to the Jewish Christians (not *excluding* the Gentile ones) of those provinces in *general*; as the *two latter* were, from  
the

the one to the *elect Lady*, the other to *Gaius* in particular. Though from what *place* they were dated, must be confessed a secret, from the perfect silence of all ancient writings concerning it.

The time. § 2. His mentioning the *last hour*, i. e. *Christianity* abolishing the *Jewish* dispensation, along with the *Antichrists* and false prophets that our Saviour foretold would be the forerunners of the destruction of that nation, seem most strongly to intimate (if not absolutely conclude) the *time* of this *First Epistle* to have been before the destruction of *Jerusalem*; and is, therefore, I think, with the most probability, placed by Dr. Whitby, in or about the year 67 or 68.

The occasion. § 3. The incurable obstinacy, wickedness and rage of the infidel *Jews* which we have observed, in the *prefaces* to several of the foregoing *epistles*, to have been growing up to a desperate height, and wherewith the *Jewish Christians* were, in several respects, too much tainted, was now so far advanced in its wretched effects, as to shoot out into several pernicious *heresies* in the Christian Church: Simon Magus, the head of these *hereticks*, was followed by the lewd train of the *Nicholaitans*, *Cerinthians*, *Ebionites*, *Menandrians*, *Gnosticks*, &c. most of them probably of *Jewish* extraction, and all possessed with the wicked notion of their Zealots. The vile maxims wherewith they had infected the Christian Church, as we learn from the earliest antiquity, were such as these \*.

(A) 1. That

---

\* I will here refer the reader to such few passages of the ancient christian writers, relating to the opinions and practices of these *hereticks*, as appear plainly to be the true key to St. John's epistle.

(A) Thus Irenæus, Lib. I. Chap. 20. "Simon Magus taught, that they who hoped in him needed not take any further care; but might live as they pleased—Accordingly the priests of their mysteries live uncleanly." And Lib. I. 24. "the *Carpocratians* lead a life of luxury—And say, that actions are good or bad only in the opinions of men." Again, Lib. I. 27. "As for the *Nicholaitans*—They live disorderly; as teaching that fornication, &c. are indifferent things. Wherefore the text says,—The deeds of the *Nicholaitans*, which I hate. Revel ii. 6.

1. That meer *external* profession, and the privileges (A)  
of being of the *true church*, would justify and save men,  
whatever their life and practice were. Against this the  
Apostle urges, 1 Epist. i. 1—5. to the end. Chap. ii.  
1—8—15, 16, 17. Chap. iii. 3—12. Chap. v. 1, 3, 4.

2. That those privileges would warrant the most viru- (B)  
lent and uncharitable behaviour toward all that differed  
from them. Against this St. John warns them in this  
1 Epist. chap. ii. 9—11. Chap. iii. 10. to the end.  
Chap. iv. 7, 8—11, 12—20, 21.

3. That the man Jesus was not *Christ*, was not *the* (C)  
*Son of God*, and that *Christ* did not *really* and *actually* live  
and suffer in our flesh, but in appearance only. This is  
confuted, 1 Epist. i. 1—5. Chap. ii. 23 to 27. Chap.  
Chap. iii. 1—7—14, 15, 16. Chap. v. 1—5, 16—20.  
Chap. iv. 1, 2, 3.

4. That, to avoid *persecution*, it was lawful for *Chris-* (D)  
*tians* to dissemble their faith, to deny *Christ*, and to join  
in *idolatrous* worship : against which are the warnings of  
Chap. v. 16—21.

§ 4. Against these pernicious principles, then prevail- Antichrist  
ing were the several parts of these *epistles* levelled, and who?  
from

(B) Iren. Lib. I. 34. "Others of the Gnosticks, say, that  
"Cain—with Esau, Corah, and the Sodomites were allied  
"to them." Ignat. Epist. ad Philad. §. "Avoid the impure  
"Nicholaitans, those lovers of pleasure, those calumniators."  
And Tertullian de Prescrip. Hær. §. 47. *They magnify*  
Cain [*the murderer.*]

(C) Thus Iren. Lib. I. Cap. 25. Cerinthus taught, that  
*Christ* [the word] descended from *Jesus* [the man] at his *bap-*  
*tism*; but afterwards flew away from *Jesus*; and *Jesus* suf-  
fered and rose again, but *Christ* was impassible: But, says he,  
Lib. III. Cap. 18. "St. John knew but *one* and the *same*  
"word of God, namely, He that was the *only begotten*, who  
"was *Incarnate*, even *Jesus Christ* our Lord." See him at  
large in Lib. I. 4. iii, x, xi, xii, xvii, & xviii. Chapters,  
and Lib. IV. 4—16. and elsewhere. So *Origen*. *Hic Christus*  
*natus est, & passus est in Veritate, & non per imaginem;*  
*Vere mortuus est, Vere enim à morte resurrexit,* Proleg. in  
*επι ἀρχ.*

(D) Iren. Lib. I. 27. "As for the Nicholaitans, they  
"live disorderly; as teaching that fornication, and eating  
"what is offered to idols, are indifferent things."

from the observation whereof the *phrases* made use of in them, are to receive their due light. The authors of these wretched errors St. John brands with the name of Antichrists (chap. ii. 18.) The characters given of Antichrist in this epistle, is that of *denying the Father and the Son, or that Jesus was the true Christ* (chap. ii. 22. and iv. 3.) Which being compared with the virulent and persecuting spirit spoken of, and referred to in the several passages of the ii, iii, and iv. chapters, show the people he speaks of, to be the same with St. Paul's *man of sin*, and *wicked one*, 2 Thess. ii. Moreover, there being a plain distinction between St. John's *ὁ ἀντίχριστος* (chap. ii. 22. and iv. 3.) *Great or special Antichrist*, and the *many Antichrists* even *then* come, chap. ii. 18. seems to make it very clear that what these two Apostles spoke of the Jews and Heretical Christians of their *own* times; they in a much higher, and more *eminent* sense intended to mean of those Christian corrupters of the true faith in *after* ages, who by the exorbitant use of the *temporal* and *persecuting* power, would arbitrarily impose such doctrines and practices upon mankind, as contradicted the plain rules and designs of Christianity, and destroyed its credit, *i. e. in effect*, denied its *truth* and authority. See Sir Isaac Newton's Observat. on the Apoc. chap. 2. p. 256, and in many other places of that incomparable book.

Wherefore, that dispute, whether the church of Rome be Antichrist or no, is reduced to a small compass. That she is not the Jewish or Heretical Antichrist, whom St. John affirms to have been *already come* in *his* time, is easily granted. But whether, for almost a thousand years last past, the *inspiration* she has falsely pretended to, the *miracles* she has forged, the monstrous *articles* she has coined, and the *brethren* she has *hated* and persecuted, be not so many, as to make her the *great christian antichrist*, and the *man of sin*, will be no longer a doubt with impartial readers of St. Paul and St. John, than till there arise *another* community that can excel *her* in *error*, *superstition*, and *cruelty*. See and compare Preface to the Theſſalonians, § 4. and see my Paraphrase on the Revelations.



CHAP. I.

*The clear and evident Testimonies of the Life and Actions of Christ, the Ground of our Christian Hope. Mora! Virtue the only Condition of future Happiness, and the chief Mark of a true Christian. Pardon and Salvation by Christ to be had, not by mere external Profession of his Religion, but by Confession of Sins, and Reformation of Life, as the fruit of Faith.*

1 **T**HAT which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled of the word of life:

our enjoying the final blessings promised in it. And particularly to warn you against that notion of theirs, "That Jesus was not that *Christ*, or *Word*, or *Son of God*, who was with the *Father*, before the world was made; and was incarnate and suffered for us here upon earth:" Which I shall do, by laying them before you, as I received them, by undoubted evidences from *Christ*\* himself.

2 (For the life was manifested, and we have seen it, and bear witness, and shew unto you that eternal life which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us.)

3 That which we have seen and heard, declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us; and

1 **M**Y design in this epistle, <sup>Written A. D. 67.</sup> dear brethren, is to preserve you from those false and dangerous notions, spread among you by the Jewish zealots, and such *heretical teachers* in the Christian church, as are corrupted by *their* principles, relating to the doctrines of the *gospel*, and the conditions of

2. & 3. And first, as to the reality and certainty of the *life*, *actions*, and *death* of Christ (whom the infidel Jews deny to have been sent into the world as the true *Messiah*, and these *heretics* pretend to have lived and died in *appearance* only) let me remind you, that these *facts* were the very things determined by God the *Father* concerning Christ, foretold all along by the *prophets*, and now *actually*

\* *απ' αρχῆς.*

A. D. 67. and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ. *tually* fulfilled before the face of the whole Jewish nation, and of us the *apostles* in particular, with the utmost evidences, that a distinct knowledge, and all the demonstrations of our senses can give a thing.\* These we deliver to you as articles, the belief whereof is the fundamental condition of your sharing with us in the happy privileges of being the *church* and children of God the *Father*, thro' Christ his *son*; and of enjoying the future and eternal felicity promised in his *gospel*.

\* See John i.  
10—14.

4 And these things write we unto you, that your joy may be full.

4. My aim therefore is, that by giving you a repeated assurance, and full satisfaction in these important truths, you may, with perfect chearfulness, and undaunted vigour, persevere in the profession of them, against all the malice and insinuations of these corrupt *teachers*.

5 This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all.


6 If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lye, and do not the truth:

5. & 6. Now, as to the *doctrines* of the Christian religion, the main purpose, and sum total of them is this, *viz.* that as *God* is a being absolutely holy and perfect in goodness, the only original of truth and righteousness, without the least possible mixture of moral impurity; the absolute condition of mens enjoying his favour, or of expecting happiness from him is, the imitation of these his moral perfections. And consequently, for any people to profess themselves members of his *church*, while they indulge themselves in such instances of lewdness and immorality (as do the false *teachers*|| of these times) is to act in direct contradiction both to his divine nature and revelation.

|| See the  
Pref. § 3,

7 But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.

7. That, therefore, the favour of God, and the privilege of being members of his true *church*, by the full pardon of our past sins, procured for us by the death and sufferings of his son *Jesus Christ*, runs upon this same condition,

tion, of endeavouring, as much as in us lies, to conform A. D. 66. our tempers and practice to this divine pattern and ex- ample.

8 If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.

9 If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

10 If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

*sinners*, and is principally designed to bring them to the humble confession and sincere reformation of every wicked practice; and so to depend upon the divine promise for perfect pardon and salvation.


8.9.&10. So that, for any Christian to embrace that notion of the Jewish zealots and heretics, *that mere external profession, and barely joining one's self to the true religion, renders a man pure and acceptable to God, whatever his dispositions and practices be*, and that there is really no such thing as *sin* and *guilt* in the world; at least, none amongst their party; is to put the most fatal delusion upon himself, by giving *God* the lye, and contradicting the nature of the *gospel*-religion; which supposes men to be

## CHAP. II.

*The same Argument continued to ver. 8. The virulent and uncharitable Temper of the Jewish zealots and heretical Christians condemned. Christian Love and Charity called a new Commandment, and why? This Virtue an essential Property of a true Christian. A Warning against the prevalent Love of temporal Greatness and Pleasures. The Jewish Dispensation is at an End, and the Christian Religion succeeds in its Place. Antichrist was foretold to come among Christians. The Jewish Zealots, and heretical Christians in St. John's Time are, in some Sense, called Antichrists. The first Original of them. Cautions against their Errors.*

1 MY little children, these things write I unto you, that ye

1. & 2. MY purpose then is to\* Chap. i. 5, arm you against the<sup>6-10.</sup> vicious principles\* of these men. Indulge

A. D. 67. ye sin not. And if  any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous:

2 And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for *the sins* of the whole world.

Indulge yourselves in no instance of gross and habitual sin: And you may, then whether *Jewish* or *Gentile* Christians, depend, that both your past transgressions, and all the future failings of your lives, committed by human frailty, ignorance, or surprize, shall, upon your true repentance, be fully pardoned, by the intercession of *Jesus* Christ, our great *advocate* with *God the Father*: the merits of whose sufferings, and power of whose intercession, is not confined to the believers of the *Jewish* nation (as their *zealots* vainly imagine) but extends itself to *all* sincere Christians, of what denomination soever.

3 And hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments.

4 He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him.

5 But whoso keepeth his word, in him verily is the love of God perfected: hereby know we that we are in him.

6 He that saith he abideth in him, ought himself also so to walk, even as he walked,

3, 4, 5, & 6. Look therefore upon a careful obedience to the *moral* commands of the gospel, as the best and surest character of a true Christian.\* To imitate the life, and follow the example of Christ, was the grand design of our call to his religion. This is truly to love God, and to be beloved of him. To pretend to be his *people*, and yet live contrary to the *moral* and plainest perfections of his *nature*, is, to pretend to perfect contradictions.

7. In

---

\* The common reader may observe here, once for all, that these phrases, *to know God*, *to be in him*, *to love God*, *to be in Christ*, *to abide in him*, *to know the truth*, *to be born of God*, *or Christ*, &c. are so many expressions to signify mens being true Christians.

7 Brethren, I write  
\* no new command-  
ment unto you, but  
an old commandment  
which ye had from  
the beginning : the  
old commandment is  
the word which ye  
have heard from the  
beginning.

remind you of, and secure you in it, against the sugges-  
tions of your false teachers.

8 Again, a new  
commandment I write  
unto you, which thing  
‡ is true in him and in  
you: because the dark-  
ness is past, and the  
true light now shineth.

ordinary manner of other people, but with an affection  
proportionable to *that* wherewith *Christ* || hath loved us. || See and  
‡ Now there was never any love like *his*; and conse-<sup>compare</sup>  
quently the *gospel*-religion has advanced and improved <sup>John xiii.</sup>  
*this* duty, and obliged us *christians* to a degree that may  
be called *new*, and by an argument that is *proper* to us. <sup>15—34, 35.</sup>

9 He that saith he  
is in the light, and  
hateth his brother, is  
in darkness, even un-  
til now.

10 He

7. In thus pressing you to the A. D. 67.  
observance of this great point, in  
\* *general*, I propose nothing *new*  
to you, nothing but what you  
must needs know to be the main  
purpose of your *christianity*. No-  
thing but what *Christ* our master  
has taught us, in his own express  
words, John xiv. 21, 23.—xv. 10.

And my business *now* is, only to

8. Only let me remind you,  
that *our* duty of *love* and *charity* to  
our fellow-*christians*, hath some-  
thing both in the *degree* of it, and  
the *obligation* to it, *peculiar* to the  
*christian* religion. *Christians* are  
to love each other, not after the

9, 10, & 11. Wherefore, 'tis an  
effect of the most malicious pre-  
judice and stupid ignorance of  
plain truth, for any man to pro-  
fess himself a true disciple of  
B b *Christ*,

\* Ver. 7. *No new commandment.* Which being under-  
stood to refer to the foregoing discourse, makes the clearest  
sense and connexion. Or else thus; the duty of *love* was  
not *new* to such as knew it to be enjoined by *Christ* himself;  
but only as *christianity* has raised that duty *higher* than any  
*other* religion.

‡ Which thing, (*i. e.* the newness of the commandment)  
*is true in him and in you.* In *him*, as having set us a *peculiar*  
example: And in us *christians*, as having from that example  
a *peculiar obligation* to it,

A. D. 67. 10 He that loveth  
 his brother abideth in  
 the light, and there  
 is none occasion of  
 stumbling in him.

|| See the  
 Pref. § 3.

11 But he that hateth his brother, is in darkness, and walketh in darkness, and knoweth not whither he goeth, because that darkness hath blinded his eyes.

11 I write unto you, little children, because your sins are forgiven you for his name's sake.

13 I write unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning. I write unto you, young men, because ye have overcome the wicked one. I write unto you, little children, because ye have known the Father.

14 I have written unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning. I have written unto you, young men, because ye are strong, and the word of God abideth in you, and ye have overcome the wicked one.

them to be wanting in these essential duties, or be drawn from them by the false teachers.

*Christ*, while he harbours revengeful thoughts,|| and uncharitable principles toward other *men*. On the contrary, a kind behaviour, and tender disposition toward all our *brethren*, is one of the best instances of *christian* perfection, and secures us from all the scandal and mischievous effects of a censorious and persecuting temper.

12, 13, & 14. The cautions I here give you, ought to be equally regarded by all *degrees* of christian professors. The *new converts*, and *younger* christians are to consider themselves as newly put into a state of salvation, the pardon of sin, and the favour of God, through *Jesus Christ*; and endeavour to confirm themselves in it, by the careful practice of true christian virtue. Such as are come to more *maturity* in their *profession*, and are in the strength and vigour of their *age*, have a great advantage, and ought to employ the utmost of that vigour in resisting the utmost temptations of the *devil*, and perfecting their conquest over him, and all his wicked instruments. And the *aged* christians cannot but have so clear a knowledge of *God*, and the revelation of his will by *Jesus Christ*, during the long season from their first conversion, that it would be utterly inexcusable for

15. & 16. To

15 Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him.

16 For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world.

17 And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doth the will of God, abideth forever.

habitual practice of *christian virtue* is, what will for ever continue with, and be a blessing and an ornament to you.

18 Little children, it is the last time, and as ye have heard that Antichrist shall come, even now are there many Antichrists, whereby we know that it is the last time.

*corruptions*\* that would be brought into the christian church, by men of *temporal*, and secular designs; so what you see of it fulfilled *already*, in the practices of the *Jewish Zealots* and *heretical teachers* crept into the church, is sufficient to convince you of the truth of these prophecies, to confirm you in your *christianity*, and secure you from their dangerous infection.

15. & 16. To proceed then: en- A. D. 67.  
deavour to wean your affections from all immoderate desires of the pleasures, riches, dignities and preferments of this world. Shew no sinful compliance to attain them; love them not in any higher degree, than to be ready to part with any of them, for the sake of *Christ* and his religion. For all such immoderate affections of temporal things, are utterly inconsistent with the love of God and true religion.

17. And, it should serve to cure you of all such love for the greatest pleasures of this kind, to consider how fading, unsatisfactory and short they are. Whereas the

18. My dear christians, the *Jewish* dispensation is now past, and the *christian* religion succeeds in its place; the religion that is to take place in the *last age*, or *latter days* of the world, as the ancient *prophets* foretold: And as our saviour himself, and we his apostles have foretold you of *great*

B b 2

19. The

\* See the Pref. § 4. and the Pref. to 1 Theff. § 4. with 2 Theff. chap. ii.

A. D. 67. 19 They went out from us, but they were not of us: for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but *they went out*,\* that they might be made manifest, that they were † not all of us.

|| See Acts xv. 1—24. Gal. ii. 4. 2 Cor. xi. 13.

19. The first broachers of these lewd errors, pretended to come with a commission from the college of *apostles* at *Jerusalem*, || to preach up the necessity of *circumcision* and the *ceremonial law* to christian *believers*. And *Simon Magus* himself pretended to be a *christian*, and was baptized (Acts viii. 13.) Had these men been indeed true *christians*, they could

never have been so audacious, as to have forged a commission from *us*, but would have continued to preach the same doctrine with us. In like manner, had *Simon* and his followers been sincere, they would still have followed the *apostles* of Christ: And therefore, by presuming, in so foul a manner, to do quite contrary, 'tis but too plain they were never *true believers* at all.\*

20 But ye have an unction from the holy One, and ye know all things.

† *χρησμα*.

20. But however specious their pretences may now be, I hope *you* are so fully instructed in the great truths, so sensible of the noble † privileges of your religion, and so confirmed in it by the gifts and endowments of the *Holy Ghost*, as not to be in much danger of being perverted by them.

21 I have not written unto you, because ye know not the truth: but because ye know it, and that no lie is of the truth.

22 Who is a liar, but he that denieth that Jesus is the

|| See v. 18. Christ? he is Antichrist and the Pref. § 4.

21. And therefore I *now* represent the case to you, to let you see how great a sin it would be in *you*, ever to hearken to people so full of impudence and falsehood.

22. & 23. 'Tis true indeed, the corruption of the *christian* faith is not yet come to its height: The *great Antichrist* || is not yet come:

But

\* *That they might be made manifest*: ἵνα φανερωθωσιν; So that they appear.

† *Not all of us*; ὅτι ἐκ ἡμῶν πάντες; That none of them were of us. So οὐκ ἔστιν σαρκὶς, is, No flesh, Matth. xxiv. 22. Mark xiii. 20.



christ that denied the Father and the Son.

23 Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: *but he that acknowledgeth the Son hath the Father also.*

maintain and impose such principles as utterly destroy the design of his religion; for they affirm, that *Jesus*, who suffered upon the cross, was a mere *man*; not *Christ* the *word* and *Son of God*; which is as much as in effect to deny *Christ himself*, and consequently God the *Father* that sent him. (See the Pref. §. 3.)

24 Let that therefore abide in you, which ye have heard from the beginning: if that which ye have heard from the beginning shall remain in you, ye also shall continue in the Son; and in the Father.

25 And this is the promise that he hath promised to us, even eternal life.

26 These things have I written unto you, concerning them that seduce you.

27 But \*the anointing which ye have received of him, abideth in you, and ye need not that any man teach you: But, as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him.

But nothing can be more like him, A. D. 67. nor more truly deserve to be branded with his titles and characters, than those turbulent *zealots* of the *Jewish* faction, some of whom, against all the divine evidences given them, flatly deny Christ to be the true *Messiah*; and the rest

maintain and impose such principles as utterly destroy the design of his religion; for they affirm, that *Jesus*, who suffered upon the cross, was a mere *man*; not *Christ* the *word* and *Son of God*; which is as much as in effect to deny *Christ himself*, and consequently God the *Father* that sent him. (See the Pref. §. 3.)

24. & 25. Wherefore endeavour to secure your interest in *God* thro' *Christ*, by adhering firmly to the doctrines of *Christianity*, as at first taught to us by *Christ* himself, and by us to *you*. Remember the great *gospel* promise of eternal life and happiness is to be enjoyed only upon *this* condition.

26. & 27. I remind you of these things (as I said, ver. 20. and 21.) to arm you the more strongly against the error spread amongst you; but assuring myself the deep sense you have of the great truths and noble \* blessings of your profession, will effectually prevent you from being imposed upon by such palpable deceits.

B b 3

28. And

---

\* Ver 27. *The anointing.* See verse 20.

A. D. 67. 28 And now, little children, abide in him, that when he shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his coming.

† Ver. 24.

29 If ye know that he is righteous, ye know that every one that doeth righteousness is born of him.

29. For, as surely as perfect holiness and purity is the nature of God, so certain is it that they, and none but they, who by mortifying their corrupt passions, strive to imitate him, in the practice of true virtue, shall be accounted his true servants, and eternally rewarded as such.

28. And therefore again † I entreat you, dear disciples, not to forfeit the glories you are to partake of, at the great day of *Christ's* judgment, by suffering yourselves to be misled into any sinful courses.

29. For, as surely as perfect holiness and purity is the nature of God, so certain is it that they, and none but they, who by mortifying their corrupt passions, strive to imitate him, in the practice of true virtue, shall be accounted his true servants, and eternally rewarded as such.

### C H A P. III.

*The great privilege of Christianity. Conformity to the Moral perfections of the divine nature, is our duty here, and will be our happiness hereafter. Moral obedience is therefore the most essential mark of a true Christian. Immortality denotes a wicked man, be his profession what it will. Charity is one of the special instances of Christian morality. An obedient Christian has the undoubted testimony of his own conscience, confirmed by the gifts of the Holy Spirit, that he is acceptable to God as a true disciple of Jesus Christ.*

‡ Chap. ii. 27, 28, 29.

**B**Ehold what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God! therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not.

tators of his divine excellencies. No wonder therefore the

1. **I** have been ‡ exhorting you to secure to yourselves the privileges of your *christianity*, by the careful practice of its commands. A thing you cannot fail to do, would you seriously consider how noble and valuable a blessing it is to be made the children of God, members of his church, and imitators of his divine excellencies. No wonder therefore the

the generality of mankind should have so despicable a notion of us, *christians*, while they have so little apprehensions of the nature and will of that *God*, whose servants we are. A. D. 67.

2 Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be : but we know, that when he shall appear, we shall be like him : for we shall see him as he is.

ful resemblance of him, wherein our perfection and happiness chiefly consists.

3 And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as he is pure. human infirmity will permit, to imitate *God*, by the practice of *christian* virtue in this life.

4 Whosoever committeth sin, transgresseth also the law : for sin is the transgression of the law.

5 And ye know that he was manifested to take away our sins, and in him is no sin.

to indulge any known and gross sin, is to act against the very purpose of *Christ's* coming into the world, which was nothing else but to free us of the guilt, habit, and power of sin.

6 Whosoever abideth in him, sinneth not : whosoever sinneth, hath not seen him, neither known him.


7 Little

2. Meanwhile, let us duly esteem the happiness proposed to us. And, though the *future* perfection of it be such as surpasses the reach of human conception, yet thus much in general, is plain and satisfactory to us, that by arriving to a clearer knowledge of his divine nature, we shall be exalted to that delightful

3. And, if this be our expected enjoyment, all that hope for it, must begin, *now* to lay a foundation for it, by striving, as far as

4. & 5. Wherefore 'tis most evident, that the wilful and habitual practice of those vices now so much encouraged by the *heretical teachers*, is perfectly destructive of the end of our *christianity*. He that deliberately breaks the divine *law*, defeats the very means and method of resembling the divine *nature*. And

6, 7, & 8. And be not imposed upon by the loudest boasts, and most specious pretences of these wicked men, to a higher and deeper *knowledge* of *God* than all others. A good *Christian* and  
B b 4 a lewd

A. D 67.  7 Little children, let no man deceive you: he that doth righteousness, is righteous, even as he is righteous.

8 He that committeth sin, is of the devil: for the devil sinneth from the beginning: for this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

9 Whosoever is born of God, doth not commit sin: for his seed remaineth in him, and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

10 In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doth not righteousness, is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

11 For this is the <sup>\* See chap. ii. 8. &c.</sup> message that ye heard from the beginning, that we should love one another.

12 Not as Cain, *who* was of that wicked one, and slew his brother: and wherefore slew he him? because his own works were evil, and his brother's righteous.

13 Marvel

a lewd *liver*, are direct contradictions. And, as *purity* of life is the mark of *God's* children, so does a *vicious* course demonstrate a man to be a servant of the *devil*, the first author of all wickedness; and is a manifest abetting of his impious power and contrivance, which *Christ* the Son of God came into the world on purpose to countermine and destroy.

9. & 10. In fine, while a man preserves his *christian* principle, and answers the character of a true member of *God's* church, he can never be guilty of *deliberate* and *habitual* vice. Make it therefore a sure *test* to whom a man belongs, in whose service he is listed, and from whom he must expect his wages; whether of *God*, or the *devil*, by the good or wicked practices of his *life*, by his behaviour towards *God*, and toward his *brethren*.

11. His *brethren*, I say, or the doctrine of *Christ* \* and all his *apostles*, do most plainly shew *christian-charity* to be the *peculiar* virtue of our religion.

12. & 13. You know what it was that provoked that wicked creature *Cain* to murder his own brother, viz. the antipathy of a *vicious* to a *religious* temper. So it is with you *now*, the generality of the corrupted world hate you upon the *same* principle,

13 Marvel not, my brethren, if the world hate you. ciple, and because the purity of your lives are a standing reproach upon their impieties, and you ought the less to be surprised at it. A. D. 67

14 We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren: he that loveth not his brother abideth in death.

15 Whosoever hateth his brother, is a murderer, and ye know that no murderer hath eternal life abiding in him. 14. & 15. Bear it therefore patiently, since the charitable disposition that possesses you, is so sure a mark of your being true disciples of Christ, and entitled to the future happiness promised in his *gospel*. As, on the contrary, the spiteful and malicious temper of those *zealots* demonstrates them to be in an unregenerate state; nay, in the eye of God, (who judges by the inward principle of the heart, and not by the outward actions only) to be no less than murderers, and consequently void of all true hopes of eternal salvation.

16 Hereby perceive we the love of God,\* because he laid down his life for us: and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren. 16. When you consider that amazing instance of divine love, in the death of \* Christ, for the redemption of mankind, you cannot think it too much, that, in imitation of so wondrous an example, Christians should be obliged, not only to bear and forbear, but to be ready to offer their own *lives*, whenever the religion of Christ, the good of his church, and the welfare of their christian brethren, calls them to it.

17 But whoso hath this world's good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his 17. How infinitely short of *this* love then, nay, how contrary to *this* divine pattern are those men, who, while they have power and ability

---

\* Ver. 16. *Hereby perceive we the love [of God.]* Note, The words [*of God*] are not in the Greek: The text is, ἐν τούτῳ ἐγνώκαμεν τὴν ἀγάπην—*Hereby we have experienced love, i. e. the greatest love, because he, i. e. Christ, laid down his life for us.*

A. D. 67. his bowels of compassion from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him?

18. My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue, but in deed, and in truth.

19 And hereby we know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before him.

20 For if our heart condemn us, God is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things.

21 Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, *then* have we confidence towards God.

affured, that *God*, who knows him better than he does himself, cannot fail to be his more severe judge and revenger.

22 And whatsoever we ask, we receive of him, because we keep his commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in his sight.

and in the best manner.

23 And this is his commandment, that we should believe on the name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love one another, as he gave us commandment.

24 And

ability to do good, remain unmoved at the wants of their fellow Christians?

18, Remember, dear brethren, the charity of a christian disciple is not to express itself in fair pretences, and kind speeches, but in *actions* of bounty and liberality.

19, 20, & 21. This will shew us to be christians indeed; and while the impartial testimony, and inward sense of our own consciences, assure us of the sincere performance of our duty; we may safely conclude, that *God*, the searcher of hearts, and standard of all truth, will approve of, and reward us. And, on the contrary, whoever, by the clear conviction of his own mind, knows and feels himself to be a hypocritical transgressor of his *moral* duty, must be

22. This sincerity will warrant our perfect dependance upon God, and the sense of having done our duty, to the best of our power, fully secures us, that all our christians *prayers* shall be answered in the most seasonable time,

23, & 24. For, in short, true faith in the doctrine of Christ, and true charity to *mankind*, especially to our *christian* brethren, is the sum total of our duty. And *you*, that have already duly performed it, have a sufficient pledge and

24 And he that keepeth his commandments, dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby we know that he abideth in us, by the Spirit which he hath given us. and *earnest* of your acceptance with God, as true disciples of Christ, by the gifts and graces of his *holy spirit* conferred upon you. A. D. 67.

## CHAP. IV.

*A Caution against false Prophets and Pretenders to Inspiration. The Rule whereby to judge of them. The Exhortation to Love and Charity renewed, as the proper Badge and Token of a true Christian.*

I BELOVED, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.

*heretical teachers* of these times, all striving to gain belief, by diabolical delusions and forgeries; that it highly concerns you to look well, and examine them thoroughly to prevent your being imposed upon.

2 Hereby know ye the spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God.

3 And every spirit that confesseth \* not that

I. THE time being now come, wherein the *Jews* expect the appearance of their *Messiah*, according to the scripture *prophecies*; there are so many *impostors*, that set themselves up for *Christs*, and so many pretenders to inspiration and miracles, among the

2, & 3. Now, you have a safe rule, whereby to judge of all pretences to *prophecy, miracles, or inspiration* of any kind. Your *christian* religion, both as to the life, doctrine and death, &c. of *Christ*, being, in so ample and unexceptionable a manner, confirmed by God;

\* Ver. 3. Confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. He points at Cerinthus. See the Pref. § 3.

**A. D. 67.** that Jesus Christ \* is come in the flesh, is not of God: and this is that *spirit* of anti-christ, whereof you have heard that it should come, and even now already is it in the world.

God; you ought to conclude, that, whatever *Jewish* or *heretical* pretender sets up against the great truth of the incarnation of Jesus Christ,\* denying him to be the true *Messiah*, or saying, that our Jesus is not the real and very Christ, the *Word*, and *Son of God*;

let him pretend to what *gifts* and *miracles* he will, to confirm it by, is an *impostor*, acting by *diabolical* delusions and conjurations; and one of those very *antichrists* and false *prophets*, the forerunners of the great *antichrist* foretold by Christ and the apostles. On the contrary, whatever Christian works any *miracles* in confirmation of the true articles of our *faith*, so uncontestably established *before-hand*, must be thought to perform them by the *spirit of God*; it being impossible to conceive, the *devil* would lend *his* power toward supporting a religion so opposite and destructive to his *own* kingdom; or, that *Christ* should give the power of *his spirit* to such as embrace not his true *faith*.||

|| See and compare  
1 Cor. xii. 3.

4 Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world.

to what these worldly-minded *impostors* can pretend to, in favour of their false doctrines.

5 They are of the world; therefore speak they of the world, and the world heareth them.

6 We

4. Thus, the powers of the *holy Ghost* displayed by Christ, conferred on us his apostles, and residing yet upon many members of your several churches, give testimony to *your* religion, far superior to what these worldly-minded *impostors* can pretend to, in favour of their false doctrines.

5. & 6. You cannot but perceive too, an essential mark of distinction between *these*, and a truly *christian* prophet: The *one* have no other views but of *temporal* power, great-

---

\* That Jesus Christ is come in the flesh: Or thus, Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸν ἐν σαρκὶ ἐληλυθότα, That Jesus is the Christ come in the flesh. Dr. Mill says many copies read it ὁ λόγος τοῦ Ἰησοῦ, which dissolveth Jesus. Of which see the Notes on § 3. of the Pref. to this Epistle.



6 We are of God : he that knoweth God, heareth us ; he that is not of God, heareth not us. Hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error.

good, and the love of true *virtue* ; and must be approved of, by all that have a just relish of God, and true goodness ; as on the contrary, it is no wonder to see the false *teachers* of those times followed and thronged by the majority that are of the same temper with themselves \*.

7 Beloved, let us love one another : for love is of God ; and every one that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God.

8 He that loveth not, knoweth not God ; for God is love.

blinding *him*, and most

9 In this was manifested the love of God towards us, because that God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him.

10 Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins.

11 Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another.

the welfare of all those whom God was pleased to set so high a value on ; and

greatness and dominion ; no other notions of *Christ* but that of a temporal *monarch*, to raise and aggrandize the *Jewish* nation by the spoil and destruction of the rest of *mankind*. Whereas a true *christian* is actuated by the hope of *spiritual*

good, and the love of true *virtue* ; and must be approved of, by all that have a just relish of God, and true goodness ; as on the contrary, it is no wonder to see the false *teachers* of those times followed and thronged by the majority that are of the same temper with themselves \*.

7 & 8. As therefore, *we* justly pretend to be the true children of God, let it be our special care to give a proof of it, by the imitation of his peculiar attribute of *love* and *mercy*, so abundantly displayed to all mankind, and to us *Christians* in particular ; without which, we fail of the chiefest instance of resem-

bling *him*, and most plainly shew we are none of his.

9. & 10. That *act* of divine love in procuring the pardon and salvation of a sinful world, by sending the very *Son* of God to become *man* for our sakes, has this consideration, to magnify it beyond all comparison, that it began on *God's* part, was voluntary and free, without the least merit or obligation on *our* part to incline him to it.

11. And surely such an unparalleled instance of *heavenly* compassion to *sinful creatures*, ought to make us express the tenderest regard to the welfare of all those whom God was pleased to set so high a value on ; and to demonstrate the sense we have of

\* See and

compare John vi. 45. & vii. 47.

A. D. 67. of it, by shewing mercy, even to such as least deserve  
 it at our hands.

12 No man hath seen God at any time. If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and his love is perfected in us.

13 Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit.

your very senses, and move you, by the strongest and most immediate impressions. So that, if you do not perform the easier, 'tis not to be imagined you should discharge the more difficult part of this duty: The *one*, therefore, is the proper test of the *other*. We shew whose children we truly are, by the likeness of our dispositions; and God, accordingly, confirms us for his own, by the gifts and graces of his holy Spirit bestowed upon us.

14 And we have seen, and do testify, that the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world.

15 Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God.

and actually sent into the world, for the redemption of mankind by his death and sufferings. An article most essentially necessary to be embraced by every Christian; and whoever denies it, deserves not that character, nor is entitled to any privileges of God's true church.||

|| See Chap.  
 i. 1, 2, 3, &  
 here ver. 4.  
 3.

16 And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in

12, & 13. 'Tis not enough to say, you love God, in return for his love to you, unless you give evidence of it by your charity to your fellow christians. God himself is not the object of your senses, and can affect your thoughts no way, but by laborious and raised meditations; whereas your fellow christians, *their* wants and miseries strike

14, & 15. And by the extraordinary and miraculous powers of this holy Spirit are we qualified to demonstrate, and have beyond all exception evidenced the truth of those facts, whereof we apostles were eye-witnesses, viz. That Jesus is the true Messiah, the very Son of God, the Word, the Christ, who was with the father,

16, & 17. By firmly adhering to this *fundamental* truth of his religion, and by the practice of that love and *charity*, so especially enjoined in it, and which is the principal

in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

17 Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as he is, so are we in this world.

edly expect the glorious reward he has promised at the great day of final judgment.

18 There is \* no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment: he that feareth, is not made perfect in love.

a man has not a due and grateful apprehension of the mercy, truth, and love of God, through *Christ*, to us; or, that he is not truly conscious of his having sincerely performed the duties of his profession.

19 We love him, because he first loved us.

of love to us and all

20 If a man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar; for he that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, how can he love God whom he hath not seen?

22 And

pal instance of our conformity to his excellencies, and of our return A D. 67.

of gratitude to him; in short, by loving our *brethren*, as God loved *us*, and being ready to suffer for *their* sakes, as *Christ* suffered for *us* all; we prove ourselves his true *disciples*, in full and perfect communion with him, and may *assur-*

18. Nay, we not only then safely *may*, but *ought*, to depend upon this \* reward, with the utmost assurance, joy, and satisfaction; for, to be diffident, fearful, and distracted about the certainty of our future happiness, is a sign, either that a

19. Infinite reason have we to love, trust, and depend upon *him*, that has given us such an instance of love to us and all mankind.

20. & 21. Only remember again, that we must testify our regards to *God* by charity and compassion to our *brethren*. Not only the express command of *Christ*, but the very reason of the *thing* requires it. For, as I said (ver. 12.) if we love not them, whose persons and wants strike and affect our *senses*, we can hardly

---

\* *No fear in love.* Fear here seems, in the most natural construction, to stand opposed to *boldness* in the foregoing verse.

A. D. 67. 21 And this commandment have we from him, that he who loveth God, love his brother also.

hardly be supposed to be carried with much affection to *him*, with whom we cannot converse but at a distance, who is neither the object of our *senses*, nor within the compass of our *charity*.

## C H A P. V.

*The argument of Chap. iv. 1, 2, 3, &c. resumed; viz. The certainty of Jesus being the Messiah and Saviour of mankind; and that the truth and sincerity of man's profession is to be judged of by their belief of it, and the good effect it has upon their tempers and practices. The divine evidences of this great article. The witnesses in heaven, and on earth. The unexceptionableness of this argument, especially to the Jews. The belief of it the indispensible condition of future happiness, and of the acceptance of our christian prayers. The sin unto death, what? Directions what to do in that case. True Christian principles sufficient to keep any man from such sin. Christianity the true religion, and utterly inconsistent with all acts of heathen idolatry.*

\* Chap. iv. 1. **W**Hosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ, is born of God, and every one that loveth him that begat, loveth him also that is begotten of him.

1. **I** Observed to you \* before, that the truth of Christ's *Messiahship* was the rule whereby you are to judge of mens pretences in religious matters. Keep then to that *rule*, and be assured, that to deny *Jesus* to be the real *Christ*, the *Son* of God, and *Saviour* of mankind, is in effect to deny God the *Father*, that sent him into the world for that purpose. And, on the contrary, sincerely to embrace the *one*, is to embrace the *other*.

2. & 3. And

2 By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God and keep his commandments.\*

3 For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments: and his commandments are not grievous.

4 For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, *even* our faith.

5 Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?

6 This is he that came by water and blood, *even* Jesus Christ; not by water only, but by water and blood: and it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth.

cles at his crucifixion,† when at the shedding of his in-†The blood.  
nocent blood, we saw both water and blood come out of his side; the *sun* was darkened, the *earth* trembled, and

VOL. II.

C c

the

2. & 3. And withal, you must <sup>A. D. 67.</sup> never forget, that charity to our *brethren* is one principal \* test of our being true disciples of *Christ*; as 'tis a chief instance of our practical obedience to his commands, *without* which, all external profession of religion is insignificant, and mere pretence; but *with* it, christianity will prove the most pleasant and profitable profession.

4. & 5. The christian will, then, find his faith in Jesus as the true *Messiah*, the *Son of God*, to answer its true and intended effects, *viz.* to set him above the vanities and unlawful pleasures of this world, make him despise its grandeur, conquer all its temptations, by filling him with assurance of a better state: a perfection too high for any but true christians to arrive to.

6. Nor are the effects and influences of this \* great truth more <sup>\* Ver. 1.</sup> excellent and noble, than is the ground and foundation of it strong and certain. The testimonies †† The water given him at his *baptism*, when God, by a voice from heaven, declared him *to be his beloved Son, the saviour of mankind*: The mira-

\* Ver. 2. *By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God.*—Note: The context and the apostle's argument plainly show, that these words are transposed: The reading should be, *By this we know that we love God—when we love the children of God.* And I have paraphrased them accordingly.

A. D. 67. the veil of the temple was rent. The signs || and wonders done by him and by others in his name, are all, I say, || The Spirit. testimonies of the authority of his person and mission, most unexceptionable, as being evidences of that holy Spirit that cannot deceive us.

7 For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the holy Ghost: and these three are one.

8 And there are three that bear witness in earth, the spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one.

beyond all contradiction. For, as in heaven there are three divine persons, the *Father*, the *Son*, and the *holy Spirit*; so do the three forementioned \*testimonies given of Christ, while he was upon earth, concur in the full demonstration of this great truth: These powers and miracles of the *holy Ghost* incontestably showing the *Father* to have sent him, and the *Son* to have actually come into the world, for the salvation of mankind.

9 If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater: \* for this is the witness of God, which he hath testified of his Son.

10 He that believeth on the Son of God, hath the witness in

7, & 8. In all controversies about human affairs, the positive testimony of two or three credible witnesses is thought sufficient to determine the truth in any court: and the *Jews* allowed it by their own law to be so. So that the evidence of *Jesus being the true Messiah* and the very Christ, the *Word* and *Son of God*, who died upon the cross, is, according to their own notions, established

9. Now, if two or three credible (though yet fallible) men are to be depended upon, when concurring and clear in their evidence; how much more ought we to rely upon the testimony \* of the infallible God?

10. All sincere believers cannot but reflect upon the sufficiency of this testimony, with the utmost comfort

---

\* For this is the witness of God—ὅτι αὐτὴ ἐστὶν ἡ μαρτυρία τοῦ Θεοῦ. For such, or of this kind, is the witness of God, viz. a three-fold testimony, ver. 6.

in himself: he that believeth not God, hath made him a liar, because he believeth not the record that God gave of his Son.

it, do no less than give God the lye.

11 And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternal life: and this life is his Son.

12 He that hath the Son, hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God, hath not life.

13 These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God.

14 And this is the confidence that we have in him, that if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us.

15 And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him.

16 If any man see his brother sin, a sin *which is* not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death. There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it.

comfort\* and satisfaction. Finding themselves continually confirmed in it, by the gifts and graces of that very Spirit, that in so ample a manner, at first gave it. Whereas such Jews or heretics as deny

A. D. 67.

~ ~

μαρτυρίαν  
ἐν ἑαυτοῖς.

11, & 12. So then, the sum of our Christianity is this: That God has promised to, and provided eternal happiness for good men; and that the indispensable condition of enjoying it, is a sincere belief in Christ incarnate, and in his religion, by all to whom it and its evidences are fairly proposed.

13, 14, & 15. And accordingly, my design in this Epistle was, to satisfy all such true believers of the safety of their future condition; and to encourage them to a firm perseverance in this principle, upon a full assurance that God will deny them nothing that is truly needful for them; but will, in due time and manner, answer all their christian prayers.

16. Before I conclude, I must advise you in one particular more, relating to such offenders amongst you as are struck with any extraordinary sickness† as a divine punishment for any notorious sins. Now, where the offence is not of the most wilful and obstinate kind, where, by the circumstance,

† See and

compare

Gal. vi. 1.

1 Cor. xi.

23. Jam. v.

14, 15.

A. D. 67. you gather that the punishment inflicted was not sent for his destruction, but only to awaken the person to a sense of his miscarriage, and you find him inclined to repentance; in such a case, let the christian ministers attend upon him, interceding with God for him by earnest prayer, which, upon his repentance, shall avail for the pardon of his sin \* and for restoring him to health again. But if you know the person so afflicted, to be struck from heaven, for a malicious, habitual, and incurable degree of scandalous vice and immorality, or for wilful apostacy from the christian religion; in that case, you have no obligation to throw away your prayers upon him, || but may justly leave such a man to the justice of God, as one that has defeated all methods of repentance and salvation.†

|| See Heb. vi. 4, 5, 6. and x. 26, 27.

17 All unrighteousness is sin : and there is a sin not unto death.

17. 'Tis true, every wilful offence against either God or our neighbour, is a breach of the divine law, and, in strict justice,

deserves death. But as you know there were degrees of

† Numbers xxv. 30 31. while others were not, punished with immediate death, Deut. xvii. 2, 3 4, 5, & but admitted of an atonement by sacrifice; so in these cases, Jo. II.

\* He (i. e. God) shall give him life : Or, life shall be given him, i. e. the sinner. The same Hebraism with that of Matth. i. 23. They shall call his name Jesus, i. e. his name shall be called Jesus.

† Ver. 16. I do not say that he shall pray for it; i. e. That you are either not at all to pray for such a person, or if you do, it cannot be with that degree of faith, and assurance of success as in other cases. See and compare James v. 14, 15, 16, 17, 18. Moreover, 'tis possible, these first Christians might not have any certain and absolute signs whereby to distinguish the sin unto death from other sins that were pardonable; or the distempers that were curable, from such as were incurable, by their prayers. And then the design of St John in these words, I do not say that he shall pray for it, is to satisfy them, that, though every instance of their prayers were not equally effectual toward the recovery of sinners, yet the promise in verse 14, 15, was still good; none being exempted from it that had not so sinned as to be doomed by divine justice to present death for it. Of which they might be satisfied by the effect of their prayers.



cases, under the gospel-dispensation, as long as there are remains of true principles and dispositions, and any hopes of true repentance, there is hope of recovery, and a promise of pardon. A. D. 66.

18 We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God, keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

19 And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness.

20 And we know that the Son of God, is come and hath given us an understanding that we may know him that is true: and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life.

21 Little children, keep yourselves from idols, Amen.

tation or example whatever, to be drawn into any act of heathenish and idolatrous \* worship, by forsaking so pure and holy a profession. And may God preserve you ever from it! Amen.

18 In the mean time, no sincere and true christian is, without his own great default, in much danger of falling into such a desperate degree of sin, or of wilful apostacy from the service of Christ to that of Satan.

19. & 20. For to conclude: While the rest of the obstinate and unrepenting world continue enslaved to ignorance, idolatry, sin, and Satan, we christians are fully and happily assured, that we are members of the church of the true God, by sincerely believing in Jesus Christ his Son, who came into the world to teach us the way of true religion, and, being made man, suffered and died, in order to our eternal life and happiness.

21. Which, since he has so fully done, it would be utterly excusable in any christian, by any tempt-

\* See the Pref. § 4.

---

A  
P A R A P H R A S E  
ON THE  
SECOND EPISTLE GENERAL  
OF  
S T. J O H N.

---

PREFACE AND CONTENTS.

To whom. § 1. **B**Y the elect lady, to whom this epistle is directed, we may understand, either some particular person of honourable descent, a friend, and (perhaps) disciple of St. John; or else some christian church; the word elect being so frequently used of the Jewish church in the Old, of Christian churches in the New Testament; and that of children, to signify the members of those collective bodies. The salutation at the close, from the children of the elect sister, ver. 13. seem, indeed, to bid most fairly for this latter acceptation, as signifying a sister-church; as do also his speaking in the plural number, ver. 22. And, whereas the church of Jerusalem was the great original from whence all they of the circumcision at first received the christian doctrine, she, of all others, lays the best claim to this title of (*κυρία*) the mistress or mother-church; though other learned men think it probable to be meant of some Asian church, and most likely that of Philadelphia. I will only add, that St. John, in styling this Christian church a lady, follows the language of the Old Scriptures. Thus Babylon called herself the lady

lady of kingdoms, Isa. xlvii. 5, 7. And the antichristian Babylon is represented as saying in her heart, I sit as a queen, Revel. xviii. 7. What these arrogantly and falsely applied to themselves, the apostle here truly applies to the christian believers.

§ 2. The strain of this epistle, both in its argument, <sup>The Design</sup> and the very expressions, is so clearly the same, in the main, with that of the foregoing, that I refer the reader to the Preface thereto prefixed, for the proper key to them.

§ 3. The shortness of this letter, though to so principal a church, is sufficiently accounted for, from ver. 12 <sup>Why so short.</sup> viz. that the apostle very soon expected to visit that church, and give full instructions in the matters here so briefly handled.

1 THE \* elder unto the elect lady, and her children, whom I love in the truth; and not I only, but also all they that have known the truth;

2 For the truth's sake which dwelleth in us, and shall be with us forever:

3 Grace be with you, mercy *and* peace from God the Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, ‡ in truth and love.

1, & 2. JOHN, the now aged \* <sup>Written A. D. 67.</sup> apostle of Christ, sendeth this epistle to the church of || Jerusalem, to the clergy and people <sup>See the Pref. § 1.</sup> thereof, whom I, and all good christians, cannot but most sincerely esteem and love, for their constancy and perseverance in those gospel-doctrines that will prove of eternal and happy † advantage to us. <sup>† See 1 Pet. i. 23, 25.</sup>

3. Wishing you all divine favours and blessings from God the Father, and from Jesus Christ his only son, our saviour and governor; to preserve you in true faith towards God, and true love towards your christian brethren. ‡

C c 4

4. 'Tis

\* The elder: *πρεσβυτερος*, presbyter, here, and in 1 Pet. v. 1. may be a name of honour and dignity; or, as in Phil. 9. it signifies, aged; and so it fitly expresseth both the apostolical office, and his long continuance in it, he being now at least seventy years of age.

‡ Ver. 3 In truth and love: These words may be connected, either with those immediately foregoing, the Son of the Father, in truth and love; i. e. The author of the true christian religion, so full of love to mankind; or else with, grace, mercy, and peace be with you, as in the Paraphrase: Which I chuse as most agreeable to the verse following.

A. D. 66. 4 I rejoiced greatly that I found of thy children walking in truth, as we have received a commandment from the father.

5 And now, I beseech thee, lady, not as though I wrote a new \* commandment unto thee, but that which we had from the beginning, that we love one another.

6 And this is love; that we walk after his commandments. This is the commandment, that as ye have heard from the beginning, ye should walk in it.

7 For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist.

8 Look to yourselves, † See 1 John iv. 2, 3. the things which we have wrought, but that we receive a full reward. note there.

in appearance; that he was not himself the real word who was with God

4. 'Tis a mighty comfort to me to hear of such a number of your church, that firmly and uncorruptedly adhere to the christian religion, as delivered by Christ and his apostles, from God the Father.

5. Let me now only remind you, that true charity must be joined to true faith, in order to make a true christian. And those of your church, where Christ himself immediately delivered his doctrines, \* cannot but know it to be one of his special commands.

6. For there is no way of expressing our true love and regard to † God, but by the entertainment and belief of his revelation, as he has plainly delivered it to us, and by observance of its moral precepts, whereof this of love and charity is one of the most principal.

7. & 8. I am thus particular in my cautions in this matter, to prevent you from being misled in your principles, and so deprived of your future and glorious state of happiness, by the deceitful endeavours of a set of men, † viz. the Jewish zealots, that would persuade the world that Jesus is not the true † Messiah; and those heretical Christians that uphold he did not live, and preach, and die in reality, but he was not himself the real word his father, the Son of God made man,

\* See 1 John ii. 7, 8.

† Ἡ ἀγάπη, viz. τὴ ἀλήθεια, as in 1 John v. 3.—iv. 21.

man, but a mere man, distinct in reality from that word A. D. 67. or Son of the Father. These are the very false prophets and antichrists, foretold by our Saviour himself ||. || <sup>1 John ii. 18, 19—26</sup>  
Beware therefore, and avoid them. <sup>iv. 1, 2, 3.</sup>

9 Whofoever tranfgreffeth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God : he that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son.

that contradict them God himself the lye.

10 If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your house, neither bid him God speed.

11 For he that bid-deth him God speed, is partaker of his evil deeds.

12 Having many things to write unto you, I would not write with paper and ink ; but I trust to come unto you, and speak face to face, that our joy may be full.

13 The children of \* thy elect sister greet thee. Amen.

9. Your christian religion, and the plain facts and doctrines of it, are so fully and unexceptionably demonstrated, that you must make them the rule whereby to judge of all pretenders in religious matters †. You know your own principles are true ; and therefore all must be false, as plainly giving

10 & 11. If you find any of these teachers, therefore, that are thus unsound in their doctrines, and loose in their morals ; have nothing to do with them, and give them no entertainment, for fear the countenance you afford them should bring you into a share of their guilt and punishment.

12. I give you now only these brief cautions, in hopes very soon to visit your church, and furnish you with more full directions, to your complete comfort and satisfaction in your true christian principles, against the designs of these deceivers.

13. The christian church I am now \* with, give hearty love and good wishes to you. God preserve you. Amen.

---

\* Thy elect sister. What church it was, from whence St. John wrote this, is no way certainly to be known : Dr. Lightfoot thinks it to be Ephesus, which, as it was the metropolis of Asia, might indeed properly be called sister to the great church of Jerusalem.

---

---

A  
P A R A P H R A S E

ON THE  
THIRD EPISTLE

OF  
S T. J O H N.

---

PREFACE AND CONTENTS.

Gaius, *who*. § 1. **G**AIUS is here generally taken for the same christian of Corinth, whom St Paul calls his host, Rom. xvi. 23. A person very much noted for the hospitable and liberal entertainment he gave to St Paul and Barnabas, who took no maintenance of the Gentile churches they preached to, particularly that of Corinth (see 1 Cor. ix.) as neither did Timothy, Titus, or others sent by St Paul thither. To this St John refers here, ver. 5, 6, 7, 8. It should seem from ver. 9. 10. that the apostle intended a longer epistle, and to have directed it to the whole church of Corinth; but fearing the effects of his letter might be defeated by Diotrophes, and his prevailing party; he laid aside that design, upon a prospect of doing more good by visiting the Corinthians in person, ver. 13, 14.

§ 2. Mean

§ 2. Meanwhile, he sends this brief exhortation to <sup>The subject.</sup> Gaius, commending him for his hospitality to the teachers sent to his church, exhorting him to continue it; and assuring him, that his adversary Diotrephes (who seems to have been one of the Jewish zealots, or heretical teachers, spoken of in his first epistle) should soon feel the weight of his apostolical power.

§ 3. If these second and third epistles be stiled gene-If General, it cannot be upon the same account with that of the first, and those of St James and St Peter, [those being directed to several churches; while the one of these were written either to a single family, or church, the other to a single person;] but from that general and Catholick reception they found through the christian churches.

1 THE elder unto the well-beloved Gaius, whom I love in the truth.

2 Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper, and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth.

3 For I rejoiced greatly when the brethren came and testified of the truth that is in thee, even as thou walkest in the truth.

4 I have no greater joy than to hear that my children walk in truth.

5 Beloved, thou doest faithfully whatsoever thou doest to the brethren, and to strangers;

6 Which have borne witness of thy charity before the church: whom if thou bring forward

1. & 2. JOHN, the now aged \* A. D. 67: apostle, sendeth this epistle to Gaius of Corinth, my dear \* See 2 E-christian brother: Most heartily <sup>pist. ver. 1.</sup> wishing him to flourish in health and temporal prosperity, as he does in true christian piety.

3. & 4. Nothing on this side heaven, is matter of such comfort to me, as to hear of the sincerity and constancy of christian people. I love them all, without distinction, as my spiritual children. And this made me so highly rejoice at the account I have received, how good and generous a christian you are in particular.

5. & 6. I now send you this short letter, to express the just sense I have of your liberal hospitality toward all your fellow-christians, especially to such as are sent by the apostles, to teach and instruct your church; and to encourage your perseverance in so good a principle,  
by

**A. D. 67.** forward on their journey, after a godly sort, thou shalt do well :

7 Because that for his name's sake they went forth, taking nothing of the Gentiles.

8 We therefore ought to receive such, that we might be fellow-helpers to the truth.

† Acts xv.  
26. 1 Cor.  
ix. 18.  
See pref.  
§ 1.

out any contributions from them, and earn their living by their own labours. By assisting such preachers, you yourself become an instrument of promoting the gospel, as indeed, it is every christian's duty to be as far as he is able.

9 I wrote \* unto the church : but Diotrophes, who loveth to have the pre-eminence among them, receiveth us not.

¶ Ver. 11.

of heretical teachers ; but Diotrophes, who is one of them, and his party, I find, are so prevalent, that I considered, a letter was not likely to have much effect, and so resolved upon another § method ;

Ver. 14.

10 Wherefore if I come, I will remember his deeds which he doeth, prating against us with malicious words ; and not content therewith ; neither doth he himself receive the brethren, and forbiddeth them

by acquainting you how great a character you bear in the christian church upon this account.

7. & 8. For, indeed, our christian bounty can never be better spent than upon such men, whose zeal for the honour and religion of Christ is so true and generous, that to prevent prejudices, and take off the objections, of some of our adversaries, they preach the gospel to several Gentile churches, † with-

from them, and earn their living By assisting such preachers, you yourself become an instrument of promoting the gospel,

7. I was once \* minded to have writ at large, ‡ to your whole church, to encourage all its members to pay due respect to their orthodox ministers, and to avoid the false and wicked || doctrines

of heretical teachers ; but Diotrophes, who is one of them, and his party, I find, are so prevalent, that I considered, a letter was not likely to have much effect, and so resolved upon another § method ;

10. Viz. to come and visit your church in person, and take due cognizance of that malicious and busy man, that presumes to reproach me, and the rest of the apostles, for not imposing circumcision upon the Gentile christians ; that denies all entertainment to the ministers sent by us, to your church, and

\* I wrote ; *ἔγραψα*, I had written, or would have written. So the vulg. and Syr. very rightly, according to the common latitude of tense in the eastern tongues. See 1 Cor. xv. 32.



them that would, and casteth *them* out of the church.

and even persecutes and excommunicates such christians as adhere to them. A. D. 67.

11 Beloved, follow not that which is evil, but that which is good. He that doeth good, is of God; but he that doeth evil, hath not seen God.

11. Mean time, I earnestly entreat you all to avoid the wicked principles and practices of such men. Make it your rule, that moral obedience is the essential mark of a true christian; and the loudest pretences will never

make a wicked man a true member of God's church.\* \* 1 John iii, 6-10.

12 Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the truth itself: yea, and we *also* bear record, and ye know that our record is true.

12. Demetrius has the general character of a sincere christian: Make him your example; for I can recommend him, by all the rules of our christianity, as worthy of that character: And you

know, you may depend upon what I say.

13 I had many things to write, but I will not with ink and pen write unto thee:

13. & 14. I must wave further particulars, till I see you, which I hope will be soon. All happiness attend you the mean while. Our christian friends here send hearty love to you: Give mine and theirs, as particularly as you can, to all in your parts.

14 But I trust I shall shortly see thee, and we shall speak face to face. Peace *be* to thee. Our friends salute thee. Greet the friends by name.

---

A  
P A R A P H R A S E

ON THE  
EPISTLE GENERAL

OF  
S T. J U D E.

---

P R E F A C E.

To whom §  
& on what  
occasion.

§ 1. **T**HE whole argument of this epistle has an exact agreement, and several of its expressions are so perfectly the same with the Second of St. Peter, that the most judicious writers make it a strong conclusion, it must have been written about the same time, and levelled at the lewd principles of the same Jewish zealots, and heretical teachers. For the particulars whereof the reader is referred to the preface of 1 Peter, § 4, and to preface 1 John, § 3.

Why general.

§ 2. As his brother James directed his epistle to the churches of the Jewish dispersion, so St. Jude's seems plainly to have been sent to the christians of the whole circumcision, both foreign and domestic; and therefore it bears the title of a general epistle: Though I make no question but it had a peculiar respect to such amongst whom he had exercised his ministry.

CON-

## CONTENTS.

*The Salutation and Design of the Epistle; viz. To arm them against the Errors and Vices of false and heretical teachers. The Certainty of their severe Punishment, inferred from the instances of the rebellious Israëlites, the fallen angels, Sodom and Gomorrah. Very black Descriptions of these heretics. The traditional history of Michael, and Prophecy of Enoch referred to. Christians not to be surprised at these heretics, because foretold by the Prophets, and by Christ himself. He exhorts them to Steadiness in the true Faith. Prays for them, and concludes.*

**1** JUDE, the servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James, to them that are sanctified by God the Father, and preserved in Jesus Christ, and called.

2 Mercy unto you, and peace, and love be multiplied.

most degree of divine

3 Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation; it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort you, that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once \* delivered unto the saints.

**1, & 2.** JUDE, (called in the Gospels Thaddeus, and Lebbeus, to distinguish him from Judas Iscariot) the brother of James, bishop of Jerusalem, an apostle of Jesus Christ, sendeth this epistle to the Jewish Christians, to all that in these corrupted, persecuting and apostatizing times, remain firm and steady to their profession: Wishing you the utmost degree of divine favour and happiness.

3. In writing to you, dear brethren, upon the great subject of our christianity, the chief and most necessary argument I can chuse to insist upon is, that of courage and constancy to the plain and original doctrines of it.\*

4. One

\* Ver. 3. The faith once delivered: ἀπὸ παραδωμένη; Delivered once for all; i. e. So as to need no further confirmation beside the evidences given of it by Christ and his apostles; and so as to admit of no alterations or additions. See the Note on Heb. ix. 26.

A. D. 67. 4 For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before \* of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness, and denying the only Lord God, † Heretics. and our Lord Jesus See Pref. Christ.

‡ John xiii.

and all of them, by promoting some vicious practice or other, have so insinuated themselves into, and corrupted the christian church, that we are forced to run back to the defence of its first and plainest principles.

5 I will therefore put you in remembrance, though ye once knew this, how that the Lord having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed them that believed not.

will be; let me remind you of the former dealings of God in the like cases. The Israelites, you know, were the chosen people, and church of God: Yet how were they, that had the favour of a miraculous deliverance from Egyptian bondage, destroyed for their disobedience, and never saw the promised land!

4. One would think, indeed, this were a needless topic to men really professing themselves disciples of Christ: But, that lewd and wicked set of men, whose vices and punishment were \* foretold by the prophets and by Christ himself, some of them denying Christ to ‡ be the true Messiah at all, others † affirming he lived, and preached, and died in appearance only, and not in reality;

5. Wherefore, to prevent you from being drawn into that desperate principle of theirs, viz. That the external profession of religion, and the privilege of being members of the true church, is enough to save a man, whatever his practice be; and, at the same time, to satisfy you, how certain the punishment of such wretches

6. And

---

\* Of old fore-ordained to this condemnation: *πρωγεγραμμενοι εις τωτο το κριμα*; men of whom it was before-written that they would deserve this condemnation, 2 Pet. ii. 3.

† Ibid. Denying the only Lord God; i. e. denying him, in effect, by denying Christ his son, or by corrupting the true religion, so as to defeat all the main designs of it. See ‡ John ii. 22, 23.

6 And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day.

the great day of judgment upon them, and all wicked men.

7 Even as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities about them, in like manner giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire.

8 Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion, and speak evil of dignities.

most vain and extravagant fancies, and imaginations of the mind too. They are not only lawless, ungovernable, and arrogant against all temporal authority, but have notions that are disgraceful to, and reflecting upon the dignity of heavenly § and superior beings.

9 Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil, he disputed about the body of Moses, durst ¶ not bring against him any railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke thee.

VOL. II. 10 But

6. Nay, to go higher, the very <sup>A. D. 67.</sup> angels themselves, that acted unworthy of the blissful station and \* dignity God had placed them in, \* ἀρχόντων were thrust down from those bright regions of light and happiness, and are here kept in this dark and lower † world, as prisoners reserved in chains, against † 2 Pet. ii. 4.

7. What was the total and irreparable destruction of those lewd and beastly cities of Sodom and Gomorrah, but an emblem of that more dreadful and eternal punishment that will be the final portion of the debauched † heretics of these times? <sup>See 2 Pet. ii. 6.</sup>

8. Who, not only equal, but even exceed the Sodomites in their impieties; indulging themselves not only in the same excess of carnal gratifications, but in the

9, & 10. You cannot but stand amazed at their insolence, when you compare it with the traditional account you Jews have had about the strife between Michael and Samael || the devil, called the angel of death, concerning the body of Moses. Your traditions

D d

tell

---

¶ Ver. 9. Durst not bring, &c. *ἐν ἐπαύματι*; He did not think it fit or meet: So that Greek word is often used to signify.

A. D. 67. 10 But these speak

evil \* of those things

\* See 2 Pet. which they know not:

ii. 18, 12. but what they know naturally, as brute beasts, in those things they corrupt themselves.

11. Wo unto them, for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for a reward, and perished in the gainfaying of Core.

against the more clear light of the gospel, seduce christian people into lewdness, darkness and destruction! And, if the earth was made to swallow up Corah and his company, for pretending to rival and affront Moses, what must be the end of them that resist the authority of Christ, and, by forgeries and delusions, set up against his inspired apostles!

12 These are sports in your † feasts of charity, when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit,

§ *σπινθήδες*. twice dead, plucked up by the roots;

2 Pet. ii.

13-17.

13 Raging

tell you, the archangel returned the devil none of his railing accusations, but only said, the Lord rebuke thee.† While these impudent creatures, like savage beasts, fly at and vilify every thing, of what rank and quality soever, without reason or distinction.

11. Wo unto them! for if Cain's murdering his brother was so dreadful a crime, what must it be in them to persecute such numbers of their innocent brethren! if Balaam was so wicked in seducing the Israelites to idolatry, what must be their guilt, who, against

12, & 13. 'Tis impossible to describe them by any comparisons that are black enough to reach them. When they are invited, to gratify their appetites, 'tis indifferent to them, whether it be to an idol-feast, or a feast † of charity, among the true worshippers of God. They bring nothing but scandal and § danger to all they communicate with. The lewdness

† There is another interpretation of this verse, which makes it refer to Zach. iii. 2. For his view and choice whereof, I refer the more curious reader to Mr Le Clerk, Not. en Hammond. N. T.

‡ Feasts of charity. 'Tis not clear whether these were vacant of sacramental feasts among christians, or Jewish feasts, usual in the evening of their Sabbaths, called *κοινωνία*, and *ξενοδοχία*. I have therefore so expressed it as to include both.

13 Raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame; \* wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever.

shameful and malicious calumnies as plentifully as the sea throws out its foam in stormy weather; and while they set up for teachers and doctors, guides and \* lights to other men, they are no better than those irregular meteors that deceive and mislead the mariner in a dark night: And accordingly, eternal darkness and the utmost degree of misery will be their final portion.

14 And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints,

15 To execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them, of all their ungodly deeds which they have

ungodly committed, and of all their hard *speeches*, which ungodly sinners have spoken against him.

16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts, and their mouth speaketh great swelling *words*, having mens persons in admiration because of advantage.

17 But

lewdness and slanders of their conversation are as blasting as a tempest, and a virtuous word or action is no more to be expected from them, than fruit is from a tree that is perfectly withered and stubbed up. They vent their

14, & 15. That traditional prophecy the Jews have of Enoch, concerning the destruction of the old world, may as fitly be applied to these men; for as their impiety and injustice, both in words and actions, do not only equal, but even surpass theirs, the divine judgments upon them will certainly be still more solemn, dreadful and exemplary.

16. For nothing can exceed the pride, lust and vanity of this set of people, that yet have the face, many of them, to call themselves the people and church of God; while, to gratify their worldly and sensual principles, they will caress, flatter, and join in with the worst of men.

D d 2

17, & 18. But

---

\* Wandering stars: The Jewish doctors were styled lights and stars.

A. D. 67.

17 But, beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ:

\* 2 Pet. iii. 2, 3. 18 *How* that they told you there should be mockers in the last time who should walk

19 These be they who separate themselves, sensual, having not the Spirit.

graces of the holy Spirit, that true christians are endowed with.

20 But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Ghost,

21 Keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life.

and happiness through Jesus Christ.

22 And of some have compassion, making a difference.

23 And others save with fear, pulling them out of the fire: † hating even the garment spotted by the flesh.

Such as deceive others through perfect malice and design, are utterly to be avoided: But such as are led away thro' ignorance and simplicity, are to be treated with pity, tenderness

17, & 18. But, dear brethren, you ought not to be surpris'd and dishearten'd to find the christian church pester'd with such a vicious crew, when you consider that Christ and his apostles plainly \* foretold us it would be so.

after their own ungodly lusts.

19. And you see it now come to pass, in these leaders of faction and divisions in the church, who are destitute of those gifts and

20, & 21. Instead, therefore, of being discouraged, be careful to strive against them, by constant improvement in all the duties of your profession, by the exercise of devout christian prayer, wherein you are assisted by the inspirations of the holy Ghost; and support yourselves under all present calamities, by the joyful and sure prospect you have of eternal life

22, & 23. Show your utmost aversion then, against the practisers of such wickedness, by condemning them, and renouncing all conversation with them. Only be careful to make a prudent difference in your behaviour, in proportion to the guilt of mens miscarriages.

---

† Hating even the garment: An allusion to the strictness of the Jewish law against touching unclean things.



darkness and good humour, in hopes to be recovered from A.D. 67  
to wretched and hazardous a condition. A thing you  
ought most earnestly to endeavour for.

24 Now unto him  
that is able to keep  
you from falling, and  
to present you fault-  
less before the pre-  
sence of his glory  
with exceeding joy ;

25 To the only wise  
God our Saviour, be  
glory and majesty, do-  
minion and power,  
now and ever. Amen.  
now and ever. Amen.

24. & 25. Now to the infinitely  
wise and powerful God, the Crea-  
tor and Saviour of mankind, who  
is both able and graciously ready  
so to assist your honest endeavours,  
as to keep you steady to your pro-  
fession, under all difficulties and  
temptations, and, by innocence of  
life, to render you worthy the  
enjoyment of his glorious and  
blessed presence : To him be a-

*F I N I S.*

---

---

A  
GENERAL AND COMPLETE  
I N D E X

TO ALL THE  
PRINCIPAL MATTERS, WORDS,  
AND PHRASES

IN THE  
NEW TESTAMENT  
EXCEPTING THE *REVELATIONS*.

---

---

A

- ABBA*, father, Gal. iv. 6.  
*Abel*, his sacrifice and blood, Heb. xi. 4. xii. 24.  
*Abide* in him, John xv. 4. 1 John ii. 6. Note *ib.*  
*Abraham*, his faith, how justified, Rom. iv. 1, 17, 18, &c.  
Gal. iii. James ii. 21, 22, 23.  
—— the promise made to him, Heb. vi. 13. Gal. iii. 8.  
16, 17.  
*Adam*, his sin, comparison and analogy between our sinning  
in him, and the being saved by CHRIST the second  
Adam, Rom. v. 12, 13 to 20. 1 Cor. xv. 21, 22. xiv. 49.  
*Acts* of the Apostles, use of that history, Pref. to Acts.  
—— where the Acts properly begin, Acts i. 15.  
*Accounted*, imputed for righteousness, Rom. iv. 3, 6, 22, 24.  
*Accursed*: See Anathema.

# I N D E X.

- Adria*, what? Acts xxvii. 27.
- Add-d*, the Lord added to the church, Acts ii. 47.
- added nothing to me, Gal. ii. 6.
- Admonition* must be given with discretion, and come from a proper person, Matth. vii. 3, 4, 5, 6.
- Adultery*, the heinous sin of it. See fornication and divorce.
- Afflictions*, the good improvement and advantage of them; Luke xiii. 1, 2, &c. Heb. xii. 5, &c.
- Age*, ages to come, Ephes. ii. 7.
- Again*, πάλιν, the sense of it, Gal. iv. 9. Note there.
- Agabus*, Acts xi. 28. xxi. 10, 11.
- Agrippa*, Acts xxv. 12. xxvi. 1, &c.
- Air*, meet the Lord, 1 Thess. iv. 17. Prince of the air, Eph. ii. 2.
- Akeldema*, Acts i. 19. Alexander of Ephesus, Acts xix. 33.
- Altar*, partakers of the altar, 1 Cor. x. 18.
- we have an altar, Heb. xiii. 10.
- All*, above all, through all, and in you all, Eph. iv. 6. God over all, Rom. ix. 5.
- All things*, to all men, 1 Cor. ix. 22. I can do all things, Phil. iv. 13.
- All*, πάντες πάντα, in a restrained sense, Acts i. 1 John ii. 19.
- Allegory*, Gal. iv. 24.
- Ambition* reproved, Mark ix. 34, &c. x. 39, 46. Luke. xxi. 24. See humility.
- Ambassador*, Eph. vi. 20.
- Amen*, i. e. true, certain, 2 Cor. i. 22.
- Anathema*, and Maranatha, 1 Cor. xvi. 22. Gal. i. 8, 9; Rom. ix. 3.
- Ananias*, several of that name, Acts v. 1. ix. 10. xxiii. 2.
- Æneas*, healed, Acts ix. 33, 34.
- Ἀνέκοψε, Gal. v. 7.
- Ἀιτηκοντα, Rom. i. 17. Eph. v. 4.
- Anger*, immoderate, condemned, Matth. v. 22. Ephes. iv. 26. Colos. iii. 8.
- Angels*, appearance and ministry of angels, Acts v. 19. viii. 26. x. 3. xii. 7.
- good angels minister to us, Heb. i. 14. Matth. xviii. 10.
- desire to look into the gospel, 1 Pet. i. 12:
- evil angels, their fall and punishment, 2 Pet. ii. 4. Jude. 6.
- a spirit or an angel, Acts xxiii. 9.
- it is his angel, Acts xii. 15.
- things invisibly wrought ascribed to angels, John v. 4. Acts xii. 23. the note there.
- because of the angels, 1 Cor. xi. 10.
- into an angel of light, 2 Cor. xi. 14.
- though we or an angel preach, Gal. i. 8, 9.

# I N D E X.

- Angels*, lower than the angels, Heb. ii. 7, 8, 9.  
 — took not on him the nature of angels, Heb. ii. 16.  
 — there angels behold the face of my father, Matth. xviii.  
 10.  
 — as an angel of God, Gal. iv. 14.  
 — angel worship forbidden, Col. ii. 18.  
 — elect angels, 1 Tim. v. 21,  
 — seen of angels, 1 Tim. iii. 16. Christ above angels,  
 Heb. i. 4, 5.  
*Anointed with the Holy Ghost*, Acts i. 5. x. 38.  
 — the anointing. See unction.  
 — anointed us, 2 Cor. i. 21, 22.  
 — the anointed, Heb. i. 9.  
*Anointing the sick*, appointed, James vi. 14.  
*Ἀνους*, the sense of it, 1 Cor. ix. 22.  
*Antichrist*, who? 1 John ii. 18, 22. iv. 3. Pref. ib. § 5.  
*Apostacy*, the danger of it, Heb. iii. 12, 13. Chap. iv. vi. 4,  
 10, 26, 1 Pet. ii. 20, 21. 1 John v. 16, 21.  
*Appearance of Christ*, the sense of it, 1 Tim. vi. 14. Titus. ii.  
 13. 1 Pet. i. 7.  
*Appointed*, the sense of it, 1 Thess. iii. 3. v. 9. 1 Pet. ii. 8.  
*Apollos*, Acts xviii. 24, &c.  
*Apostle*,  
 — Apostleship of the Gentiles, Rom. xi. 13.  
 — grace and apostleship, Rom. i. 5.  
*Apostleship* of St. Paul vindicated, 1 Cor. ix. 2 Cor. Chap.  
 xi, xii, xiii. Gal. i. 1, 9, &c. Chap. ii. v. 1 to 13. vi. 13,  
 17.  
*Apprehended*, of God, Phil. iii. 12, 13.  
*Aquila*, Priscilla, Acts xviii. 2.  
*Archangel*, 1 Thess. iv. 16.  
*Arcopagus*, or Mars Hill, Acts xvii. 19.  
*Armour of God*, Ephes. vi. 11, 13.  
*Arts*, curious arts, Acts xix. 19.  
*Athens*, Paul there, Acts xvii. 15.  
 — Athenians, their character, ib. 21.  
*Ascension of Christ*, the account of it, Mark xvi. 19. Luke  
 xxiv. 51. Acts i. 9, 10, 11.  
 — the stress that is laid upon it, for our pardon and  
 future happiness, and the truth of Christianity, John vi.  
 62. xx. 17. Eph. iv. 8, 9, 10. Acts ii. 33. v. 31. Rom.  
 viii. 34. Eph. i. 20.  
*Asleep*, fallen asleep; 1 Thess. iv. 13, 14.  
*Assembly*, he dismissed the assembly, Acts xix. 41.  
 — assembling ourselves together, Heb. x. 25.  
 — assembly of the first-born. Heb. xii. 23.  
*Atonement*. See propitiation.  
*Awake to righteousness*, 1 Cor. xv. 34.  
 — thou that sleepest, Eph. v. 14.

# I N D E X.

## B.

- BABYLON*, Rome called so, 1 Pet. v. 13.  
*Babbling*, vain, 1 Tim. vi. 20. 2 Tim. ii. 16.  
*Babes*, i. e. ignorant persons, Rom. ii. 20. 1 Cor. iii. 1.  
 Heb. v. 13. 1 Pet. ii. 2.  
*Balaam* mentioned, 2 Pet. ii. 15, 16. Jude 11.  
*Baptism*, the nature of it, 1 Pet. iii. 21. Rom. vi. 3, &c.  
 — resembles the death, &c. of Christ, Rom. vi. 3. &c.  
 — baptizing with fire, what? Matth. iii. 11.  
 — baptism of John, what? See John Baptist.  
 — why Jesus would be baptised, Mark i. 9, 10.  
 — baptism signifies martyrdom, Luke xii. 50. Mark x. 39.  
 — baptised for the dead, 1 Cor. xv. 29.  
 — Not sent to baptise, but preach, 1 Cor. ix. 17.  
 — baptised to Moses, in the cloud, in the sea, 1 Cor. x. 1, 2.  
 — baptism compared to Noah's ark, 1 Pet. iii. 21.  
*Barnabas*, mentioned, Acts iv. 36, 37. chap. xiii.  
*Basket*, Saul let down in, Acts ix. 25.  
*Beasts*, at Ephesus, 1 Cor. xv. 32.  
*Before*, things that are before, Phil. iii. 13.  
 — he is before all things, Col. i. 17.  
*Beginning*, he is the beginning, Col. i. 18.  
 — from the beginning, 1 John i. 1. 2 John v. 6.  
 — in the beginning, John i. 1.  
 — beginning of days, Heb. vii. 3.  
*Beholding*, earnestly, ἀντὶθέως, Acts xxiii. 1.  
*Berea*, Paul there, character of the Bereans, Acts xvii. 10, 11.  
*Beyond*, go beyond, 1 Thess. iv. 6.  
*Bishop*, applied to several people, Acts ii. 17, 18.  
 — a good bishop, what? 1 Tim. iii. 1, 2, &c. Tit. i. 6.  
 See elder.  
 — bishoprick, Acts i. 20.  
*Blasphemy*, what? Acts xviii. 6. xix. 37. xxvi. 11. Rom. ii.  
 24. Tit. ii. 5. James ii. 7. Matth. ix. 3. John x. 36.  
 — blaspheming against the holy Ghost, what? Matth. xii.  
 33. Mark iii. 28, 29, 30.  
*Blind*, i. e. ignorant, foolish, titles given to the heathens,  
 Luke iv. 18. Rom. ii. 19.  
 — and applied to the unbelieving Jews, Matth. xv. 14.  
 xxiii. 17. John ix. 40, 41. 2 Pet. i. 9.  
*Blood* of Christ, our sacrifice, we are redeemed by it, Heb.  
 ix. 12, 13, x. 19. Eph. ii. 13. 1 Pet. i. 19. Acts xx. 28.  
 Rom. iii. 25. v. 9. Eph. i. 7. Col. i. 14. and elsewhere.  
 — communion of the blood of Christ, 1 Cor. x. 16.  
 — blood, water and spirit, 1 John v. 6, 7, 8.
- Blood,*

## I N D E X.

- Blood*, refistid unto blood, Heb. xii. 4.  
 — all things purged with blood, Heb. ix. 22.  
*Boasting*. See gloryings.  
 — proud boasters, Rom. i. 30. 2 Tim. iii. 2.  
 — where is boasting, Rom. iii. 37.  
 — St. Paul's boasting, 2 Cor. xi. & xii.  
*Body* of Christ, the church, Rom. xii. 4, 5. 1 Cor. x. 17. xii. 13, 20. Eph. ii. 16. iv. 4. Col. i. 24. iii. 15. Eph. i. 23.  
 — communion of the body of Christ, 1 Cor. x. 16.  
*Bodies*, of christians, not for fornication, 1 Cor. vi. 13.  
 — are members of Christ, ib. ver. 15.  
 — sin without the body, 1 Cor. vi. 18.  
 — sinneth against his own body, ib.  
 — the body is Christ, Col. ii. 17.  
 — a body hast thou prepared, Heb. x. 5. 10.  
 — in the body, Heb. xiii. 3. 2 Cor. xii. 3. v. 6, 10.  
 — resurrection of the body. See resurrection.  
 — bodily, the fulness of the Godhead bodily, Col. ii. 9.  
*Book* of life, Phil. iv. 3.  
*Born* again of God, 1 Pet. i. 23. 1 John ii. 6. Note ib.  
 — of water and spirit, John iii. 3. 5.  
 — first born, Heb. xii. 23.  
 — first begotten, Heb. i. 6.  
 — of every creature, Col. i. 15.  
 — from the dead, ib. ver. 18.  
*Breastplate*, Eph. vi. 14.  
*Bring* with him, 1 Theff. iv. 14.  
*Brightness* of his coming, 2 Theff. ii. 8.  
*Brother*, the sense of it.  
 — whose praise is in the gospel, 2 Cor. viii. 18.  
 — of low degree, James i. 9.  
 — signifies kinsman, 1 Cor. ix. 5. Gal. i. 19.  
 — as a brother, 2 Theff. iii. 15.  
*Brethren*, christian, duty of love to them, 1 Pet. i. 22. iii. 8. 1 John iii. 14, 16. See charity.  
 — call us brethren, Heb. ii. 11, 12, 17.  
 — false brethren, 2 Cor. xi. 26. Gal. ii. 4.  
*Building*, of this building, Heb. ix. 11.  
 — a building of God, 2 Cor. v. 1.  
*Burden*, bear his own burden, one another's, Gal. vi. 2. 5.  
*Burdensome*, 1 Theff. ii. 6.

## C.

- CAIN*, 1 John iii. 12. Jude 11.  
*Calling*, called, Rom. i. 6. viii. 28. 1 Cor. i. 26. Phil. iii. 14.  
 2 Tim. i. 9. See elect.

*Calling,*

## I N D E X.

- Calling*, abide in his own calling, 1 Cor. vii. 20, 24.  
*Cæsar*, render unto Cæsar, Matth. xxii. 21.  
 — Paul appeals to Cæsar, Acts xxv. 11. Cæsar's household, Phil. iv. 22.  
*Camp*, without the camp, Heb. xiii. 11, 12, 13.  
*Captain* of the temple, Acts iv. 1.  
*Captives*, captivity, Eph. iv. 8.  
*Cast away*, cast off, Rom. xi. 1, 2. Luke ix. 25.  
 — a cast-away, 1 Cor. ix. 27.  
 — to cast out, excommunicate, Luke vi. 22. John ix. 34.  
 — cast out devils, Matth. Mark, Luke, John, *passim*.  
*Catholick* epistles, why so called, Pref. to James, § 5, Pref. to 3 epist. John § 3.  
*Ceasing*, without ceasing, 1 Thess. v. 17. Eph. i. 16. Col. i. 9.  
*Censoriousness* condemned, Matth. vii. 1; &c. Luke vi. 37. Rom. xiv. 4. James iv. 11. 1 Cor. iv. 5. Col. ii. 16, 18.  
*Ceremonies*, and positive institutions are not of the same obligation with moral duties, and ought to give place to them, Matth. xii. 1, 14. xxii. 37, 38. Mark ii. 23, 28. Luke vi. 1, 5. See moral obedience, John vii. 21, 23.  
*Ceremonial law* was figurative and temporal, Rom. viii. 3. Gal. iv. 21, 31. Heb. vii. 11, 12. to the end. Heb. viii. 9. x. 1, &c. and elsewhere. See law.  
*Chains*, bound with two chains, Acts xii. 16. xxi. 33.  
 — of darkness, 2 Pet. ii. 4.  
*Change*, shadow of change, James i. 19.  
 — changed the glory, Rom. i. 19, 23, 25.  
 — we shall be changed, 1 Cor. 15, 21, 22.  
 — into the same image, 2 Cor. iii. 18.  
*Charity*, love and mercy. the great duty of christians, Luke xii. 33. xiv. 12, 13, 14. 1 Cor. xiii. 1 Pet. iv. 8. 1 John ii. 9, 13. iv. 4, 8, 11, 21.  
 — its noble properties and effects, 1 Cor. 13.  
 — ought to be universal, Matth. v. 43, 48. Luke x. 29, 38. vi. 27, 30, 36.  
 — ought to be secret, without ostentation, Matth. vi. 1, 4.  
 — its blessing and reward, Matth. v. 7. xxv. 34, 40.  
 — is measured by the will, not by the outward act, Luke xxi. 3, 4.  
 — it covers a multitude of sins, 1 Pet. iv. 8.  
*Children*, emblems of innocency, Mark ix. 36, 37. x. 14. Luke xviii. 16.  
 — little children, my children, &c. 1 John ii. 11, 12, 1 John i. 4. 3 John iv.  
 — duty to parents, Eph. vi. 1. Coloss. iii. 20.  
 — child-bearing, the sense of it, 1 Tim. ii. 15.
- Chosen,*

# I N D E X.

- Chosen*, chuse, the sense of it, Eph. i. 4.  
 ——— men, Acts xv. 22.  
 ——— vessel. See vessel.  
 ——— in the Lord, i. e. a pious christian, Rom. xv. 13.  
 ——— to salvation, 2 Thess. ii. 13, 14. See elected.  
*Christ*, his divinity, John i. 1, &c. Heb. i. 1, 2, &c.  
 ——— the true Messiah, Rom. i. 13. 1 John iv. 1, 2, 3, 15. v. 1, 11, 12. See faith.  
 ——— his temptation, Matth. iv. 1. Mark i. 12, &c. Luke iv. 1, &c.  
 ——— his doctrine proves his commission, Mark iii. 22, 27.  
 ——— his death, Matth. xxvii. Mark xv. Luke xxiii. John xix. See propitiation and blood.  
 ——— his resurrection. See resurrection.  
 ——— his ascension. See ascension.  
 ——— of Christ, in Christ, to be Christ's, 1 Cor. i. 1, 12. 2 Cor. v. 17. x. 17. 1 John ii. 6.  
 ——— put on Christ, Gal. iii. 26. Rom. xiii. 14.  
 ——— how taken, Heb. xi. 26.  
*Christianity*, the excellency and reasonableness of it, Matth. xi. 29, 30. John i. 17. iv. 23, 24. vi. 39, 40. viii. 12.  
 ——— how it fulfils the law, Matth. xvii. 21, 27, 33, 38. 43.  
 ——— conditions of it, John iii. 18. See moral obedience and faith.  
*Christians*, first so called at Antioch, Acts xi. 26.  
 ——— almost thou persuadest me to be, Acts xxvi. 28.  
*Church*. See body of Christ's church, i. e. a christian family, Rom. xv. 5. Col. iv. 15.  
 ——— tell it to the church, Matth. xviii. 17.  
*Circumcision*, not necessary to christians, Acts xv. See Pref. to Rom. and Gal. and see ceremonial law.  
 ——— the uncircumcision, the circumcision, Rom. iii. 30. ii. 26. Eph. ii. 11. Phil. iii. 2. Col. iv. 11. Concision, ib.  
*Citizen*, citizenship, Eph. ii. 19. Phil. iii. 20.  
*Cleanness* and uncleanness, the true notion of it stated, Matth. xv. 10, 11. Mark vii. 15, 24.  
*Clothed*, clothed upon, unclothed, 2 Cor. v. 2, 3, 4.  
*Cloak*, St. Paul's cloak, the sense of it, 2 Tim. iv. 13.  
*Coals* of fire upon his head, Rom. xii. 21.  
*Cock crow*, Matth. xxvi. 34.  
*Coming* of Christ, Acts i. 11. James v. 7, 8, 9. 2 Pet. iii. 4. 2 Pet. i. 16. See day of the Lord.  
*Commandment*, keeping the commandments. See obedience.  
 ——— I speak not by commandment, 2 Cor. viii. 8.  
 ——— I have no commandment, 1 Cor. vii. 25.  
 ——— law of carnal commandment, Heb. vii. 16.

*Com-*



## I N D E X.

- Commandment*, a new commandment, John xiii. 34, 1 John ii. 7, 8. 2 John v.
- Condemned*, self-condemned, Tit. iii. 11.
- Common*, had all things common, Acts ii. 44, 45. iv. 32.  
 ——— common ; see unclean, Acts x. 14, 15, 27.
- Conscience*, in all good conscience, Acts xxiii. 1. xxiv. 16. Heb. xiii. 18.  
 ——— void of offence, Acts xxiv. 16. 1. Tim. i. 5.  
 ——— a weak conscience, to wound, offend, or sin against a weak conscience, 1 Cor. viii. 7, 8, 9, 10 11, 12. See weak.  
 ——— a feared conscience, 1 Tim. iv. 2.  
 ——— conscience a rule to judge of ourselves by, 1 John iii. 19, 20, 21.  
 ——— a doubting conscience, Rom. xiv. 23.
- Consecrated*, the sense of it, Heb. x. 20. vii. 28.
- Confession* of sin to God, 1 John i. 9. To ministers, James v. 16.
- Contentment*, Matth. v. 3. Phil. iv. 11. 1 Tim. vi. 6. Heb. xiii. 5.
- Contention* forbidden, Matth. v. 38, 39. Luke x. 29.  
 ——— between Paul and Barnabas, Acts xv. 38, 39.
- Continency*, Matth. xix. 12. See chastity.
- Contrary*, are contrary to all men, 1 Thess. ii. 15.
- Convert*, conversion of St. Paul, Acts ix. 22, 26.  
 ——— the merits of converting others, James v. 19, 20.
- Consolation*, son of consolation, Acts iv. 36.
- Cornelius*, account of him, Acts x. 1, &c.
- Corruption*, to see corruption, Acts xiii. 34, 35, &c.  
 ——— inherit corruption, 1 Cor. xv. 50.
- Corinth*, Paul there, Acts xviii. 1.  
 ——— character of the Corinthians, Preface to Corinth.  
 ——— incestuous Corinthian, 1 Cor. v.
- Corner*, head stone. See stone.
- Covetousness* forbidden, its danger, Matth. xix. 23, 24. Luke xii. 15, 21. Eph. v. 5. Heb. xiii. 5. See riches.
- Covenant*, Heb. viii. 8. ix. 10. See testament.
- Country*, seek a country, Heb. xi. 14, 15, 16.
- Creature*, the creature, Rom. viii. 19, 20, 21, &c.  
 ——— expectation of the creature, *ibid.*  
 ——— a new creature, 2 Cor. v. 17. Gal. vi. 15.
- Cross* of Christ, 1 Cor. i. 17, 18. Gal. vi. 14.  
 ——— nailing it to his cross, Col. ii. 14.  
 ——— the offence of the cross, Gal. v. 11.  
 ——— crucify themselves afresh, Heb. vi. 6.
- Curse*, curse of the law, Gal. iii. 10, 13.  
 ——— made a curse for us, *ibid.* See Anathema:
- Cut off*, to cut off, to be cut off, Gal. v. 12. Rom. xi. 22.  
 See Cast, cast away.

*DAMNED,*

# INDEX.

## D

*DAMNED*, is one that is to be condemned as guilty of a plain sin, Rom. xiv. 23.

*Damnation* signifies temporal judgment, Rom. xiii. 2. 1 Cor. xi. 29.

—— eat damnation, the sense of it, 1 Cor. xi. 29.

—— eternal, of Hell, Matth. xxiii. 33. John v. 29. 2 Theff. ii. 12. Mark iii. 29. See punishment.

*Darkness*, i. e. a state of sin, Ephes. v. 8. 1 Theff. v. 4, 15. 1 John ii. 8, 9.

—— darkness, i. e. evil actions, 1 John i. 5, 6, 7. Punishment, Jude vi. 13.

*Darts*, fiery darts, Ephes. vi. 16.

*Day*, the day, day of the Lord, signifies either the destruction of Jerusalem, or the final day of judgment, and very often both, 1 Cor. iii. 12, 13. 2 Cor. i. 14. 2 Tim. i. 12. 18. iv. 8. 1 Theff. v. 2, 8. 2 Theff. ii. 2, 3. Heb. x. 25. 2 Pet. iii. 10.

—— the last days, 2 Tim. ii. 1. Heb. i. 2.

*Deacons*, ordained, Acts vi. 2, 3, 4, 5.

—— their qualifications, 1 Tim. iii. 8.

*Deaconesses*, 1 Tim. iii. 11.

*Dead*, death, resurrection of the dead, the sense of it, Acts xxiii. 6, 8. xxiv. 15. See resurrection.

—— dead to sin, Rom. v. 11.

—— to the law, Rom. vi. 4.

—— in Christ, 1 Theff. iv. 16.

—— them that are dead, i. e. Gentiles, 1 Pet. iv. 6.

—— death worketh in us, 2 Cor. iv. 11.

—— Savour of death unto death, 2 Cor. ii. 16.

—— so great a death, 2 Cor. i. 10.

*Debtor to Jew and Gentile*, Rom. i. 14.

—— debtor to the whole law, Gal. v. 3.

—— debtor, i. e. offender, Matth. vi. 12. xxiii. 16, 18.

*Dedicated*, the sense of it, Heb. ix. 18.

*Deep*, the deep, Rom. x. 7.

—— been in the deep, 2 Cor. xi. 25.

—— deep things of God, 1 Cor. ii. 10.

*Degree* a good degree, 1 Tim. iii. 13.

*Delusions*, strong delusions, 2 Theff. ii. 11.

*Descent*, with descent, Heb. vii. 3.

*Destruction*, everlasting, 2 Theff. i. 9.

—— destruction of the flesh, 1 Cor. v. 5.

*Denying* God the Lord, 2 Pet. ii. 1. Jude 4. Matth. x. 33.

*Determined*, fore-determined, Acts iv. 28. See ordained.

Devil,

## I N D E X.

- Devil*, not suffered to declare who Jesus was, and why,  
 Mark i. 25, 34. Luke iv. 41.  
 — his titles, Ephes. ii. 2. John xii. 31.  
 — give place to the devil, Ephes. iv. 27.  
 — snare of the devil, 1 Tim. iii. 6.  
 — doctrine of devils, 1 Tim. iv. 1.  
 — devils believe and tremble, James ii. 19.  
 — devil contends with Michael, Jude 9.  
*Devout men*, the sense of it, Acts ii. 5. viii. 2. x. 2, 7. xviii.  
 4, 17.  
*Diana* of the Ephesians, Acts xix. 24.  
*Disputer* of this world, 1 Cor. i. 20.  
 — without disputing, Phil. ii. 14.  
 — perverse disputings, 1 Tim. vi. 5.  
*Disorderly*, i. e. idle, 2 Thess. iii. 6, 7, 11.  
*Divisions*, forbidden, 1 Cor. i. 13. iii. 3. xi. 18.  
*Divide* the word of truth, 2 Tim. ii. 15.  
*Divination*, spirit of divination, Acts xvi. 16.  
*Divorce*,  
 — in case of adultery, lawful, Matth. v. 31, 32. Chap. xix.  
 3, 4, &c. Mark x. 2, 3, &c.  
 — not lawful on light and humourſome reasons, Luke xvi.  
 18. 1 Tim. iii. 12. Tit. i. 6. 1 Cor. vii. 10, 11.  
*Dogs*, the sense of it, Phil. iii. 2. Matth. vi. 7.  
*Doing well*, in general, Rom. ii. 7. 1 Pet. iii. 17. iv. 19.  
*Doing*, well-doing, i. e. charity, Gal. vi. 9, 10. Acts x. 38,  
 — well-doing signifies industry, 2 Thess. iii. 13. See good.  
*Door*, Christ the door, John x. 1, 7.  
 — a great door opened, 1 Cor. xvi. 9. 2 Cor. ii. 12.  
 — door of utterance, Col. iv. 3.  
 — door of faith, Acts xiv. 27.  
*Dorcas*, Acts ix. 36, &c.  
*Doubt*, doubting, Rom. xiv. 23.  
 — doubtful disputations Rom. xiv. 1.  
*Draw*, the sense of it, John vi. 44.  
 — draw nigh, Heb. vii. 19. James iv. 8.  
 — draw back, Heb. x. 38, 39.  
*Dreamer*, filthy, Jude viii.  
*Drunkenness* forbidden, Eph. v. 18. Luke xxi. 34. Rom. xiii.  
 13. Gal. v. 21.  
*Dust*, shake off the dust, what? Acts xiii. 51. Matth. x.  
 14. Luke ix. 5, 10, 11.  
*Dwell*, to dwell in him, i. e. God. 1 John ii. 6. Note. ib.  
 — I will dwell in them, 2 Cor. vi. 16.

*EARTH,*

# I N D E X,

- EARTH* is to be burnt, 2 Pet. iii. 10.  
 — heavens and earth, Eph. i. 10. iii. 15. 2 Pet. 7. x. 13.  
 — uttermost parts of the earth, what? Acts i. 8.  
 — earth, earthy, 1 Cor. xv. 47, 48, 49.  
*Easter*, mentioned Acts xii. 3, 4.  
*Eat and drink*, Luke xxii. 30. xiii. 26. John vi. 53.  
 — power to eat, 1 Cor. ix. 4.  
 — let us eat and drink, 1 Cor. xv. 32.  
*Edification*, Rom. xv. 2. 1 Theff. v. 11. 1 Cor. xiv. 3. 2.  
 Cor. x. 8. xiii. 10. 1 Cor. viii. 10. x. 23. xiv. 4. 17.  
 Eph. iv. 12, 29.  
*Eye* hath not seen, 1 Cor. ii. 9.  
 — eye be single, Matth. vi. 2. Luke xi. 34.  
 — an evil eye, *ibid.*  
 — eye-service, Ephes. vi. 6.  
*Elder*, elders, elder men, 1 Tim. v. 1, 13.  
 — elder women, 1 Tim. v. 2:  
 — apostles, so called, Acts xi. 38. 2 John i. 3. John i.  
 1 Pet. v. 1.  
 — other ministers called elders, Acts xiv. 23. xv. 2, 6.  
 xxi. 18.  
 — elders, i. e. the patriarchs, Heb. xi. 2.  
 — elder shall serve the younger, Rom. ix. 12.  
*Elect*, i. e. christians, Rom. xi. 5, 7. xvi. 13. 2 Tim. ii. 10.  
 Tit. i. 1. See *Chosen*.  
*Election*, i. e. being christians, Rom. xi. 5. 1 Theff. i. 4.  
 — election respects Abraham, Rom. xi. 28.  
*Elements* of the world, Gal. iv. 3, 9.  
*Elements* shall melt, 2 Pet. iii. 10, 12.  
*Elimas*, Acts xiii. 6, 7.  
*End*, the end, ends of the world, end of all things, Matth.  
 xxiv. 3, 14. Mark xiii. 7. 1 Cor. xv. 24. x. 11. Heb.  
 ix. 26. 1 Pet. iv. 7. Luke xxi. 9.  
 — end of their conversation, Heb. xiii. 7.  
 — end of the law, Rom. x. 4.  
*Enemies*, love of enemies, Matth. iii. 44, 45, &c. Acts vii.  
 60. 1 Theff. v. 15. 1 Pet. iii. 9.  
 — count him not as an enemy, 2 Theff. iii. 15.  
*Enmity*, slay the enmity, Ephes. ii. 16.  
*Enlightened*, the sense of it, Heb. vi. 4.  
*Enoch*, his prophecy, Jude 14. 15.  
 — his translation, Heb. xi. 5.  
*Entering in*, 1 Theff. i. 9. ii. 1.  
*Ephesus*, Paul there, Acts xix. 1.  
 — of Ephesus, and the Ephesians, Pref. to the Ephes.  
 — Paul's speech to their clergy, Acts xx. 17, &c.  
*Epicureans*, Acts xvii. 18.

*Epistle,*

# I N D E X.

*Epistle*, the Epistles were occasional writings. Pref. to Rom.  
 — token of every epistle, 2 Theff. iii. 17.  
*Estate*, left their first estate, Jude 6.  
*Esau*, Heb. xii. 16.  
*Evangelist*, 2 Tim. iv. 5.  
*Evil*, do evil, Rom. iii. 8. xii. 9. 2 Tim. ii. 9. 1 Pet. ii. 12.  
 — to discern both good and evil, Heb. v. 14.  
 — the evil One, 1 John iii. 12.  
*Eunuch*, the eunuch, Acts viii. 27. Made eunuchs, Matth.  
 xix. 12.  
*Euroclydon*, Acts xxvii. 14.  
*Eutychus*, Acts xix. 9.  
*Examine*, examining, 1 Cor. xi. 28. 2 Cor. xiii. 5.  
 — examining by scourging, Acts xxii. 24.  
*Example*, good example to be set, Matth. v. 14, 16. 1 Tim.  
 iv. 12. 1 Pet. v. 3.  
*Exercise*, bodily exercise, 1 Tim. iv. 8.  
*Excellent*, things that are excellent, Rom. ii. 18.  
*Exhortation*, Heb. xiii. 22. Rom. xiii. 8. 1 Cor. xiv. 3. 1  
 Tim. iv. 13.  
*Expectation* of the creature, Rom. viii. 19.  
 — christianity a state of expectation, 2 Cor. v. 7.  
*Experience*, the sense of it, Rom. v. 4. Heb. v. 13.

## F.

*FABLES*, Jewish fables, 1 Tim. i. 4. iv. 7. 2 Tim. iv. 4.  
 Tit. i. 14.  
*Faith* in general, what? Heb. xi. 1, &c. Rom. iv. 9, 11,  
 12, 13, 14. 2 Cor. i. 24.  
 — hath sometimes a larger, and sometimes a more limit-  
 ed acceptation: signifying,  
 1. The christian religion, in opposition to the Mosaical  
 religion, Rom. iii. 27, 31. ix. 32. x. 8. Gal. iii. 2, 7,  
 9, 14, 23, 24. Eph. ii. 8.  
 2. Christian freedom from Jewish ceremonies, Acts i. 17, 28.  
 3. Extraordinary faith as a qualification for working mi-  
 racles, 1 Cor. xii. 9. xiii. 2, 13.  
 4. Reliance on divine Providence, Jam. i. 6.  
 5. The external profession of religion, Jam. ii. 14, 17, 18.  
 6. A persuasion of the lawfulness, or unlawfulness of any  
 particular thing, Rom. xiv. 22, 23.  
 — in Christ as the true Messiah, the main article of chris-  
 tianity, John viii. 24. Acts viii. 37. xx. 21. 1 John v. 1.  
 and elsewhere.  
*Faithful*, the faithful, Eph. i. 1. Col. i. 2. Tit. i. 6. and  
 elsewhere.  
 — Moses was faithful, Heb. iii. 2, 5.  
 — a faithful saying, 1 Tim. i. 15. iv. 9. 2 Tim. ii. 11.  
 Tit. iii. 8.

# I N D E X

- Faithful*, from faith to faith, Rom. i. 17.  
 — they that are of faith, Gal. iii. 7.  
 — according to the proportion of faith, Rom. xii. 6.  
 — the measure of faith, Rom. xii. 3.  
*Fall*, to fall, Rom. xi. 11, 12. 1 Cor. x. 12.  
 — away, 2 Thess. ii. 3.  
*Father*, fathers signify  
 1. The Jewish Seniors, Acts xxii. 1.  
 2. The patriarchs, Rom. ix. 5. another sense of it, 1 Cor. iv. 15.  
 — be to him a father, Heb. i. 5.  
 — without father, Heb. vii. 3.  
*Fault*, why doth he find fault? Rom. ix. 19.  
*Fear*, in fear, 1 Cor. ii. 3. 1 Pet. iii. 15. See trembling.  
 — no fear in love, 1 John iv. 18.  
*Fasts* of charity — 2 Pet. ii. 13. Jude 12.  
*Feeble-minded*, 1 Thess. v. 14.  
*Field*, God's field, 1 Cor. iii. 9.  
*Fælix*, Acts xxiii. 24. xxiv. 3, 25.  
*Feet*, apostle's feet, Acts iv. 37. v. 2.  
 — of Gamaliel, Acts xxii. 3. Feet shod, Eph. vi. 15.  
*Fellowship*, Acts ii. 42. 1 John i. 3. Gal. ii. 9. 1 Cor. i. 9. x. 20. Eph. iii. 9. Phil. ii. 1.  
*Festas*, Acts xxv. 1.  
*Fight*, the good fight, 2 Tim. iv. 7.  
*Figure*, in a figure, Heb. xi. 19.  
*Fire*, saved as by fire, 1 Cor. iii. 15.  
 — Christ come in flaming fire, 2 Thess. i. 18.  
 — a consuming fire, Heb. xii. 29.  
 — eternal fire, Jude 7. See punishment.  
 — the earth shall be destroyed by fire, 2 Pet. iii. 10.  
*Flesh*. i. e. lusts of the flesh, Rom. vii. 5, 18. viii. 4, 5, &c. xiii. 14. Gal. v. 24. and elsewhere.  
 — i. e. legal ceremonies and privileges, Rom. viii. 3. Gal. iii. 3. Phil. iii. 3, 4.  
 — and spirit, John vi. 63. 2 Cor. vii. 1.  
 — infirmity of the flesh, Rom. vi. 19. Gal. iv. 13.  
 — confidence in the flesh, Phil. iii. 3, 4.  
 — after the flesh, 2 Cor. v. 16. x. 3. Gal. iv. 23. Rom. viii. 5, 12, 13.  
 — in the flesh, walk in the flesh, 2 Cor. x. 3. 1 Pet. iv. 2, 6. Rom. viii. 5, 12, 13.  
 — temptations in the flesh, Gal. iv. 14.  
 — works of the flesh, Gal. v. 16, 19.  
 — slow to the flesh, Gal. vi. 8.  
 — fair shew in the flesh, Gal. vi. 12. Glory in your flesh, *ibid.* ver. 13.

*Flesh,*

## I N D E X.

- Flesh*, flesh and blood, Eph. vi. 12. 1 Cor. xv. 50. Heb. ii. 14.
- Fore-knowledge* of God, Acts ii. 23. 1 Pet. i. 2.
- Fore-know*, fore-known, Rom. xi. 2.
- Fore-ordained*, 1 Pet. i. 2. See ordained.
- Form* of sound words, 2 Tim. i. 13.
- of knowledge, Rom. ii. 20.
- of God, Phil. ii. 6.
- of godliness, 2 Tim. iii. 5.
- Fornication* sometimes taken for uncleanness in general, 1 Cor. v. 1, 9. vi. 9, 13, 15, 16, 18. 1 Thess. iv. 3.
- or for incestuous marriage, 1 Cor. v. 1.
- the heinous sin of it, 1 Cor. chap. v. and vi. See Unclean-ness.
- Fool*, become a fool, 1 Cor. iii. 18. iv. 10.
- I speak as a fool, 2 Cor. xi. 23.
- Foolishness* of preaching, 1 Cor. i. 18, 23, 25, 27. ii. 14.
- instructor of the foolish, Rom. ii. 20.
- Forgiveness*, enjoined, Mark xi. 25, 26. Luke xvii. 3, 4. Eph. iv. 32.
- of sins in general. See justification.
- — — — — particular, Jam. v. 15.
- Foundation* of God, 2 Tim. ii. 19.
- a good foundation, 1 Tim. vi. 19.
- of the apostles and prophets, Eph. ii. 20.
- Free* from righteousness, Rom. vi. 20.
- from sin, *ibid*.
- from all men. 1 Cor. ix. 19.
- as free, 1 Pet. ii. 16.
- Freely*, to preach the gospel freely, 1 Cor. ix. 15, 19.
- Freedom*, Roman freedom valued and insisted on, Acts xvi. 37. xxii. 25, &c.
- and slavery, a metaphor, Rom. vi. 16, 23.
- Friend* of God, James ii. 23.
- of the world, James iv. 4.
- Fulness* of the Gentiles, Rom. xi. 12, 25.
- of the gospel, Rom. xv. 29.
- of the God-head, Col. ii. 9.
- of him that filleth all in all, Eph.
- of God, Eph. iii. 19.
- of Christ, Eph. iv. 13.
- in him should all fulness dwell, Col. i. 18.
- fill all things, Eph. iv. 10.

## G.

*GAIUS*, who? 3 John 1.

*Gall* of bitterness, Acts viii. 23.

# I N D E X.

- Gallio*, Acts xviii. 14.
- Gamaliel*, Acts v. 23. xxii. 3.
- Garment*, sell his garment, Luke xxii. 36.
- hating even the garment, Jude 23.
- new cloth to an old garment, Matth. ix. 16.
- wedding garment, Matth. xxii. 11.
- Gate*, the beautiful gate, Acts iii. 2.
- strait gate, Matth. vii. 13. Luke xiii. 34.
- suffered without the gate, Heb. xiii. 12.
- Gathering together*, 2 Thess. ii. 1.
- Genealogy of Christ*, Matth. i. 2, &c. Luke iii. 23, &c.
- endless genealogies, 1 Tim. i. 4. Tit. iii. 9.
- Generation*, a chosen generation, 1 Pet. ii. 9.
- wise in their generation, Luke xvi. 8.
- who shall declare his generation? Acts viii. 33.
- served his own generation, Acts xiii. 36.
- General Epistles*, why called general? Pref. to James, § 5. and to 3 John § 3.
- Gentleness*, Jude 23. See Humility.
- Gentiles* first converted, Acts x. 1, &c.
- their notorious vices, Rom. i. 1, &c. 1 Pet. iv. 2, 3.
- were designed the gospel-privileges as well as the Jews, Rom. i. 17. and chapters ii. iii. iv. and v. 1 Cor. xii. 13. Gal. ii. 2, 8. iii. 14. Eph. iii. 1, 6, 8. Col. i. 27. 1 Tim. ii. 7. 2 Tim. i. 11. iv. 17.
- Ghost*, Holy Ghost promised, Acts i. 5. Matth. iii. 11. John xiv. 20. and elsewhere.
- the descent of the Holy Ghost, Acts ii. 1, &c.
- baptized with the Holy Ghost, Acts i. 3.
- Holy Ghost was conferred by the apostles, Acts ii. 38. viii. 15, 17.
- given sometimes before, sometimes after baptism, Acts x. 44, 47, 48. and viii. 16, 17.
- filled with the Holy Ghost, i. e. with a particular gift, Acts iv. 31.
- seemed good to the Holy Ghost and to us, Acts xv. 28.
- joy in the Holy Ghost, 1 Thess. i. 6. See Spirit.
- Gift*, gifts signify,
  1. The grace and free mercy of the gospel-salvation, Rom. v. 15, 16, 17, 18.
  2. Spiritual and extraordinary gifts, 1 Cor. xii. 4, &c. attending the apostolical office, 1 Pet. iv. 10, 11. and elsewhere.
  3. Gifts signify charity, 2 Cor. ix. 15. Phil. iv. 17. and elsewhere.
- neglect not the gift, 1 Tim. iv. 14. 2 Tim. i. 6.
- the heavenly gift, Heb. vi. 4.

*Gift,*



## I N D E X.

- Gift*, gave gifts unto men, Eph. iv. 8.  
 — offer gifts, Heb. v. 1. viii. 3, 4. ix. 9. xi. 4.  
*Girdle*, Paul's girdle, Acts xxi. 11.  
 — your loins girt, Eph. vi. 14. 1 Pet. i. 13.  
*Glory*, glorying,  
 — from glory to glory, 2 Cor. iii. 18.  
 — of Christ, glory of the man, 1 Cor. xi. 7.  
 — of Christ to be revealed, 1 Pet. iv. 13. v. 1. Rom. iii. 23. xv. 2.  
 — the excellent glory, 2 Pet. i. 17.  
 — of God, John xi. 40. Acts vii. 55.  
 — is the end of the gospel, 2 Cor. i. 22. Phil. ii. 11. 2 Cor. iv. 15.  
 — do all to the glory of God, 1 Cor. x. 31.  
*Glorying* of St. Paul, 2 Cor. xi. and xii. chapters.  
 — of the false teachers, *ibid.* See *Boasting*.  
*Glorified*, Christ glorified not himself, Heb. v. 5.  
*God*, his being and providence proved, Acts xiv. 17. xvii. 27, 28.  
 — name of God, its use in the Hebrew tongue, 2 Cor. viii. 1. Note *ibid.*  
 — without God in the world, Eph. ii. 12.  
 — to the unknown God, Acts xvii. 23.  
 — household of God, Eph. ii. 19.  
 — life of God, Eph. iv. 18. Encrease of God, Col. ii. 19.  
 — all that is called God, 2 Theff. ii. 4.  
*God-head*, Rom. i. 20. Col. ii. 9.  
*Good* things, give good things, Matth. vii. 7, 12.  
 — that which is good, 1 Theff. v. 15.  
 — that good thing, 1 Tim. 14.  
 — both good and evil, Heb. v. 14.  
 — *Man*, signifies a merciful man, Matth. i. 19. Acts xi. 24. Rom. x. 7.  
 — doing good, i. e. charity, Luke vi. 33. Heb. xiii. 16. See *doing*.  
*Government*. See *Magistrates*.  
*Gospel*, whose praise is in the gospel, 2 Cor. viii. 8.  
 — of the circumcision, Gal. ii. 7.  
 — signifies a particular article, Gal. ii. 14. See *Christianity*.  
*Grace*, χάρις in the new Testament, is derived from, and answers to חן in the Hebrew. Its primary sense is, favour, mercy, bounty : From whence it is branched out into several acceptations, some more general, others more limited and particular, under the following heads ;  
 1. Grace, i. e. favour, free bounty, Rom. iv. 4, 16. i. 7. xii. 6. 1 Cor. xv. 10. 2 Cor. vi. 1. Gal. i. 3, 15. Eph. i. 7. vi. 24. Phil. i. 2. 1 Theff. i. 1. v. 28. 2 Theff. iii. 16, 18. Heb. iv. 16. xiii. 25. Jam. iv. 6. See note there.

## I N D E X.

2. Grace, i. e. the gospel-religion, John i. 17. Acts xiii. 43. xv. 11. xviii. 27. Rom. iv. 2. vi. 14, 15. xi. 5, 6. Gal. i. 6. ii. 21. v. 4. Eph. i. 6. ii. 5, 8. 2 Thess. i. 12. ii. 16. Heb. xii. 15, 28. xiii. 9. 1 Pet. v. 12. 2 Pet. iii. 18. Jude 4. 1 Cor. i. 4.
3. Grace, i. e. the happy success of the gospel, Acts xi. 23. 1 Cor. i. 4.
4. Grace taken adjectively, by a Hebraism, signifies as much as gracious, Acts xiv. 3. xx. 24, 32.
5. Grace, i. e. the apostolical office, and the endowments of the Spirit that qualified the apostles to discharge it, Rom. xii. 3. xv. 15. 1 Cor. iii. 10. Gal. ii. 9. Eph. iii. 2, 7, 8. iv. 7. 1 Pet. iv. 10. 11.
6. Grace, i. e. charity, a charitable collection, 2 Cor. viii. 1, 6, 19. ix. 14.
7. Grace seems to signify the honour of suffering for Christianity, Phil. i. 7.
8. Grace, i. e. edification, profit, Eph. iv. 29.
9. Grace, i. e. our final reward, 1 Pet. ii. 10. 19.
- spirit of grace, Heb. x. 29. Let us have grace, Heb. xii. 28.
- throne of grace, Heb. iv. 16. Grace for grace, John i. 16.
- singing with grace, Col. iii. 16.
- your speech be with grace, Col. iv. 6.
- heart established with grace, Heb. xiii. 9.
- Grafted in*, Rom. xi. 17, 19.
- Greeks*, Grecians, i. e. Gentiles profelyted to the Jewish religion, Acts vi. 1. ix. 28. xi. 20. xiv. 1. xvii. 4. xix. 20. and elsewhere.
- i. e. Gentiles, Acts xvi. 1. xvii. 12. xviii. 17. xix. 17. xx. 21. Rom. x. 12. Gal. iii. 28. Col. iii. 11. 1 Cor. i. 22, 23. and elsewhere.
- Grieve* a brother, Rom. xix. 15.
- the Holy Spirit, Eph. iv. 30.
- grieved, the sense of it, 2 Cor. ii. 4, 5.
- Groanings*, that cannot be uttered, Rom. viii. 26.
- we groan, Rom. viii. 22, 23. 1 Cor. v. 2. 4.

## H.

- HAGAR*, Gal. iv. 21, &c.
- Hair*, long hair, 1 Cor. xi. 14, 15.
- Habitation* of God, Eph. vi. 22.
- Hanged* himself, the sense of it, Matth. xxvii. 5. Acts i. 18.
- Hard* to be understood, the sense of it, 2 Pet. iii. 16.
- Hand* of God, Luke i. 66. Acts xi. 21. and elsewhere.
- right-hand of God, Acts ii. 25, 33, 34. v. 31. vii. 55, 56. Eph. i. 20. Col. iii. 1. Heb. i. 3, 13. viii. 1. x. 12. xii. 2. 1 Pet. iii. 22.
- at hand, the Lord is at hand, Phil. iv. 5.

# I N D E X.

- Hand*, with my own hand, Rom. xvi. 26. 1 Cor. x. 20. 2 Theff. iii. 17.  
 — holy hands, 1 Tim. ii. 8. 2 Tim. i. 6.  
*Hands*, imposition of hands, used in ordaining to any special office, work or message, Acts vi. 6. xiii. 3. xix. 6. 1 Tim. i. 18. iv. 14. v. 22.  
 — in giving blessing, and imparting the gifts of the Holy Ghost, Acts viii. 17. ix. 17. Heb. vi. 2.  
 — on the right hand and the left, 2 Cor. vi. 7.  
*Have*, hath, the sense of it, Mark iv. 25. Luke viii. 18. 1 Cor. vii. 2.  
*Hated*, Esau have I hated, Rom. ix. 13.  
*Hay*, wood, stubble, 1 Cor. iii. 12.  
*Head*, the 1 Cor. xi. 3, 6, 7. Col. ii. 19.  
 — covering, uncovering the head, 1 Cor. xi. 3, 5, 6, 7, 13, 14.  
*Healed*, faith to be healed, Acts xiv. 9.  
*Health*, the sense of it, Acts xxvii. 34.  
*Heart*, of one heart, Acts iv. 32.  
 — harden not your hearts. Heb. iii. 8, 13. Gal. iii. 2, 5.  
*Hearing*, Acts xxviii. 26. Rom. x. 17.  
*Heathens*. See Gentiles.  
*Heaven*, the third, 2 Cor. xii. 2.  
*Heavenly*, the. 1 Cor. xv. 48, 49. See Earth.  
*Heavenly things*, Heb. viii. 5. ix. 23.  
 — shake the heavens, Heb. xii. 26. Luke xxi. 26.  
*Hebrews*, who? Acts vi. 1. Preface to the Hebrews.  
 — tongue, what? Acts i. 19. xxvi. 14. xxi. 40.  
 — of the Hebrews, Phil. iii. 5.  
*Heir*, a metaphor, Gal. iv. 1, &c.  
 — of all things, Heb. i. 2.  
 — of promise, Heb. vi. 17.  
*Hell*, one sense of it, 2 Pet. ii. 4.  
 — the sense of it the grave, Acts ii. 27, 31. 1 Cor. xv. 55.  
 — fire, Matth. v. 22, 29, 30. Luke xii. 5. Matth. xxiii. 33.  
*Helmet* of salvation, Eph. vi. 17. 1 Theff. v. 8.  
*Hereticks*, Tit. iii. 10.  
*Heretics*, 2 Pet. ii. 1, 2. 1 John and Jude. See false teachers.  
*Herod* terrified at the birth of Jesus, why? Matth. ii. 3.  
 — his cruelty, Matth. ii. 18.  
 — persecutes the church, Acts xii. 1.  
*Herod Agrippa* his death, Acts xii. 21, 23.  
*Higher* than the heavens, Heb. vii. 26.  
*Holy*, holiness, Heb. xii. 14. 1 Pet. i. 15, 16. See obedience.  
 — place, holy of holies, Heb. ix. 3, 8, 12. x. 19.  
*Honest*, things honest, 2 Cor. viii. 21. Phil. iv. 8. 2 Cor. xiii. 7.  
 — walk honestly, 1 Theff. iv. 12. 1 Pet. ii. 12. Rom. xiii. 13. Heb. xiii. 18.  
*Honour* double honour, 1 Tim. v. 3, 17.  
 — possess your vessels in honour, 1 Theff. iv. 4.

## I N D E X.

- Hope*, christian hope, Tit. ii. 13. Heb. vii. 19. and elsewhere.  
 — of Israel, what? Acts xxviii. 20.  
 — them that have no hope, 1 Thess. iv. 13.  
*Hospitality* recommended, Heb. xiii. 12. 1 Pet. iv. 9. 3 John v. 6.  
*Hour*, the third hour, Acts i. 15. Mark xv. 25.  
 — sixth hour, Matth. xx. 5.  
 — ninth hour, Acts iii. 1. x. 3.  
 — eleventh hour, Matth. xx. 6.  
*House*, from house to house, Acts ii. 46.  
 — of God, Heb. x. 21. 1 Pet. iv. 17.  
*House-top*, Acts x. 9.  
*Household* of faith, Gal. vi. 10.  
 — of God, Eph. ii. 19.  
 — of Onesiphorus, 2 Tim. iv. 19.  
 — of Stephanus, 1 Cor. i. 16.  
 — Cæsar's household, Phil. iv. 22.  
*Humility*, its necessity and excellency, Matth. xviii. 2, 3, &c. xx. 26, 27, 28. John xiii. 13, 17.  
 — its blessing, Matth. v. 3. James iv. 6, 7, 8. 1 Pet. v. 5, 6.  
*Husbands*, their duty, Eph. v. 23, 25. Col. iii. 19, 1 Pet. iii. 7. See Preface to Ephesians.

## J.

- JAMES*, brother of John, Acts xii. 2.  
 — bishop of Jerusalem, Acts xii. 17. James i. 1. and Preface to James.  
*Jannes and Jambres*, 2 Tim. iii. 8.  
*Jailor* converted, Acts xvi. 27.  
*Iconium*, Paul there, Acts xiv. 1.  
*Idols*, idol feasts, 1 Cor. chap. viii. and x.  
 — pollution of idols, Acts xv. 20.  
*Jerusalem*, the destruction of it foretold, Matth. 24. Mark xiii. Luke xvii. 20, &c. Luke xxi. 1 Thess. v. 1, 2, 3. 2 Pet. iii. 10. See Day of the Lord, and Coming of Christ.  
 — i. e. the church, Gal. iv. 24, 25.  
 — the heavenly Jerusalem, Heb. xii. 22.  
*Jesus*, the meaning of that name, Matth. i. 21.  
 — that Jesus is the true Messiah, the main article of Christianity. See Christ and Faith.  
 — Bar Jesus. See Elymas.  
*Jesting* forbidden, Eph. v. 4.  
*Jews*, their vices, Rom. ii. and chap. iii. 10, &c. 2 Tim. iii. 2. James i. 1, &c.  
 — their rejection, Mat. viii. 12. xxi. 43, &c. xxii. 7.  
 — their destruction foretold, Mat. xxiv. See Jerusalem.  
*Jews,*

# I N D E X.

*Jews*, their privileges, Rom. ix. 4, 5. Rom. ii. 17, 18, 19.  
20.

— were first to be preached to, Acts xi. 20. ix. 12, 13,  
14, 15, xvii. 1, 2. xviii. 4. xix. 8.

*Jews*, signifies Jewish christians, Gal. ii. 13.

*Ignorance* an excuse for sin, and how far, Acts iii. 17. 1 Tim.  
i. 13. Luke xii. 48. John xv. 22.

*Illuminated*, Heb. x. 32. See *Enlightened*.

*Image*, the sense of it.

— of his person, Heb. i. 3.

— very image of the things, Heb. x. 1.

— image of the earthy, heavenly, 1 Cor. xv. 49.

— conformed to the image of God, of Christ, Rom. viii.  
29. 2 Cor. iii. 18.

— Jupiter's image, Acts xix. 35.

*Image-worship* forbidden. See *Idol Idolatry*.

*Immortality*, 1 Tim. vi. 16, 2 Tim. i. 10.

*Impossible*, the sense of it, Heb. vi. 4. Matth. xix. 26. Luke  
xvii. 1.

*Imputed*. See *Accounted*.

*Incestuous* Corinthian. 1 Cor. v.

*Indifferent things*, Rom. xiv. 1 Cor. viii. 7, 13.

*Industry* encouraged, 2 Thess. iii. 6, &c.

*Inheritance* of the saints, Ephes. i. 14, 18. Acts xxvi. 18,  
Heb. vi. 12. and elsewhere.

— by inheritance Christ obtained a more excel-  
lent name, Heb. i. 4.

*Infirmity*, one sense of it, Rom. vi. 19. xv. 1.

— another, 2 Cor. xi. 30. xii. 5, 10.

— another, 1 Tim. v. 23. See *Weak*.

*Infidelity*, obstinate infidelity, not to be cured by miracles:  
The great danger of it, the unreasonableness of it, Matth.  
xvi. 4. See *Apostacy*.

*Interpretation*, private, 2 Pet. i. 20. Of Tongues, 1 Cor.  
xii. 20. xiv. 26.

*Interrogations*, their use in the eastern languages, 1 Cor. ix.  
5.

*Intercession* of Christ, Heb. vii. 25. 1 John ii. 1.

— of the spirit, what? Rom. viii. 26, 27.

— another sense of it, Rom. xi. 2.

*John Baptist*, the design of his baptism and preaching, Mat.  
iii. 1, &c. Mark. i. 1, 8. Luke i. 14, &c. Luke iii. 1,  
&c. Acts i. 4. xiii. 24, 25. xix. 4. John i. 6, 7, 8, 15,  
23, &c. iii. 25, &c.

— Jesus, his character of him, Matth. xi. 10, 11, &c.

— his death, Matth. xiv. 6, 7, &c.

— why Jesus would be baptized by him, Matth. iii. 14.

15.

*John Mark*, Acts xii. 25.

*Joseph* of Arimathea, Luke xiii. 50, &c.

*Join*

## I N D E X.

- Fain unto*, Acts v. 13. viii. 29. ix. 26.  
 — to the Lord, to a harlot, 1 Cor. vi. 16, 17.  
*Israel* of God, Gal. vi. 16.  
 — after the flesh, 1 Cor. x. 18. } See *Jews*.  
*Judas*, the traitor, Acts i. 16, &c.  
 — another Judas, Acts xxxvi. 37.  
*Judgment*, future judgment. The certainty of it, Acts xvii. 31. Rom. ii. 16. 2 Cor. v. 10.  
 — descriptions of the last judgment, Matth. xxv. 31. &c. 1 Thess. iv. 15, 16, 17. 1 Thess. v. 1, 2, 3. 2 Thess. i. 7, 8, 9, 10. 2 Pet. iii. 7, 14.  
 — these descriptions are often mixed up with, and expressed in, the same terms with those of the destruction of Jerusalem. See *Pref.* to Thess. § 4. *Pref.* to 1 Pet. §. 5. See also in *Day of the Lord*. *Coming of Christ*. *Jews and Jerusalem*.  
 — God's final judgment will be impartial, Matth. xvi. 27. Rom. ii. 2, 10, 11, 26, 27.  
*Judging*, rash judging condemned. See *Censoriousness*.  
 — judges of evil thoughts, James ii. 4.  
 — judgment begin at the house of God, 1 Pet. iv. 17.  
 — his judgment was taken away, Acts viii. 33.  
 — I give my judgment, 1 Cor. vii. 25.  
*Justice* enjoined, Matth. vii. 12.  
*Just*, just man, *δικαιος*, i. e. merciful, Mark i. 19. Acts x 22.  
 — the larger sense of it, Acts xxiv. 15. Heb. xii. 23.  
 — the just one, Acts iii. 14. vii. 52. xxii. 14. James v. 6.  
*Justification*, justify: mostly signifies the pardon of sin; and our being put into a state of salvation, upon the conditions of the gospel, Acts xiii. 39. Rom. iii. 30. iv. 5. v. 1. viii. 30. Gal. ii. 16, 17, 21. v. 4. Tit. iii. 7. James ii. 21, 22, &c. and elsewhere.  
 — Abraham justified, Rom. iv. 2. James ii. 21.  
 — God justified, Rom. iii. 4. 1 Tim. iii. 16.  
 — justifieth the ungodly, Rom. iv. 5.

### K

- KINDRED* of the high priest, what? Acts iv. 6.  
*Kingdom* of heaven, of God, of Christ, i. e. the gospel-religion, Matth. iv. 23. xiii. 28. vi. 33. xii. 28. Mark i. 14. Luke i. 33. viii. 10. xiii. 18, 20. and in abundance of other places.  
*Kingdom* of God, i. e. future glory and happiness, Luke xiii. 23. 28. 1 Cor. vi. 9. xv. 50. 2 Tim. iv. 18. 2 Pet. i. 11. 1 Tim. iv. 1. Acts xiv. 22. and elsewhere.  
*Kingdom* of Israel, understood of a temporal monarchy, Acts i. 6. Luke xvii. 20, 21. John xviii. 36.  
*Kiss*, holy kiss, Rom. xv. 16. 1 Thess. v. 26. 1 Pet. v. 14.  
*Kneeling*, a posture of worship, Acts vii. 60. ix. 40. xx. 36. xxi. 5. 1 Thess. v. 26.

*Kneeling,*

## I N D E X.

*Kneeling*, bow the knee, Ephes. iii. 14. Phil. ii. 10.  
 — the feeble knees, Heb. xii. 12.  
*Know*, to know, i. e. to love and approve of, Matth. vii. 23.  
 1 Cor. viii. 3. John x. 14. Gal. iv. 9.  
 — to know nothing among you, 1 Cor. ii. 2.  
 — to know God, Christ, 1 Theff. iv. 5. 2 Theff. i. 8.  
 1 John ii. 6. the Notes there.  
*Knowledge* is a great aggravation of sin, Matth. xi. 21, 24.  
 Mark vi. 11. James iv. 17. See *Ignorance*.  
 — one sense of it, 1 Cor. viii. 1, 2, 7, 10, 11.  
 — another, 1 Cor. i. 5. xiii. 2. 2 Cor. viii. 7.  
 — the word of knowledge, 1 Cor. xii. 8.  
 — by knowledge, 1 Cor. xiv. 6. 2 Cor. vi. 6.  
 — form of knowledge, Rom. ii. 20.  
 — husbands dwell with their wives according to knowledge, 1 Pet. iii. 7.  
 — add to virtue knowledge, 2 Pet. iii. 5.  
*Known*, i. e. approved, John x. 14. See *Know*.  
*Known* unto God are all his works, Acts xv. 18.

## L

*LABOUR*, that labour among you, 1 Theff. v. 12. 1 Tim. v. 17. 1 Cor. xvi. 16.  
 — of love, Heb. vi. 10.  
*Eame*, christian, Heb. xiii. 13. See *Weak*.  
*Laodicea*, the epistle, Col. iv. 16.  
*Law*, going to law, how far forbidden, Matth. v. 40. Cor. vi. 1, 6.  
 — the mosaical law, how taken? Rom. iv. 13.  
 1. The ceremonial law not of eternal obligation, but temporary, typical, and figurative, Acts vii. 44, 50. Gal. iii. 19, 26. Heb. viii. 7, 13. ix. 9, 10. x. 1, &c. xii. 27. See *Ceremonial*.  
 2. It cannot justify men, nor is necessary to a christian, Rom. iii. 20. iv. 15. Gal. Chapters iii. iv. and v. Heb. vii. 11.  
 — Jewish, how terribly delivered, Heb. xii. 18.  
 — law and prophets, i. e. the Old Testament, Rom. iii. 19, 21. Gal. iv. 21.  
 — lawful, i. e. possible, 2 Cor. vi. 1, 6.  
 — them that are without law, 1 Cor. ix. 21.  
 — Dead to the law, Gal. ii. 19.  
 — the royal law, James ii. 8.  
 — the law is open, Acts xix. 38.  
 — how Christ fulfilled the law, Matth. v. 17, 18. Rom. x. 4.  
 — lawfully used, 1 Tim. i. 8.  
 — strive lawfully, 2 Tim. ii. 5.  
 — all things are lawful, 1 Cor. xvi. 18.  
*Learn*, learned the sense of it, Heb. v. 8.

*Learn,*

## I N D E X.

- Learn*, much learning made thee mad, Acts xxvi. 24.  
 ——— Moses was learned, Acts vii. 22.  
*Letteth*, he that letteth, 2 Theff. ii. 7.  
*Letter*, the oldness of the letter, Rom. vii. 6.  
 ——— letter killeth, 2 Cor. iii. 6.  
 ——— letter and spirit, *ibid*.  
 ——— his letters are weighty, 2 Cor. x. 10.  
 ——— how large a letter, the sense of it, Gal. vi. 11.  
*Liberty*, christian liberty, 1 Pet. ii. 16. Gal. ii. 4.  
 ——— called to liberty, Gal. v. 1, 13.  
 ——— law of liberty, James i. 15. ii. 12.  
 ——— cautions how to use our liberty, 1 Pet. ii. 16. Gal. v. 13. 1 Cor viii. 19.  
*Liberty*, another sense of it, 2 Cor. iii. 17.  
*Libertines*, the synagogue of libertines, Acts vi. 9.  
*Life*, future life.  
 ——— hid with Christ in God, Col. iii. 3.  
 ——— all the words of his life, Acts v. 20.  
 ——— book of life. See *Book*.  
 ——— the true God, and eternal life, 1 John v. 20.  
*Light*, in the light, of light, &c. Ephes. v. 8. 1 Theff. v. 5.  
 1 John ii. 8. 1 John i. 5, 6, 7.  
 ——— dwelleth in light, 1 Tim. vi. 6.  
 ——— father of lights, Jam. i. 17.  
*Like*, a prophet like unto me, the sense of it, Acts iii. 22, vii. 37.  
*Line*, another man's line, 2 Cor. x. 16.  
*Live* unto God, Christ liveth in me, Gal. ii. 20.  
 ——— to live is Christ, Phil. i. 21.  
 ——— now we live, 1 Theff. iii. 8.  
*Locusts*, what? Matth. iii. 4.  
*Lord*, to do a thing unto the Lord, Rom. xiv. 6.  
 ——— to live, die unto the Lord, Rom. xiv. 8.  
 ——— in the flesh, and in the Lord, Philem. 16.  
 ——— to see the Lord, Heb. xii. 14.  
 ——— in the Lord, Rom. xvi. 2. 1 Cor. vii. 39. ix. 1. Eph. ii. 21. iv. 17. v. 8. 1 Theff. iii. 8. and elsewhere.  
 ——— Lord of dead and living, Rom. xiv. 9.  
 ——— For the Lord's sake, 1 Pet. ii. 13.  
*Love*, christian love enjoined, John xiii. 34, 35. xv. 12, 13, 14. Rom. xiii. 18.  
 ——— God is love, 1 John iv. 16. See *Charity*.  
*Loved*, Jacob have I loved, Rom. ix. 13.  
*Luke*, the author of the Acts, Acts i. 1.  
 ——— was a physician, Col. iv. 14.  
*Lydia* converted, Acts xvi. 14.  
*Lyar* 1 John ii. 22. iv. 20.



## I N D E X.

*Lyar*, make God a lyar, 1 John i. 10. v. 10.  
*Lying* forbidden, Eph. iv. 25. Col. iii. 9.  
 — let God be true, and every man a lyar, Rom. iii. 4.  
 — Cretians alway lyars, Tit. i. 12.  
*Lion*, the lion, 2 Tim. iv. 17.

## M.

*MAGISTRATES*, their duty, and the end of their office,  
 Rom. xiii. 3, 4. 1 Pet. ii. 13, 14.  
 — our duty to them, Rom. xiii. 1, &c. Tit. iii. 1. 1 Pet.  
 ii. 13, 14. Matth. xxii. 21.  
*Mammon* of unrighteousness, Matth. xvi. 9.  
*Man*, son of man, Heb. ii. 6. Matth. viii. 20. Mark ii. 10.  
 John v. 27. Luke ix. 22. and elsewhere.  
 — after man, by man, of man, Gal. i. 11, 12. Luke vii. 34.  
 — after the manner of men. See Men.  
 — the old men, new men, Col. iii. 9, 10.  
 — of sin, 2 Thess. ii. 3,  
*Marks* of the Lord Jesus, Gal. vi. 17.  
*Marriage* recommended, 1 Cor. vii. 2. Heb. xiii. 4.  
 — why discouraged, 1 Cor. vii. 9.  
 — with infidels, forbidden, 1 Cor. vii. 39. 2 Cor. vi. 14.  
 — forbidden to marry, 1 Tim. iv. 3.  
*Mary and Martha*, Luke x. 38.  
*Masters*, their duty, Eph. vi. 9. Col. iv. 1. 1 Pet. ii. 13.  
 — i. e. teachers, doctors, Mat. xxiii. 10. James iii. 1.  
*Matter*, in any matter, 1 Thess. vi. 4.  
*Matthias* chosen, Acts i. 23.  
*Measure*, beyond our measure, 2 Cor. x. 13, 14, 15.  
 — of the stature of Christ, Eph. iv. 13.  
*Meat*, strong meat, Heb. v. 12, 13. 1 Cor. iii. 2.  
*Meats*, and drinks. See indifferent things.  
 — spiritual meat, 1 Cor. x. 3.  
*Mediator* of one, Gal. iii. 19, 20.  
 — one mediator, 1 Tim. ii. 5.  
*Mediatorship* of Christ, the excellency and necessity of it,  
 Heb. viii. 6. xii. 24. ix. 15. vii. 3, 20, 26. viii. 1. ix.  
 11. x. 21. and elsewhere.  
*Meekness* recommended, Matth. v. 5. See Humility.  
*Melchizedeck*, Heb. v. 6, 10. vii. 1.  
*Melita*, the isle, Acts xxviii. 1.  
*Men*, after the manner of men, Rom. iii. 5. Gal. iii. 15.  
 — taken for angels, Acts i. 10.  
 — of men, Gal. i. 1. See Man.  
*Mercurius*, Acts xiv. 12.  
*Mercy*, the benefits of it, James ii. 13. See Charity.  
*Mercy*,

# I N D E X.

- Mercy*, sure mercies of David, Acts xiii. 34.  
 — on whom I will have mercy, Rom. ix. 18.  
*Messiah*. See Christ.  
*Merry*, the sense of it, James v. 13.  
*Michael*, mentioned, 1 Pet. ii. 11.  
*Milk*, need of milk, Heb. v. 12, 13. 1 Cor. ii. 2.  
*Midst*, set them in the midst, Acts iv. 7.  
*Mind* of the Lord, Rom. xi. 34. Of the spirit, Rom. viii. 27.  
 — law of the mind, Rom. vii. 23.  
 — write the law in their minds, Heb. x. 16.  
*Ministers* to be maintained, 1 Cor. i. 1, 15.  
 — why St. Paul refused it, 1 Cor. ix. 17, &c. 2 Cor. xi. 8, &c.  
 — their duty, Luke viii. 16. xxi. 25, 26. John xiii. 4, 14. Mark iv. 21, Luke xi. 17, &c. John x. 1, 2, &c. xiv. 15. xv. 8, 10.  
 — their reward and punishment, Mark ix. 50. Luke xii. 40, 41, &c.  
*Minister*, to minister, Acts xiii. 1. 2 Pet. iv. 11.  
 — to the saints, 1 Cor. xvi. 15. 2 Cor. ix. 1. viii. 4.  
 — John to their minister, Acts xiii. 5.  
 — of the circumcision, Rom. xv. 8.  
*Ministration*, one sense of it, Acts vi. 1.  
 — another, 2 Cor. iii. 7, 8, 9.  
*Miracles*, true and false miracles, how to be distinguished? Mat. xii. 27, 28, &c. 1 Cor. xii. 3. 1 John iv. 1, 6.  
 — Christ's miracles, and the truth of them, Matth. xii. 27, &c. John x. 37, 38. viii. 49, 50. Luke xi. 17, &c.  
 — why Christ forbade them to be published, Mat. ix. 30. xvi. 20. Mark viii. 26.  
 — of the apostles, Acts iii. 2, &c. v. 1, 8. xiii. 9, &c. xix. 11, 12. xx. 9, &c. and elsewhere.  
 — will not convince the obstinate, Matth. xvi. 4. Luke xvi. 30, 31. Mark viii. 12. Luke iv. 23, 27. xi. 19, 31, 32. See Infidelity.  
*Moderation*, Phil. iv. 5. 1 Tim. v. 21. Jam. iii. 17. ii. 4.  
*Mockers*. See Scoffers.  
*Mount*, Christ's transfiguration there, Matth. xvii. 1, &c. Mark ix. 2. 2 Pet. i. 18.  
 — that burneth with fire, Heb. xii. 18.  
 — Sinai, Gal. iv. 24, 25.  
 — come unto Mount Sion, Heb. xii. 22.  
 — Christ's sermon on the Mount, Matth. v. 1, &c.  
*Mourning*, the sense of it, Matth. v. 4.  
*Moral* obedience, the main thing in true religion, Matt. xii. 7. xv. 1, 12. xxii. 36, 48. xxiii. 24, 27. Luke iii. 10, 14. xi. 41, 42. Matth. vii. 21, 22, &c. Matth. xxii. 11, 14. Rom.

## I N D E X.

- Rom. xiv. 17. 1 Pet. i. 15, 16, 1 John ii. 3, 4, 5, 6. v. 6. 3 John 4. James i. 27. ii. 22. See *Ceremonies*.  
*Mortification* recommended, Col. iii. 5. 2 Cor. ix. 27.  
*Moses*, his faith and virtue, Heb. iii. 2. 5. xi. 24.  
*Mothers*, elder women as mothers, 1 Tim. v. 2.  
*Mother* of us all, Gal. iv. 26.  
 ——— mother, sister, and brother, Matth. xii. 48, 49, 50.  
 Mark iii. 33, &c.  
*Must*, must be, a limited sense of it, 1 Cor. xi. 19.  
*Mystery*, signifies any thing not expected or known before, but now revealed, Rom. xi. 25. xvi. 25. 1 Cor. ii. 7. xiii. 2. xiv. 2. xv. 51. Ephes. i. 9, 10. iii. 3, 4, 9. vi. 19. Col. i. 26, 27. ii. 2. iv. 3.  
*Mysteries* of the kingdom of God, mystery of godliness signify the gospel-doctrine and religion in general, Matth. xiii. 11. Mark. iv. 11. Luke. viii. 10. 1 Tim. iii. 9. 16. 1 Cor. xiv. 5.  
*Mystery*, signifies a comparison or analogy, Eph. v. 32. Rev. i. 20. and xii. 7.  
 ——— of iniquity, 2 Thess. ii. 7.

## N

- NAME*, of God, of Christ, signify,  
 1. God, or Christ himself, Acts iii. 16. xv. 4. Heb. xiii. 15. James ii. 7. 1 Pet. iv. 14. Rom. ix. 17.  
 2. The authority, power, and religion of Christ, Acts xlvii. 10, 12. 1 Cor. i. 10. Acts iii. 6. xxvi. 9. 1 Pet. iv. 14. Mark xvi. 17. and elsewhere.  
 ——— to do a thing, to do all in the name of Christ, Col. iii. 17. 1 Cor. v. 4.  
 ——— to call on the name of Christ, of God, is,  
 1. To profess his true religion, Acts ii. 28. ix. 14. xii. 16. xv. 17. Rom. x. 11, 12, 13, 14. 1 Cor. i. 2. 2 Tim. ii. 19, 22. Jam. ii. 7.  
 2. Invoking and praying to him, Acts vii. 59.  
 ——— or through his intercession, Heb. xiii. 15.  
 3. Invoking him for miraculous cures, Acts xix. 13. iii. 6.  
 ——— names written in heaven, Heb. xii. 23. Phil. iv. 3.  
 ——— words and names, Acts xviii. 15.  
 ——— signifies things or persons, Acts i. 15. Acts iv. 12. Eph. i. 21. Phil. ii. 9.  
*Nation*, why St. Paul accuseth not his nation, Acts xxviii. 19.  
*Nature*, the sense of it, 1 Cor. xi. 14. Heb. ii. 16. 1 Pet. i. 4.  
*Nazarene*, Nazarite.  
 ——— Jesus called a Nazarene, Matth. ii. 23.  
 ——— Christians called Nazarenes, Acts xxiv. 5.  
*Nigh*, the word is nigh thee, Rom. x. 8.

*Night,*

## I N D E X.

*Night*, i. e. a state of ignorance and unregeneracy, Rom. xii. 12. 1 Theff. v. 5.  
 — sleep in the night, drunk in the night, 1 Theff. v. 7.  
 — thief in the night, 1 Theff. v. 9. 2 Pet. iii. 10.  
*Number*, change of number, common in the eastern languages, Matth. xxvi. 8. xxvii. 44. xxi. 7. ii. 20. xxii. 16.

## O

*OATH*, the lewdness and use of an oath, Heb. vi. 16.  
*Oaths*, of all kinds, in common conversation, forbidden, Mat. v. 34, 37. xxiii. 18, 22. James v. 12.  
*Obedience*. See *Moral Obedience*.  
 ——— to civil powers. See *Magistrates*.  
 ——— partial obedience condemned, James ii. 10, 11.  
*Objections* against St. Paul's doctrine, answered, Rom. iii. 7; 8. vi. 1, &c.  
*Old*, things new and old, Matth. xiii. 52.  
 — old things are passed away, 2 Cor. v. 17.  
*One*, these three are one, 1 John v. 7.  
 — God is one, Gal. iii. 20.  
 — is one spirit, 1 Cor. vi. 17.  
 — all one in Christ. Gal. iii. 28.  
*Once*, *ἀπαλ, ἀπαπαλ*, the emphatical sense of it, Heb. ix. 26. vi. 4. x. 10. 1 Pet. i. 12. iii. 18, 20. Jude. iii. Heb. vii. 27.  
*Off*, them that are afar off, Eph. ii. 13, 17.  
*Offend*, to offend others, Matth. xvii. 7. Luke xvii. 1. Rom. xiv. 20, &c. 1 Cor. viii. 13. 2 Cor. vi. 3, &c. Matth. xviii. 6. Mark ix. 42.  
 — Christ a rock of offence, offence of the cross, Rom. ix. 33. Gal. v. 11. 1 Pet. ii. 8. 1 Cor. i. 23.  
*Oracles* of God, 1 Pet. iv. 11.  
*Ordained* to eternal life, Acts xiii. 48.  
 — ordinance of God, Rom. xiii. 1.  
 — fore-ordained, Eph. ii. 10. 1 Pet. i. 20. Jude 4.  
 — law of ordinances, Eph. ii. 15.  
 — ordain elders, Acts xiv. 23. Tit. i. 5.  
*Ospretation* condemned, Matth. vi. 1, &c.  
*Overseers*, Acts xx. 28. See *Bishop*.  
*Owe* no man any thing, Rom. xiii. 8.  
*Ours*, i. e. Christians, Tit. iii. 14.  
*Oxen*, doth God take care for oxen, 1 Cor. ix. 9.

## P.

*PALACE*, Cæsar's, Phil. i. 13.  
*Parables*, why Jesus made use of them? Mat. xiii. 10, 11, 17.  
 — the several parables of Christ. See Dr. CLARK'S Index to the Gospels, in parables. *Parents,*

# INDEX.

- Parents* duty, Ephes. vi. 4. Col. iii. 21. See *Pref.* to Ephes. i. 1.
- Paradise*, 2 Cor. xii. 2. Luke xxiii. 43.
- Partake* of the Lord's table, of devils, 1 Cor. x. 20, 21.  
— of the altar, *ibid.*
- Patience*, perseverance. Heb. iv. 15. x. 23. James v. 10, 11.  
1 Pet. iii. 14, 17, 18. iv. 1, 13, 19. See *Suffering*.
- Path*, streight paths, Heb. xii. 13. Matth. iii. 3. Mark. i. 3. Luke iv. 2.
- Paul* his conversion, Acts chap. ix. 22 and 26.  
— his travel and preaching, into Seleucia, Salamis, Cyprus, Paphos, Perga, Antioch, Acts xiii. Iconium, Lystra, Derbe, Acts xiv. 16. Troas, Philippi, Acts xvi. Athens, Acts xvii. Corinth, Acts xviii. Ephesus, Acts xix. Macedonia, Troas, Miletus, Acts xx. Jerusalem Acts xxi. Cæsarea, Acts xxiii. Rom. xxvii.  
— his trial before the Sanhedrim, Acts xxiii.  
— before Felix, Acts xxiv.  
— before Festus, Acts xxv.  
— before Agrippa, Acts xxvi.  
— his person described, 2 Cor. x. 10. Note *ibid.*  
— his epistles, why hard? 2 Pet. iii. 15, 16. See *Saul*.
- Peace*, grace and peace, Gal. iii. 3. Ephes. i. 2. and elsewhere.  
— peace of God, Phil. iv. 7, 9. Col. iii. 15.  
— preaching peace, Acts x. 36. Ephes. ii. 14, 15, 17.
- Peaceableness*, its duty and blessing, Matth. v. 9. 2 Cor. xiii. 11. Phil. iv. 9. James iii. 17, 18. See *Unity*.
- Perfect*, perfection, signifies.  
1. A complete good christian, Col. i. 28. Phil. iii. 15. Col. iv. 12. iii. 14. Heb. vi. 1. xiii. 21. James iii. 2.  
2. Perfect remission of sins, Heb. ii. 10. x. 1, 14. ix. 9. vii. 11, 19.  
3. Future and perfect happiness, Phil. iii. 12. Heb. v. 9. xi. 4. xii. 23.
- Perish in the using*, the sense of it, Col. ii. 22.
- Permission*, I speak by permission, 1 Cor. vii. 6.
- Persecution*, persecutors.
- Persecution* may be fled from, and prudently avoided, Matth. x. 23. Ephes. v. 15, 17. Col. iv. 5.  
— primitive christianity a state of persecution, 2 Tim. iii. 12. Gal. iv. 29. 1 Thess. ii. 15. and elsewhere.  
— must be patiently endured by every christian when it cannot conscientiously be avoided, 2 Tim. iii. 12. 1 Pet. iii. 17. Matth. x. 33. xvi. 24. Luke xii. 9. Matth. x. 39. Luke xiv. 33. See *Suffering*.
- Person*, God no respecter of persons, Acts x. 34, 35. Gal. 6. Col. iii. 25.

# I N D E X.

- Person*, respect of persons condemned, James ii. 1, &c.
- Persuade* men, 2 Cor. v. 11.
- Peter*, his call to the apostleship, John i. 41, 42.
- his confidence, fall, and repentance, Matth. xxvi. 39, 34, 51, 52, 69, 75.
- his preaching and ministry, Acts i. 15. and Chapters, i. 2, 3, 4, 5, 8, and 10.
- how the church was built upon him, Matth. xiv. 17, 18, 19. John i. 42.
- is reproved by Paul, Gal. viii. 11, &c.
- Pharisees*, the sect, Acts xxiii. 8. xxvi. 5. Matth. xv. 6. Luke xvi. 14. and elsewhere.
- Philip*, account of him, Acts vi. 5. viii. 5. xxi. 8, 9.
- Philosophy*, vain philosophy, Col. ii. 8.
- Philosophers*, dispute with Paul, Acts xvii. 18.
- Physician*, beloved, Col. iv. 14.
- whole need no physician, Matth. ix. 12.
- Pillar*. See *Truth*.
- Place*, to his own place, Acts i. 25.
- Plant*, planted, Rom. vi. 5. 1 Cor. iii. 6, 7, 8.
- Play*, rose up to play, 1 Cor. x. 7.
- Point*, offend in one point, James ii. 10.
- Polygamy*. See *Divorce*.
- Possession*, the purchased possession, Ephes. i. 14.
- Porch*, Solomon's, Acts iii. 11.
- Potter*, power over the clay, Rom. ix. 21.
- Power*, the sense of it, Acts i. 8. Luke xxi. 27. John i. 12. 1 Cor. ii. 4. 2 Tim. iii. 5.
- gospel is the power of God, Rom. i. 16.
- Powers*, civil powers. See *Magistrates*.
- powers, principalities, &c. Ephes. i. 21. iii. 10. vi. 12. Col. i. 16. ii. 10. 1 Pet. iii. 22.
- Prayer*, in general, how it ought to be performed.
- secretly, Matth. vi. 5, 6, 7.
- fervently, Matth. vii. 7, 8, &c.
- effectual fervent prayer, what? James v. 15.
- the prayer of faith, what? James v. 15.
- prayer with the spirit, what? 1 Cor. xiv. 15. James v. 15, 20. Jude 20.
- in an unknown tongue forbidden, 1 Cor. xiv. 15.
- Prayer*, for each other, Acts xii. 15. 2 Cor. i. 11. 1 Theff. v. 15. 2 Theff. iii. 1. Heb. xiii. 18.
- for all men, 1 Tim. ii. 1. Every where, 1 Tim. ii. 8.
- some men not to be prayed for, 1 John v. 16.
- christian prayers are certain of success, Matth. vii. 7, 8, &c. Luke xi. 6, 7, &c. James v. 15, 20. 1 John v. 16. iii. 21, 22. v. 14, 15.

*Prayer,*

# I N D E X.

- Prayer*, the Lord's prayer, Matth. vi. 9, &c. Luke xi. 1. 2. &c.
- Priesthood* of Christ, the divinity of it, Heb. iii. 1, &c. iv. 14, 15. and chapters v. vii. viii. & xi.
- Predestinate*, predestination, signifies God's purpose to call the Gentiles into the christian church, Rom. viii. 29, 30. Eph. i. 5, 11. See *Chosen*.
- Presbyter*, i. e. elder. See *Elder*.
- Presbytery*, 1 Tim. iv. 14. See *Elder*.
- Presence*, St. Paul's presence weak, 1 Cor. x. 10.
- Pricks*, against the pricks, Acts ix. 5.
- Price*, bought with a price, 1 Cor. vii. 25.
- Prison*, spirits in prison, 1 Pet. iii. 19, 20.
- Profession*, a good profession, 1 Tim. vi. 12, 13.
- Promise* to Abraham, Gal. iii. 14.
- of the spirit, *ibid*.
- children of the promise, Gal. iv. 24.
- receive the promise, Heb. x. 36. xi. 33, 39.
- Prophet*, prophecy; how to be tryed and known, Matth. vii. 15, 16, &c. 1 John iv. 1, &c. 1 Cor. xii. 3.
- Prophet* and *Prophecy*, in a large sense, Acts ii. 18. 1 Pet. i. 10. Acts iii. 24. x. 43. and elsewhere.
- in a particular sense signifies either,
1. To foretel future events, Acts xi. 27, 28. xiii. 1. xv. 32. xxi. 9. See 1 Cor. xi. xii. and xiv. chapters.
  - or explaining foregoing events, Matth. xxvi. 68. Mark xiv. 65. Luke xxii. 64.
  2. teaching or explaining the ancient scriptures, Rom. xii. 6. See 1 Cor. xi. xii. and xiv. chapters.
  - in a language understood, 1 Cor. xiv. 1, 3, 4.
  3. Prayer, or singing divine hymns by prophetick inspiration, 1 Cor. xi. 3, 5, 13. Luke ii. 32.
- Prophecies* prove the truth of christianity, 2 Pet. i. 19, 20, 21.
- Propitiation*, 1 John ii. 1, 2. iii. 16. iv. 10. See *Blood*.
- Proportion* of faith, what? Rom. xii. 6.
- Prove*, the sense of it, 1 Theff. v. 21. Rom. xii. 2. 2 Cor. xiii. 5. Gal. vi. 4. Heb. iii. 9. 1 Tim. iii. 10. Eph. v. 10.
- Providence*, proofs and instances of it, Matth. x. 29, 30, 31. Acts xiv. 17. xvii. 27, 28.
- ought to be relied on for all things necessary, Matth. vi. 25, 26, &c. James. iv. 13. 1 Pet. v. 7. Phil. iv. 6. 1 Cor. vii. 32.
- ought not to be tempted by running ourselves upon needless dangers, Matth. iv. 6, 7. Eph. v. 17. Col. iv. 5.
- Punishment*, future, will be proportioned to men's sins, Luke xii. 47, 48. Matth. xvi. 27. 2 Tim. iv. 14.
- will be eternal, Mark ix. 44, 46, 48. Matth. xviii. 8. xxv. 41, 46. 2 Theff. i. 9. Jude 7.

*Publius*, Acts xxviii. 7, 8.  
*Purge*, purged, Heb. ix. 14, 22, 23. x. 2. ix. 14. 2 Pet. i. 9.  
*Pure*, Tit. i. 15. ii. 14. 1 Tim. v. 22.  
*Purity*, its duty and blessing, Matth. v. 8.  
*Purifying*, John iii. 25, 6.  
 — another sense of it, Acts xv. 9.  
*Purification* of Mary, Luke ii.  
 — purification, Acts xxi. 26.  
*Purpose*, eternal purpose, Eph. iii. 11.  
*Put on Christ*, Rom. xiii. 14.

## Q

*QUENCH* not the spirit, 1 Thess. v. 19.  
*Questions*, Jewish, foolish questions, 1 Tim. vi. 4. i. 6. 2 Tim. ii. 23. Tit. iii. 9.  
 — proposed by the Corinthians to St. Paul, and answered by him. See 1 Cor. Chap. vii. to xvi.  
*Quiet*, study to be quiet, 1 Thess. iv. 11. 2 Thess. iii. 12.  
 — quiet spirit, 1 Pet. iii. 4.

## R

*RAHAB*, the harlot, Heb. xi. 31. James ii. 25.  
*Raised*, for this cause have I raised thee up, Rom. ix. 17.  
 See *Resurrection*.  
*Ransom* for all, 1 Tim. ii. 6.  
*Received*, the sense of it, Acts xv. 4.  
 — receive ye one another, Rom. xv. 7.  
*Redemption*, day of redemption, Eph. iv. 30.  
 — of our body, Rom. viii. 23.  
 — of the purchase of possession, Eph. i. 14.  
*Redemption* that is in Jesus. See *Blood*.  
*Refreshing*, times of refreshing, Acts iii. 19.  
*Regeneration*. See *Born again*.  
*Rejoice* in the Lord, Phil. iii. 2. iv. 4. 1 Thess. v. 16.  
*Rejoicing*, the sense of it, James iv. 16.  
*Religion*, the main design, the sum and substance of it, James i. 22. 27. Rom. xiv. 17. See *Moral Obedience*.  
 — the infinite importance and advantage of it, Matth. vi. 33. ix. 43, 44, &c.  
*Remember*, the sense of it, Heb. xii. 17.  
*Remnant*, Rom. xi. 5, 13. ix. 27.  
*Repentance*, the condition of the gospel, Matth. iii. 8. iv. 17. Acts ii. 38. iii. 19, 26. See *Moral Obedience*.  
 — encouragements to repentance, Matth. xviii. 12, 13, 14. Luke viii. 47. 2 Pet. iii. 9. 2 Cor. vii. 9, 10.  
 — late repentance, the danger of it, Matth. xx. 6, 7. Luke



# I N D E X.

- Luke xxiii. 42. Dr. CLARKE's note and paraph. Luke xii. 58, 59. xiii. 24, 25, &c. xxi. 34, 36.
- Report*, a good report, Heb. xi. 2, 39.
- of good report, Phil. iv. 8.
- Reproach*, concerning reproach, 2 Cor. xi. 21.
- of Christ, Heb. xi. 26.
- bearing his reproach, Heb. xiii. 13. See *Suffering*.
- Reprobate*, the sense of it, 2 Cor. xiii. 5, 6. Tit. i. 16. Rom. i. 25. 2 Tim. iii. 8.
- Reproof*, a duty, and how to be managed, Mat. vii. 3, 4, &c. xviii. 15, &c. 2 Tim. iv. 2. 1 Tim. v. 1. Tit. i. 13. ii. 15.
- Rest*, the sense of it, 2 Theff. i. 7.
- of God, what? Heb. iii. 11, 18. iv. 1, &c.
- Restitution* of all things, Acts iii. 21.
- for injuries, Luke xix. 8.
- Resurrection* of the dead, taken for the future state in general, Matth. xxii. 30, 33. Mark xii. 25, 26, &c. Luke xx. 37, &c. Acts iv. 2. xvii. 18. xxiii. 6. 1 Cor. xv. 13. and elsewhere.
- of Christ proved, Acts i. 3, &c. 1 Cor. xv. 3, 9.
- why not shewn to all the Jews, Acts x. 41.
- insisted on as the main article of christianity, Acts i. 22. ii. 32, 36. iii. 15. iv. 33. v. 30. x. 40. xiii. 30, 31. xvii. 31. xxiii. 8, 6. xxiv. 15. Rom. i. 4. 1 Cor. xv. 12. &c. 2 Tim. ii. 8. 1 Pet. i. 3. and elsewhere. See *Ascension*.
- it assures us of our resurrection, Rom. iv. 25. Eph. ii. 1. 2 Theff. iv. 14. Col. ii. 12. iii. 1. 1 Pet. i. 3.
- of our bodies proved, and the objections against it answered, 1 Cor. xv. 20, 21, &c.
- the time and circumstances of it, 1 Cor. xv. 23, 35, &c. 1 Theff. iv. 16, 17.
- some taught the resurrection was past, 2 Tim. ii. 18.
- Reward*, future reward will be proportionate to men's virtues, Matth. xvi. 27. x. 41. Luke xix. 15, 19. Matth. xiii. 12. 1 Cor. iii. 8. ix. 17, 18. and elsewhere. See *Punishment*.
- Revenge* forbidden, Matth. v. 38, 39, &c. Luke vi. 27. ix. 54, 55, &c. 1 Theff. v. 15. 1 Pet. iii. 9. Rom. xii. 19. and elsewhere.
- Revelation*, the sense of it, Gal. ii. 2. 1 Cor. xiv. 6, 26. Eph. i. 17.
- God will reveal even this, Phil. iii. 15.
- revealed from heaven, 2 Theff. i. 7.
- of Jesus Christ, 2 Pet. i. 13.
- Riches*, the danger of them, Matth. xix. 23, 24. Mark x. 23. Luke xviii. 24. 1 Tim. vi. 9, 10. James v. 1.
- the uncertainty of them, James i. 11.
- the true use of them, 2 Tim. vi. 17, 18, 19. Luke xii. 33.

## I N D E X.

- Riches, riches of the world, of the gentiles, Rom. xi. 12.*  
*Righteousness of God, of man, hath variety of acceptations.*  
 1. Righteousness of God, signifies the same with justification, or the method of pardon and salvation under the gospel, Rom. i. 17. iii. 21, 22, 26. i. 30, 31. x. 4, 5, 6. 2 Cor. v. 21. Gal. ii. 21. iii. 6, 21. Phil. iii. 9. Jam. i. 20. ii. 23. iii. 18. 1 Cor. i. 38. and elsewhere.  
 2. His divine justice in rewards and punishments, Acts xvii. 31. 1 Pet. ii. 23. and elsewhere.  
 — of men signifies,  
 1. Moral obedience, 2 Cor. vi. 7. Matth. v. 20. 1 Pet. ii. 24. 1 John ii. 29. iii. 7. Acts x. 35. Rom. vi. 13, 18, 19. Eph. iv. 24. 1 Tim. vi. 11. and elsewhere.  
 2. Liberality, 2 Cor. ix. 9, 10.  
    — and mercy, Matth. i. 19. Acts x. 22.  
    — righteous man taken for a Christian, 1 Tim. i. 9.  
 3. Justice, Acts xxiv. 25. Tit. ii. 12.  
*Risen with Christ, Col. iii. 1. ii. 12. Rom. vi. 1, 12.*  
*Robbery, the sense of it, Phil. ii. 6,*  
*Rock. See Stone. See Peter.*  
*Room, upper room, Acts i. 13.*  
*Root of bitterness, Heb. xii. 15.*  
 — and branches. i. e. Jews and Gentiles, Rom. chap. xi. xvi, xvii, xviii, &c.  
*Rulers of the darkness of this world, Eph. vi. 12.*  
 — spiritual rulers, duty to them, Heb. xii. 17, 18.  
*Run in a race, 1 Cor. ix. 24, 26.*  
 — him that willeth and runneth, Rom. ix. 16.

## S.

- SABBATH, the sense of it, Col. ii. 16.*  
 — day's journey, Acts i. 12.  
 — the next sabbath, Acts xiii. 42.  
*Sabbaoth, Lord of Sabbaoth, James v. 4.*  
*Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, 1 Cor. xi. 20, &c.*  
*Sadducees, their opinions, Matth. xxii. 23, to the 33d. Acts iv. 2. xxiii. 8.*  
*Saints sanctified, i. e. christians, Acts v. 13. ix. 33. xx. 32.*  
 Rom. i. 7. xv. 2. xvi. 15. 1 Cor. i. 2. vii. 14. vi. 11.  
 Eph. i. 5. Phil. i. 1. Col. i. 4. and elsewhere.  
 — shall judge the world, 1 Cor. vi. 2.  
 — perfecting of the saints, Eph. iv. 12.  
 — saints in light, Col. i. 12.  
*Sanctification, sanctified, signifies,*  
 1. Chastity, purity, 1 Thess. iv. 3, 4. Eph. v. 26.  
 2. Being

## I N D E X.

2. Being made christians, or dedicated to God, through Christ, Acts xx. 32. 1 Cor. i. 2. Jude 1. 1 Cor. vi. 11. vii. 14. and elsewhere.
  3. It signifies also to assist, confirm, cleanse, pardon, or consecrate, John xvii. 17, 19. 1 Theff. v. 23. Rom. xv. 16. Heb. ix. 13.
- Sanctification*, and to make a thing lawful, 1 Tim. iv. 5.
- Salt*, christians called the salt of the earth, Matth. v. 13. Mark ix. 49, 50. Luke xiv. 34.
- seasoned with salt, Col. iv. 6.
- Samuel* mentioned, Acts iii. 24.
- Satan*, to deliver unto Satan, 1 Cor. v. 5. 1 Tim. i. 20.
- messenger of Satan, 2 Cor. xii. 7.
- Satan hindred us, 1 Theff. ii. 18.
- working of Satan, 2 Theff. ii. 9.
- Saul*, account of him, Acts vii. 58. viii. 1, &c. See Paul.
- Saviour*. See Jesus.
- Save*, saved, the sense of it, Acts ii. 40, 47.
- all Israel shall be saved, Rom. xi. 26.
- all men to be saved, 1 Tim. ii. 4. iv. 10.
- scarcely be saved, James iv. 18.
- salvation, Heb. ix. 28. Acts iv. 12. Luke i. 69. Rom. x. 10. Eph. i. 13. Tit. ii. 11. and elsewhere.
- Savour* of death, of life. 2 Cor. ii. 16.
- Saying*, a faithful saying, 1 Tim. i. 15. iii. 1. iv. 9.
- School master*, the law a school-master, Gal. iii. 24, 25.
- Science*, falsely so called, 1 Tim. vi. 21.
- Scoffers*, 2 Pet. iii. 3. Jude 8.
- Sea*, baptized in the sea, 1 Cor. x. 1, 2.
- Seal*, sealed, 2 Cor. i. 22. Eph. i. 13. iv. 30. See Spirit.
- having the seal, 2 Tim. ii. 19.
- sealed this fruit, Rom. xv. 28.
- of mine apostleship, 1 Cor. ix. 2.
- Searching* diligently, 1 Pet. i. 10, 11.
- Season*, in season, out of season, 2 Tim. iv. 2. See Time.
- Secret*, done in secret, Eph. v. 12.
- See*, seeing.
- no man, Acts ix. 7.
- good, Matth. v. 8. Heb. xii. 14.
- Seeing*, see not, Luke viii. 10. Matth. xiii. 13.
- Seed*, corruptible, incorruptible, 1 Pet. i. 23.
- his seed remaineth, 1 John iii. 9.
- the seed, thy seed, i. e. Christ, Gal. iii. 15, 16. Heb. xi. 18.
- counted for the seed, Rom. ix. 8.
- Seem*, seemeth, the particular sense of it, Mark x. 42. Luke viii. 18. 1 Cor. xi. 16, 22. Gal. ii. 2, 6, 9. Heb. iv. 1.

# INDEX.

- Separate*, Paul and Barnabas separated to the ministry, Acts xiii. 1.  
 — from sinners, Heb. vii. 26.  
 — i. e. excommunicate, Luke vi. 22.  
*Separated*, the sense of it, Rom. i. 1. Gal. i. 15.  
*Servants*, or slaves, their duty, Eph. vi. 5. Col. iii. 22. 1 Tim. vi. 1. Tit. ii. 9. 1 Pet. ii. 18.  
*Shake*, shaken, Heb. xii. 26, 27. Mark xiii. 25. Luke xxi. 26.  
*Shepherds*, the birth of Christ revealed to them, Luke ii. 8.  
 — Christ the shepherd, John x. 1, 17.  
*Shrines*, silver, Acts xix. 24.  
*Shipwreck* of St. Paul, Acts xxvii.  
*Simon bar Jonah*, and *Cephas*, John i. 42.  
 — *Magus*, Acts viii. 9, &c.  
*Simplicity*, 2 Cor. i. 12. Rom. xii. 8. 2 Cor. xi. 3.  
*Sin* taken for the guilt of sin, Rom. vii. 5, 8. John ix. 41, xvi. 8, 9. Rom. iii. 20. and elsewhere.  
 — i. e. a sacrifice for sin, 2 Cor. v. 21. Heb. ix. 28.  
 — i. e. a notorious sin, 1 Tim. v. 20. James iv. 17. 1 John iii. 9.  
 — the degrees of sin, James i. 15. iv. 17.  
 — fold unto sin, Rom. vii. 14.  
 — dead in sin, Eph. ii. 1, 5.  
 — take away sin, Heb. x. 4. 1 John iii. 5.  
 — wilfully, Heb. x. 26.  
 — forgiveness of sin, James v. 15. 1 John i. 9.  
 — hide a multitude of sins, James v. 20. 1 Pet. iv. 8.  
 — unto death, 1 John v. 16, 17.  
 — become exceeding sinful, Rom. vii. 13.  
*Sinner*, why Christ conversed with sinners, Mark ii. 16, 17. Luke v. 31. xv. 3, &c.  
*Sinners*, the gentiles so called, Matth. ix. 10. Mark ii. 15, Gal. ii. 15. Luke vii. 34. and elsewhere.  
 — be found sinners, Gal. ii. 17.  
*Sion*, Mount, Heb. xii. 22.  
*Sinai*, — Gal. iv. 25.  
*Sleep*, let us not sleep, 1 Thess. v. 6.  
 — in Jesus, 1 Thess. iv. 13, 14.  
 — sleeping, Mark xiii. 36.  
 — awake thou that sleepest, Eph. v. 14.  
*Soldiers*, their duty, Luke xiii. 14.  
 — christian foldiers. See Armour.  
*Sons of God*, John i. 12. Rom. viii. 14. 1 John iii. 1, 2.  
*Son of God*, Christ so called, John i. 34. ix. 35. Gal. ii. 20.  
 — of man, Acts vii. 56. Matth. xxiv. 27, 30. Mark xiii. 26. Luke xxi. 27. and elsewhere.  
*Sorrow*, godly, of the world, 2 Cor. vii. 10.

*Sorrow,*

## I N D E X.

- Sorrow*, not as others, 1 Theff. iv. 13.
- Soothfaying*. See *Divination*.
- Soul*, the great concern of it, Matth. xvi. 26. Mark viii. 37. John vi. 27.
- Soul*, i. e. life, 1 Theff. ii. 8.
- i. e. person, Rom. xiii. 1. Acts vii. 14. xxvii. 37.
- body and spirit, 1 Theff. v. 23.
- dividing of soul and spirit, Heb. iv. 12.
- Sound* is gone out, Acts x. 18.
- Sound* words. See *Form*.
- Speaking*, evil-speaking forbidden, 2 Tim. iii. 2. James iv. 11. 1 Pet. iii. 9, &c.
- Speak*, being dead, yet speaketh, Heb. xi. 4.
- flow to speak, James i. 19. 1 Pet. iv. 11.
- i. e. teach, 1 Pet. iv. 11.
- Speech*, rude in speech, 2 Cor. xi. 6. x. 10.
- excellency of speech, 1 Cor. xxi. 4.
- not the speech, but power, 1 Cor. iv. 19.
- found speech, Tit. ii. 8.
- Spirit*, hath various significations, denoting, sometimes,
1. The Holy Ghost, 1 Cor. ii. 10, 11. Heb. ix. 14. 1 John v. 6, 7, 8, and elsewhere.
  2. The extraordinary gifts of the spirit, Rom. viii. 16, 11. 1 Cor. xii. 3. and elsewhere.
- and pretenders to the spirit, 1 John iv. 1, &c.
3. The christian religion, or the spiritual duties of it, as opposed to the types and figures of the Mosaical Law, Rom. vii. 6. viii. 1, 2, 5, 9. Gal. iii. 3. and elsewhere.
  4. The spiritual sense of scripture, in opposition to the literal, 2 Cor. iii. 17. John vi. 63. and elsewhere.
- born of the spirit, John iii. 5, 6, 8. after the spirit, Gal. iv. 29.
- having not the spirit, Jude 19. See Hale's tracts, p. 67, 68, 69. in 12mo. Printed 1716.
- spirit of fear, of power, 2 Tim. i. 7.
- sealed with the spirit, Eph. i. 13. iv. 30.
- justified in the spirit, 1 Tim. iii. 16.
- grieved not the spirit, Eph. iv. 30.
- present in spirit, Col. ii. 5.
- pressed in spirit, Acts xviii. 5.
- bound in spirit, Acts xx. 22.
- walk in spirit, Gal. v. 16. Hale *ibid*.
- led by the spirit, Gal. v. 18.
- fruits of the spirit, Gal. v. 22, &c.
- slow to the spirit, Gal. vi. 8.
- sword of the spirit, Eph. vi. 17.
- spirit of his mouth, 1 Theff. ii. 8.

## I N D E X.

- Spiritual* man, men, 1 Cor. ii. 15. & chapters xii. & xiii.  
 ——— spiritual things, 1 Cor. ii. 13.  
 ——— speak as unto spiritual, 1 Cor. iii. 1.  
 ——— spiritual gifts, 1 Cor. Chapters xii. xiii. and xiv.  
 ——— spiritual meat, drink, 1 Cor. x. 3. 4.  
*Spiritually* discerned, 1 Cor. ii. 14.  
*Sports*, Jude 12.  
*Star*, his star in the East, Matth. ii. 2.  
*Star* of Remphan, Acts vii. 43.  
*Star*, a day-star, 2 Pet. i. 19.  
*Stars*, wandering stars, Jude 12.  
*Stealing* forbidden, Eph. iv. 28.  
*Stephen*, account of him, Acts vi. 8. and chap. vii.  
*Stoicks*, their opinion, Acts xvii. 18.  
*Stone*, corner-stone, rock, Acts iv. 11. Eph. ii. 20. 1 Pet.  
     ii. 6, 7, 8. See *Peter*.  
 ——— living stone, 1 Pet. ii. 4, 6.  
*Strangers*, the sense of it, 1 Pet. i. 1.  
 ——— another sense, Heb. xiii. 2. 1 Tim. v. 10. 3 John 5.  
 ——— strangers and foreigners, Eph. ii. 19.  
*Streight*, in a streight, Phil. i. 23.  
*Straight gate* Matth. vi. 13. Luke xiii. 24.  
*Strangled* things, Acts xv. 20.  
*Strong* christian, what? Rom. xv. 1. See *Weak*.  
*Subjection*. See *Magistrate*.  
*Substance*, the sense of it, Heb. xi. 1. x. 34.  
*Suffering* for religion's sake, a duty amply to be rewarded,  
     Matth. v. 10, 11, 12. Mark viii. 38. ix. 43, &c. Luke  
     ix. 24, &c. xii. 49, 51, 52, 53. Luke vi. 21, 22, 23,  
     xviii. 29, 30. Mark x. 28, 29, 30. John xii. 25, 26. xv.  
     18, 19, 20. Acts xiv. 22. See *Persecution*.  
*Sufficient* the sense of it, 2 Cor. ii. 16. iii. 5.  
*Sun and Moon*, the sense of it, Acts ii. 19, 20. Luke xxi. 25,  
*Sunday* the Christian Sabbath, Acts xx. 7.  
*Superstition* Acts xvii. 22.  
*Swearing*. See *Oath*.  
*Swear* by himself, Heb. vi. 17.  
*Swine*, Matth. viii. 31, 32.

## T

- TABLE*, serve-tables, Acts vi. 2.  
 ——— Lord's table, 1 Cor. x. 21.  
 ——— fleshly tables, 1 Cor. iii. 3.  
 ——— table of snare Rom. xi. 9.  
*Tabernacle* of David, Acts. xv. 16.  
*Tabernacle* described, Heb. ix. 1, 2, &c.

*Taught*

## I N D E X.

- Taught* of God, 1 Theff. iv. 9.
- Taxing* mentioned, Luke ii. 1. Acts v. 37.
- Teach*, teachers, teaching.
- Teachers*, false, how to be known, Matth. vii. 15, 16, &c.  
 1 John iv. 1. 1 Cor. xii. 3. See *Prophet*.
- false teachers described, 2 Pet. i. &c. Jude. 1 John ii. 18, 24.
- Teaching*, the sense of it, Rom. xii. 7. Acts xiii. 1. 1 Ephes. iv. 11. 1 Cor. xii. 29.
- Temperance* enjoined, 2 Pet. i. 6. Tit. i. 8. ii. 2. See *Drunkenness* and *Uncleannefs*.
- temperate in all things, 1 Cor. ix. 25.
- Temple*, the worship of the Jewish temple was not intended to be of perpetual obligation, Acts vii. 46, 50. Heb. ix.
- the apostles attended the temple service, Acts ii. 46. iii. 1.
- Christians called the temple of God, 1 Cor. iii. 16, 17. 2 Cor. vi. 16. 1 Pet. ii. 4, 5. and elsewhere.
- sitteth in the temple of God, 2 Theff. ii. 4.
- Tempt*, tempted.
- to tempt God, Acts v. 9. xv. 10. Luke iv. 12. 1 Cor. x. 9.
- tempted, i. e. tryed, Mark xii. 15. John viii. 6. and elsewhere.
- tempted, i. e. actually drawn into sin, James i. 3, 14, 15. 1 Theff. iii. 5. Gal. vi. 1. 1 Cor. vii. 5. and elsewhere.
- temptation, i. e. affliction, persecution, Luke viii. 43. James i. 2, 12. 1 Pet. i. 6. Heb. ii. 18. iv. 15. xi. 37. and elsewhere.
- the benefit of them, James i. 3, 12.
- Testament*, testator, Heb. vii. 22. ix. 15, &c. Gal. iv. 15. 2 Cor. iii. 6, 14.
- Testimony*, for a testimony, Matth. viii. 4. Mark i. 44. Luke v. 14. Matth. x. 18.
- testimony of Jesus Christ, 1 Cor. i. 6. ii. 1.
- Thanksgiving*, received with thanksgiving, 1 Tim. iv. 3, 4. 1 Cor. x. 30.
- Theatre* at Ephesus, Acts xix. 31.
- Thief*, the case of the penitent thief, Luke xxiii. 39, 43.
- theft. See *Stealing*.
- thief in the night, 2 Pet. iii. 10. 1 Theff. v. 2.
- Theſſalonica*, Paul there, Acts xvii. 1.
- Theudas*, Acts v. 36.
- Thing*, some better thing, Heb. xi. 39.
- things in heaven and earth, Ephes. i. 10. Col. i. 20.
- Thorn* in the flesh, what? 2 Cor. xii. 7.
- Thousand*, three thousand converted, Acts ii. 41.
- thousand years as one day, 2 Pet. iii. 8.
- Thrones,*

## I N D E X.

- Thrones*, principalities, powers, Col. i. 16. See *Powers*.
- Till*. See *Until*.
- Times*, times.
- times and seasons, Acts i. 17. 1 Theff. v. 1.
  - in his time, 1 Tim. vi. 15.
  - in due time, 1 Tim. ii. 6. Tit. i. 3.
  - fulness of the time, Gal. iv. 4.
  - the last times, 1 Pet. i. 5, 20, 1 John ii. 10. Jude 18. 1 Tim. iv. 1. See *Days*.
  - redeeming the time, Ephes. v. 16. Col. iv. 5.
- Timothy* mentioned, Acts xvi. 1. Heb. xiii. 23.
- Together*, the sense of it, Acts ii. 44.
- Tongue*, tongues.
- gift of tongues conferred, Acts ii. 4, &c.
  - cloven tongues, ibid. ver. 3.
  - speaking with tongues, 1 Cor. chap. xiv.
  - prayer in an unknown tongue forbidden, 1 Cor. xiv.
- Tongue*, the good and bad use of it, Jam. i. 26. & chap. iii.
- Touch*, not to touch a woman, 1 Cor. vii. 1, &c.
- Touch* not, taste not, Col. ii. 21.
- Town-Clerk*, what? Acts xix. 35.
- Traditions*, Jewish, Matth. xv. 2. Mark vii. 9, 13. Col. ii. 8. 1 Pet. i. 18. Gal. i. 14.
- Traditions* of the Apostles, the sense of it, 2 Theff. ii. 15. iii. 6. 2 Cor. xi. 2.
- Transgression*, because of the transgression, Gal. i. 18.
- Transgressor*, make myself a, Gal. iii. 19.
- Transposition* of the text, Acts v. 12, 14.
- Transferred* to myself, 1 Cor. iii. 16.
- Travels* of St. Paul, See *Paul*.
- Trembling*, fear and trembling, Ephes. vi. 5. Phil. ii. 12. 1 Cor. ii. 3. 2 Cor. vii. 15.
- devils believe and tremble, James ii. 19.
- Tribute* to be paid, Matth. xvii. 24. 27. Rom. xiii. 6, 7. Mat. xxii. 17. 21.
- Trump* of God, 1 Theff. iv. 16. 1 Cor. xv. 52.
- Truth*, the gospel called truth, John i. 14, 17. v. 33. viii. 32. Rom. viii. 20. Gal. v. 7. Ephes. vi. 14. 1 Tim. ii. 4. James v. 19. and elsewhere.
- Truth* in Christ, i. e. the christian doctrine, Rom. ix. 1 Eph. iv. 21, 15.
- what is truth, John xviii. 38.
  - of the truth, in the truth, John xviii. 37. 1 John. iii. 19. 1 John ii. 21.
  - pillar and ground of truth, 1 Tim. iii. 15.
  - truth signifies fidelity, Rom. iii. 7. Ephes. v. 9.
- Try*



## I N D E X.

*Try* the things that are excellent, Phil. i. 10.  
 — the spirits, 1 John iv. 1. Fire shall try work, 1 Cor.  
 iii. 13.  
*Trial*, fiery, 1 Pet. iv. 12. 1 Pet. i. 7.

## V.

*VAIN*, in vain, 1 Theff. ii. 1.  
 — in their imaginations, Rom. i. 21.  
 — deceit, Col. ii. 8. Vain conversation, 1 Pet. i. 18.  
*Vanity*, idolatry so called, Acts xiv. 15. Rom. viii. 20.  
 — of their minds, Eph. iv. 17.  
*Veil*, womens veil, 1 Cor. xi. 15, &c.  
 — of the temple, Matth. xxvii. 51. Mark xv. 38.  
 — on their hearts, 2 Cor. iii. 14, 15, 16.  
 — within the veil, Heb. vi. 19.  
*Vessel*, chosen, Acts ix. 15. See chosen.  
 — of wrath, of mercy, Rom. ix. 22, 23.  
 — possesses his vessel in sanctification, 1 Theff. iv. 4.  
 — a vessel unto honour, 2 Tim. ii. 20, 21.  
 — the weaker vessel, 1 Pet. iii. 7.  
 — treasure in earthen vessels, 2 Cor. iv. 7.  
*Vine*, Christ the vine, John xv. 1, 4, &c.  
 — the church a vineyard, Matth. xx. 1, &c. Mark xii.  
 7, &c. Luke xx. 9. xiii. 6.  
*Vinegar* offered to Jesus, Luke xxiii. 36.  
*Viper* on St. Paul's hand, Acts xxviii. 3.  
 — generation of vipers, Matth. iii. 7.  
*Vision*, Peter's, Acts x. 9, &c. xi. 4, &c.  
 — Paul's, Acts xvi. 9. xviii. 9.  
*Virgins*, virginity, 1 Cor. vii. 25, 26, 36, 37.  
*Virtue*, i. e. courage, 1 Pet. ii. 4, 5.  
*Unbelief*, concluded all in, Rom. xi. 32. See Infidelity.  
*Uncleanness* forbidden, Matth. v. 27, &c. 1 Cor. chap. v. and  
 vi. 1 Theff. iv. 3. Eph. v. 3. Col. iii. 5. Heb. xiii. 4.  
 See Fornication.  
*Unity* enjoined, 1 Cor. chap. xii. Phil. ii. 1, 2, &c. Col. iii.  
 5. See Peaceableness.  
*Unprofitable*, the sense of it, Heb. xiii. 17. Eph. v. 11.  
*Unction*, 1 John ii. 20, 27. See Anointing.  
*Unreasonable* men, 2 Theff. iii. 2.  
*Until*, *ἕως, ἄχρι*, the extent of it. Note on Rom. v. 13.  
*Utterance*, the sense of it, 1 Cor. i. 5. 2 Cor. viii. 7. Eph.  
 vi. 19. Col. iv. 3.  
*Uttered*, hard to be uttered, Heb. v. 11.  
 — groanings which cannot be uttered, Rom. viii. 26.  
 — not lawful for a man to utter, 2 Cor. xii. 4.  
*Vow* of the Nazarites, Acts xviii. 18, 21. xxiii. 24.

WAGES

# I N D E X.

## W.

- WAGES* of sin, Rom. vi. 23.  
 — of unrighteousness, 2 Pet. ii. 15.  
 — taking wages, 2 Cor. xi. 8.  
*Waiting* of Christ, 2 Theff. iii. 5.  
*Wall*, whited wall, Acts xxiii. 3.  
 — middle — Eph. ii. 14.  
*Wanton*, wax wanton, 1 Tim. v. 11.  
*Warfare*, i. e. the ministry, 2 Cor. x. 3, 4. 1 Tim. i. 18.  
*Washing*, preparatory to burial, Acts ix. 37.  
 — i. e. baptism, Eph. v. 26. Tit. iii. 5.  
*Way*, all of this way, i. e. this profession, Acts ix. 2. xxiv. 22.  
 — new and living way, Heb. x. 20.  
*Water*, out of the water, in the water, 2 Pet. iii. 5.  
 — came by water, 1 John v. 6.  
 — and blood, *ibid.*  
 — plant and water, 1 Cor. iii. 6, 7, 8.  
*Weak* in the faith, weak brother, Rom. xiv. 1, 2. xv. 1. 2 Cor. xi. 28. 1 Theff. v. 14. 1 Cor. viii. 7, 12. ix. 22. and elsewhere.  
 — i. e. accounted so by others, 1 Cor. i. 27. 2 Cor. xii. 10. xiii. 9.  
*Weakness*, i. e. natural infirmities, or sufferings, 2 Cor. xii. 9, 10. 1 Cor. xv. 43. Heb. xi. 34.  
 — of God stronger than men, 1 Cor. i. 25.  
 — Christ crucified through weakness, 2 Cor. xiii. 4.  
*Weep* as though they wept not, 1 Cor. vii. 30.  
 — with them that weep, Rom. xii. 15.  
 — blessed are ye that weep, Luke vi. 21.  
*West*, south-west and north-west, Acts xxvii. 12.  
*Wicked One*, one sense of it, 2 Theff. ii. 8.  
 — another, 1 John iii. 12.  
*Widows* indeed, 1 Tim. v. 3, 4.  
 — concerning widows, 1 Cor. vii. 8.  
*Willeth*, not of him that willeth, Rom. ix. 16.  
*Will-worship* forbidden, 2 Col. ii. 23.  
*Wine*, full of new wine, Acts ii. 13.  
*Wink*, God winked at, Acts xvii. 30.  
*Wisdom*, the sense of it, James i. 4. iii. 13, 15, 17.  
 — of God, 1 Cor. i. 21, 30.  
 — spirit of wisdom, Eph. i. 17.  
 — man's wisdom, 1 Cor. i. 17, 18.  
 — fleshly wisdom, 2 Cor. i. 12.  
*Wise Men*, after the flesh, 1 Cor. i. 2, 6, 27.  
*Wist*, I wist not, Acts xxiii. 5.  
*Witchcraft*, what? Gal. v. 20.

*Without,*

## I N D E X.

- Without*, them that are without, 1 Cor. vii. 30. Col. iv. 5.  
 1 Theff. iii. 7.
- Withholdeth*, 2 Theff. ii. 5.
- Wives* duty, Eph. v. 22. Col. iii. 18. 1 Pet. iii. 1.  
 — husband of one wife, 1 Tim. iii. 12.
- Women* in public assemblies, 1 Cor. xi. 16. xiv. 34.  
 — their habit, modesty, &c. 1 Theff. ii. 9, &c.
- Word*, words of God, 1 Theff. iv. 5. and elsewhere.  
 — form of sound words, 2 Tim. i. 13.  
 — spoken by angels, Heb. ii. 2.  
 — of God, λογος, Heb. iv. 12, 13. xi. 3.  
 — the engrafted word, James i. 21.  
 — not in word, but in power, 1 Cor. iv. 20.
- Words* must be accounted for, Matth. xii. 36, 37.  
 — signify things, Acts xi. 14. 1 Theff. iv. 18.
- Work*, works, working.  
 — of God, John vi. 28.  
 — wonderful works of God, Acts ii. 11.
- Worketh*, to will and to do, Phil. ii. 13. Heb. xiii. 21.  
 — effectually, 1 Theff. ii. 13.
- Works* signify the Jewish religion and ceremony, Rom. iii. 27. xi. 6. Eph. ii. 9. Rom. iv. 2, 6. Gal. ii. 16. iii. 1.  
 — good works, i. e. charity, Acts ix. 36. 1 Tim. v. 10.  
 See doing.  
 — good works, i. e. a good office, 1 Theff. iii. 1.  
 — good works, i. e. obedience to magistrates, 2 Theff. iii. 1.  
 — good works, i. e. moral obedience, James ii. 14, 26.  
 See Moral.  
 — dead works, Heb. ix. 14.  
 — a short work, Rom. ix. 28. Him that worketh, Rom. iv. 4, 5.
- World*, this world, and that which is to come, Eph. i. 21.  
 — all the world, Col. i. 6, 23. Luke ii. 1.  
 — present evil world, Gal. i. 4.  
 — before the world began, 1 Theff. i. 9. 2 Theff. i. 2.  
 — to come, i. e. the gospel state, Heb. ii. 5. vi. 5.  
 — end of the world, Heb. ix. 26. See End.  
 — made the worlds, Heb. i. 2.  
 — the world is to be burnt, 2 Pet. iii. 10, 11, 12.
- Worldly mindedness* forbidden, Matth. vi. 19, &c. Luke vi. 24, &c. xii. 15, 16, &c. xvi. 13, 19, &c. Luke xii. 22, 34. 1 John ii. 15, 16, 17. James iv. 4. See Riches.
- Worldly men*, how to be imitated, Luke xvi. 1, &c.
- Worm* dieth not, Mark ix. 44, &c.  
 — eaten of worms, Acts xii. 23.
- Worship*, several senses of, as applied to God, or men, Luke xiv. 10. xviii. 26. compared with John iv. 20. Luke iv. 7. and innumerable other places.

*Worship,*

## I N D E X.

*Worship*, a worshipper of God, Acts xviii. 7. xvi. 14.

—— will-worship, Cor. ii. 23.

*Wrath*. See *Anger*.

*Wresting* the scriptures, 2 Pet. iii. 16.

*Writing*, hand-writing of ordinances, Col. ii. 14.

—— hand-writing. See *Hand*.

## Y.

*YEA*, yea and nay, 2 Cor. i. 17, 18, 19, 20. Matth. v. 32.

*Yesterday*, to day, and for ever, Heb. xii. 8.

*Yokefellow*, Phil. iv. 3.

*Young*, younger men, young men, 1 John ii. 13, 14. 1 Pet.  
v. 4, 5. 1 Tim. v. 1.

—— let him be as the younger, Luke xxii. 26.

—— younger women, 1 Tim. v. 2. xi. 14.

—— elder shall serve the younger, Rom. ix. 12.

## Z.

*ZACCHEUS*, Luke xix. 1, &c.

*Zion*, Mount Zion, Heb. xii. 22.

*Zeal*, Zealous, Gal. iv. 18. Rom. x. 2.

## FINIS.